



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

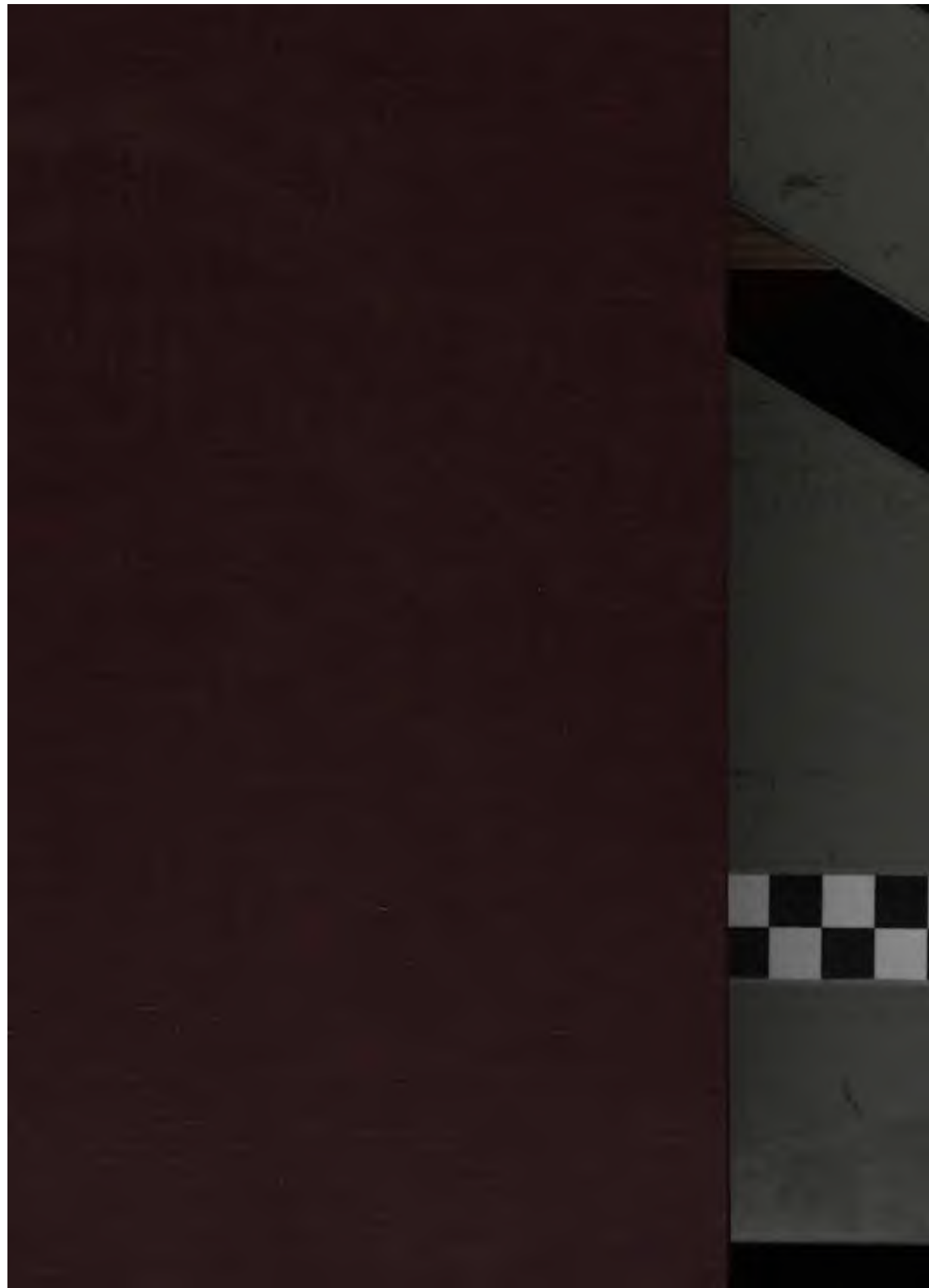
Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

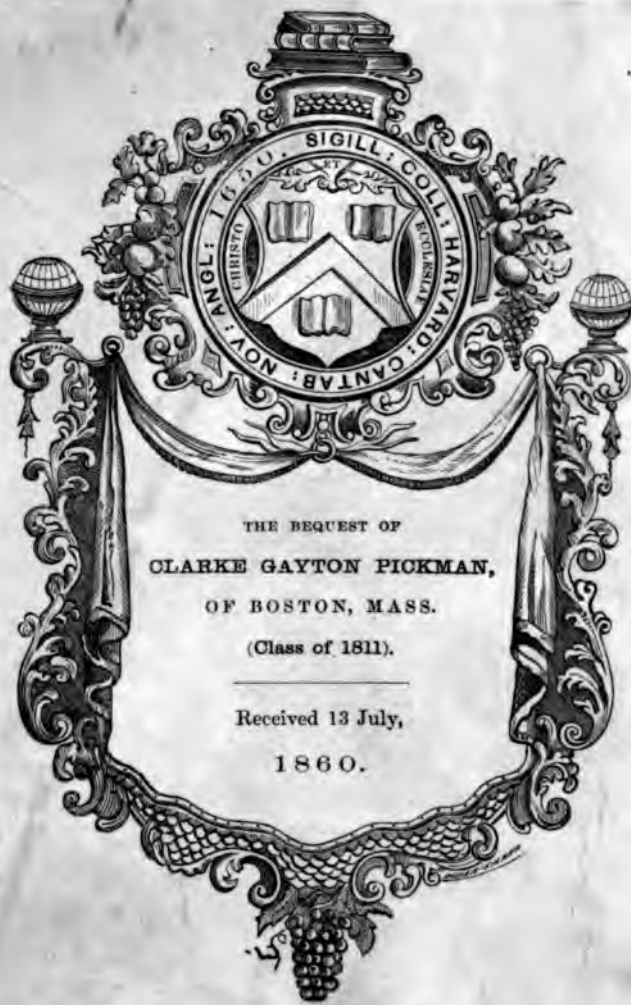
We also ask that you:

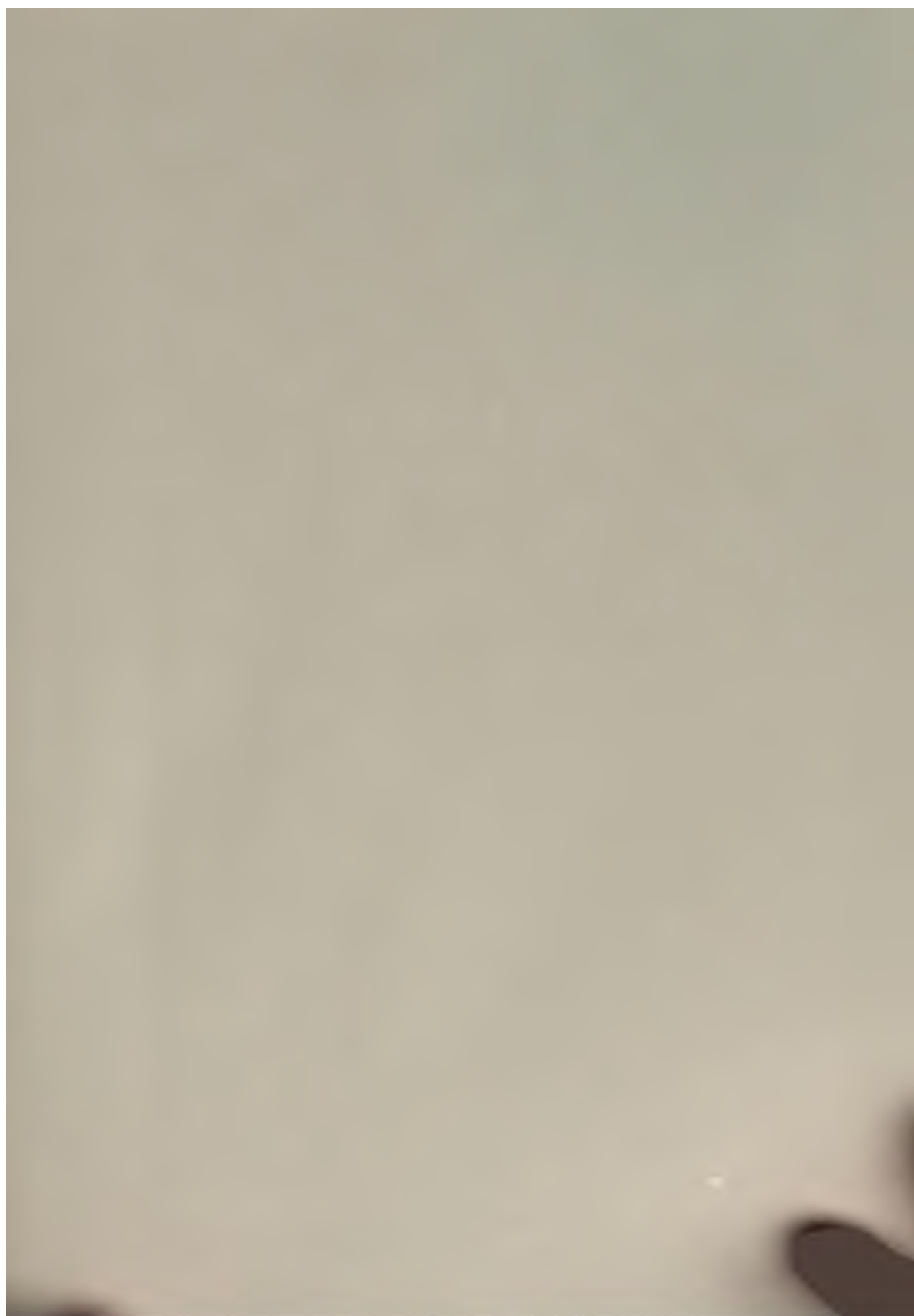
- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>







1. The first part of the document is a list of the names of the persons who have been appointed to the various offices of the city of New York.



.

.

C. Gayton Pickman.

22: Nov: 1852 -



The New Testament
John Wycliffe



Pickering

1848



.

.

.

.

.

.

.

6.6.

ye euangelie of Joon

In ye bygynnyng was ye
worde wat is goddis so he
and ye worde was at god &
god was ye worde. yis was
in ye bygynnyng at god/
alle yingis ben made by hym.
and lwynten hym is ma-
de nouyt. yat ying yat is
made in hym was lyf. and
ye lyf was ye lyte of men/
and ye lyte ahyney in dirbe-
nessis & dirteuclis compe-
henden or taken. not it. a-
man was sente to god. to
whom yename was won/
yis man came into witnes-
synge yat he shulde bere
witnes synge of ye lyt. yat alle
men shulden buene by hym. he
was not ye lyt. but yat he shulde
bere witnes synge of ye lyt. it was
verey lyte ye whiche lyteney eche
man comynge into yis worlde.

Bible - N.T. & Eng (Wycliffe.) (1348.)

The New Testament in
English translated by
John Wycliffe

Circa Mcccxxx


Now first printed from a contemporary Manuscript
formerly in the Monastery of Sion Middlesex late
in the Collection of Lea Wilson F S A



Printed at Chiswick by Charles Whittingham for
William Pickering Piccadilly London
Mcccclviii

Bi 53.848

1860, March 13.
Helen
Request.



Preface.



THE Manuscript from which the following *Version in English of the New Testament* is now for the first time printed, was formerly in the collection of the late Lea Wilson, Esq. of Norwood, and is thus described by him in the Catalogue of his Bibles and Testaments.

MANUSCRIPTS. No. I.

“ **The New Testament.** MS. Super membr.
4to. forma major. Circa 1380.

“ The translation of this beautiful volume is *not* that usually known as Wickliffe's. In the Historical Account of the Saxon and English Versions, prefixed to the Rev. H. H. Baber's edition, p. lxix, he says, ‘ Though all these MS. lay claim to the title ‘ of Wiclif's English Version of the Bible, yet there ‘ are a few amongst them which differ so materially ‘ from the rest, as to warrant the assertion, that we ‘ enjoy two ancient English translations of the Scrip-

Preface.

‘tures. In some places we trace no other similarity
‘betwixt these versions, than that which arises from
‘the circumstance of their being made from one
‘common original, the Latin vulgate; but in general
‘we discover features of resemblance between them
‘so numerous and so striking, that it is most clear,
‘that the author of the later translation not only
‘saw, but copied very freely from that which had
‘been previously completed.’

“Judging from the greater rudeness of the language, I conceive this to be the earlier: and I think it very probable that it was Wickliffe’s first attempt, and subsequently revised and polished by himself or his disciples; which would account for the ‘features of resemblance’ above remarked. If this opinion be correct, it leaves with him the whole merit of first translating the Scriptures into English.

“The Volume is beautifully written, and the initial letters of each Book and Chapter are illuminated. There are no prologues. It ends, ‘here endiþ þe apocalips Blessed be þe holy trinitie Amē.’ It has been in the possession of Reynolds, Bishop of Norwich, 1670, as appears by his autograph on the first page, ‘Ed. Reynolds. Ex dono D. Gulielmi Simonson. Coll: Merton Socii.’ On the reverse of the last leaf is engrossed as follows—

“Good M^r. Confessor of Sion w^h his brethren.

“Dame Anne Danvers Widowe Sūtyme Wyffe to
Sr Willm Danvers knyght (hoose Soule god affoyle)
hathe

Preface.

hathe gevyn this p̄sent Booke vnto mastre confessor
and his Bretherne encloosed In Syon entending
therby not oonly the hono^r laude and preyse to al-
myghty god but also that she the moore tenderly
may be cōmytted vnto the mercy of o^r lord god by
the hoōly demerytes of mastre confessor and his
Bretherne aforseid. Which she hertly desyrethe. and
specyally to remembre the lyves and the foulys of
suche p̄sons hoose names heeafter be wryten

“ The good astate of Dame Anne Danvers.

Thoms Willm Anne Alys Isabell	}	Itm p ^r aīabz hir childerne alyve	Iohīs pury Isabelle Elizabeth Willi Danvers milit ^r Johīs Johīs margarete Johīs Thome margarete langford.	}	vxor ^r ei ^s fili ^r ei ^s defunctor ^s frūor ^s ei ^s
---	---	--	---	---	--

“ The aforseid Dame Anne Danvers hathe dely-
verd this booke by the hond^s of her son Thom̄s
Danvers on myddellent sunday. In the viij yeere of
the reigne of kyng Henry the Eytethe. Jn the
yeere of o^r lord god a m fyve hundred and seven-
teene. Deo ḡcias.

“ Mr. Thomas Duffus Hardy, the keeper of the
Records in the Tower, says the MS. is of the time

Preface.

of Richard II. or Henry IV. and therefore certainly coeval with Wickliffe. The volume measures 10½ inches by 7½. The Acts of the Apostles follows the four Gospels; then the Epistles of James, Peter, John and Jude; those by S. Paul, and the Apocalips concluding the book.

“ * * * This is supposed to be the earliest version of the New Testament in the English language.”

Mr. Wilson under the head of the two next MSS. in his Collection, Nos. 2 and 3, says in reference to the foregoing No. 1, “ The following specimens from chance openings of the volume, will shew the difference between the two versions.”

No. 1. Luke Ch. 8. Nos. 2 and 3.

Forsoþer was a flok of many
hoggis lesotwyrge in an hil/
and þei preyeden hym þat he
schulde suffre hem forto entre
into hem/ and he suffride hem.
þerefore þe deuelis wenten
oute fro þe man; & entriden
into hoggis/ & wiþ birre þe flok
wēte hedelynge into þe lake
of water; and is stranglide.

And þere was a flok of many
swyne lesotwyrge in an hil/
and þei praieden h̄ þat hee
schulde suffre hem to entre
ito hem/ and he suffrid hem.
& so þe deuelis wenten out
fro þat man & entridē in to þat
swyne and wiþ a bire þe flok
wente hedelynge into þe pool
& was drenchid.

Ch. 20.

And it is done in one of þe
dayes hym techyng þe puple
in þe temple and euangeliz-
yng.

And it was doon in oo of þe
dayes whanne hee tautzte þe
peeple in þe temple & p̄chide
þe gospel.

Preface.

No. 1.	Ch. 21.	Nos. 2 and 3.
forsoþe þe biholdynge siȝe hem þat senten her ȝiftis into þe tresorie riche men. forsoþe þe siȝe & sum litil pore widowe sendynge two mynūtis or fer- þingis:		And hee biheeld & saiz þe riche men þat castiden here ȝiftis in to þe tresorie/ but hee saþ also a litil poore widowe cast- inge tweye ferþingis

Mr. Wilson had with much care prepared a transcript, and passed it through the press to the end of the Gospels.

Some reasons should perhaps be here offered why our Title page entitles this “Wicliffe’s version, now first printed,” there being already two imprints bearing the name, that of Lewis, 1731, reprinted by Mr. Baber in 1810, and “The Wicliffe version” of Bagster’s Hexapla.

Besides the parallel passages given in the above extracts from Mr. Wilson’s Catalogue, a more extended comparison of Mr. Baber’s imprint, usually termed Wicliffe’s version, with the corresponding text of our copy,* will still further shew that while there is sufficient resemblance to connect them together, they are so far from identical, that a very considerable difference exists, and being, as is evidently the case, equally translations from one original, namely, the

* Take also, as immediately at hand to every reader, the specimen in the preface to Dr. Johnson’s Dictionary.

Preface.

Vulgate, this difference is the more remarkable, certainly justifies Mr. Wilson's decision, that "translation is *not* that usually known as Wicliffe. So also comparison with the version employed Mr. Bagster in his Hexapla, there given as the Wicliffe text, and which is taken from a MS. formerly the collection of the Duke of Suffex, but subsequently possessed by Mr. Wilson, shows at once the difference and resemblance. The subjoined, being the commencement of S. Mark's Gospel, may serve as a specimen of that version,

"**The bigynnyng of þe gospel of ihu crist þe sone of g
as it is writun in Ihesu þe profete/ lo I sende myn aungel
for þi face: þat schal make redi þi weye biforn þee/ þe vois
a crier in desert: make ze redi þe weye of þe lord: make
þise papis rizt/ Ioon was in desert/baptisynge and prechynge
þe baptism of penaunce in to remyssion of synnes/ and al
cuntré of judee wenten out to hym: and al men of Ierusalem
and þei weren baptised of hym in þe flú Jordan: and knowen
lechen þer synnes/**"

Of these several versions, for it is evident that ours is not the same with either of the above, it only remains to inquire which is the earliest, and then determine to whom belongs the merit of such *earliest* translation of the New Testament into English.

An accurate and careful investigation of each, can alone *settle* the question of priority of the version and this is not the place to attempt it; but a few grounds for a conclusion may be indicated.

Preface.

The writing of the MS. itself, which at that period is so nearly uniform, *fixes* it to the time of either Rich. II. or Hen. IV., or about 1380, and contemporary with Wicliffe. (The language of this version is, as has been stated above, "runder," that is, it is older.) The orthography varies; so much so, that the same word is spelt quite differently in even two following lines, marking the unformed and uncertain state of the language.* (Moreover, a kind of interpretation, or running gloss, not found in the other versions, accompanies many words in this; the second word, or rendering, being of a more simple character: some words are paraphrased, others are explained.†) Many words indeed, besides those termed sacred, are not translated at all, but the Latin is retained; others again are literally translated, that is, the idea is transferred, and rendered, not, as obtained afterwards, and as is found in the other versions, by the formation of a word out of the Latin, but by giving the English equivalent, or com-

* We think that the various spelling of the same word in MSS. of this period may be accounted for by the transcribers living in different districts, and conforming each to the prevailing rule of his own division. There is still extant a Northumbrian version of the Gospels, which illustrates this adherence to a provincial orthography; besides which there was no uniform standard, and many words were evidently written according to their sound.

† Take as an instance of this gloss, not found in the other versions, the words *profelite* and *filateries*; after the first we find, in a parenthesis, "*þat is a convertide to 3our ordre,*" and after the second, "*þat ben smale scrowis.*"

Preface.

pound equivalent, of the original, and this oftentimes in a very striking manner. On the other hand, a closer adherence to the words of the original, the Vulgate, is sometimes maintained at the cost even of idiom and correctness. Again, there are evident errors in this version, and corrections in the others which mark this as the earliest. The prologues of S. Jerome are added to all the other versions, but are not found with this.

Now upon all the particulars indicated above, which manifestly bespeak a first attempt, and on the internal evidence of the language, no hesitation can be felt in deciding that Mr. Baber's reprint from Lewis, and the text of the Hexapla, are each of them later than the following version; the language at their date had then become more fixed, and we must not fail to remember that in all transcripts at that period the transcriber did not scruple to change or modernize an obsolete word so as to suit it to his own day.

With respect to the other question proposed, to whom belongs the merit of this, the earliest translation into English of the New Testament, Mr. Wilson's remark that it remains with Wicliffe, appears correct. Mr. Baber in his "Historical Account," pp. 68-72, may be considered to have settled the point, and the sum of the arguments is here given in his own words. "Some authors have doubted whether Wiclif ever translated the Scriptures.

Preface.

“ tures. When Hufs, a martyr to Wiclif’s prin-
“ ciples, and one nearly his contemporary, speaks
“ of fuch a production ; when amongst the accusa-
“ tions brought againft the reformer by Knyghton,
“ this pious labor feems in the opinion of this au-
“ thor to be his higheft offence ; when Wiclif in one
“ of his homilies mentions the fevere ufage he met
“ with becaufe he dared to enable the people at
“ large to read in their own tongue the revealed
“ word of God ; and when in every lift given of
“ his works by his numerous biographers, mention
“ is always made of his having tranflated the Scrip-
“ ture into Englifh, every doubt upon this point muft,
“ one would think, for the future vanifh.”

Mr. Baber fays, “ John de Trevisa, who flourifhed
“ towards the end of the fourteenth century, enjoys
“ the reputation in the eftimation of fome men of let-
“ ters of having produced an Englifh tranflation of
“ the Bible ; but his title to this fame has hitherto
“ eluded all attempts I have made to trace it.” It
may however be confidered to reft folely on the
authority of Caxton, who, in the Preface to the
Polychronicon of Higden, tranflated by this fame
John de Trevisa, and the moft popular book in
that age, fays, that he alfo tranflated the Holy Scrip-
tures ; but no part of fuch tranflation is known to
exift, and it is thought that the tranflation afcribed
to him confifted only of texts painted on the walls
of the chapel at Berkeley Caftle, and the church at

Preface.

Berkeley, where Trevifa was Chaplain and Vicar, and where he died about thirty years after Wicliffe.

It may be added that no copy of an English version of the entire New Testament of a date anterior to Wicliffe is known.

It is not however meant to be asserted either that Wicliffe was alone and unassisted in this great work, or that he did not make use of such materials for his version as he had at hand; it is certain that he received assistance from others, and it is probable that he gathered together the various portions of versions already made. It only needs this most natural explanation to reconcile with the fact that he first produced the entire version, many matters as to which there need at no time have been much controversy. When More, for example, says that Wicliffe's translation was needless, as there was one before his day, we may readily allow it, so far as portions of the Bible, and in particular as respects the Gospels. We quite allow the extent and importance of the labours of Nicholas de Hereford, and we think it even probable that he rendered direct assistance to Wicliffe in his version. We may even admit that there were translations in use and authorized by the Church of Fox himself, though for quite another purpose, in the dedication of Archbishop Parker's Gospels to Queen Elizabeth, freely allows this. And we are told that Archbishop Arundel, in his funeral sermon for Archbishop of Richard II. "did avouch that she had

" t

Preface.

“the four Gospels in the vulgare tongue with divers
“expositions of the same.”

There being then two (or more) distinct versions in English of the Bible and Testament, or portions of them, extant, it is easy to understand how the later and improved version came to be attributed to Wicliffe, rather than the earlier and more uncouth, though the latter agrees far better with the style and orthography of his acknowledged writings, as may be seen by even a cursory comparison with his Homilies and the Trialogus. And this later and clearer version having been thus given to Wicliffe, it may be well believed that the older and more homely renderings of the other occasioned the inference that it was much before his time, so that Archbishop Usher even places it in the year 1290,* although the very rapid mutation of the English language at the period in question would amply account for the difference between the two versions, even had they followed more nearly than they did the one to the other. As an illustration of the rapidity with which the English language was then developing itself, we might compare, see Baber, 67, the translations of Richard Rolle, the hermit of Hampole, who died

* Mr. Westwood, *Palæog. Sacra*, tells us that from a collation by the late Rev. T. Symonds, he found that the Bodleian MS. Fairfax, No. 2, considered by Archbishop Usher to have been written at the close of the thirteenth century is of the Wicliffite period, agreeing with the Arundel MS. 108, and the Lambeth MS.

Preface.

in 1349, with either of the versions mentioned, the utmost interval between them being twenty-five or thirty years.

We think then that we have here the earliest version in English of the entire New Testament; that which followed, though at long interval, the Saxon, connecting itself, it may be, as by succession, with the translation of St. John's Gospel which occupied the last hours of the Venerable Bede; and also that this is the true translation of Wicliffe, that very translation which gave occasion to the Bill brought into the Parliament of 13 Rich. II. (1390) for the purpose of suppressing it, but which was rejected through the influence of the Duke of Lancaster, John of Gaunt, Wicliffe's chief patron, who solemnly declared, "We will not be the dregs of all. Seeing "other nations have the Law of God, which is the "law of our faith, written in their own language, "I will maintain our having this law in our own "tongue, against those, whoever they be, who first "brought in this Bill." That success it was, which encouraged Wicliffe's followers, and another, and in some respects a more correct translation followed, attributed to Wicliffe's curate, Purnay or Purvay, and it is this version which has hitherto been published as that of Wicliffe.* Transcripts or copies were how-

* "Of whose translation (i. e. Wicliffe's) no part has hitherto been published." *Palæographia Sacra*. Title, Early Engl. Biblical MSS.

Preface.

ever so rare that according to the registry of William de Alnewick, Bishop of Norwich in 1420, the price of one of Wicliffe's Testaments, for so they were all called, was not less than 4 marks and 40 pence, or 2*l.* 16*s.* 8*d.* equal to about 40*l.* of our day.*

For the first time, then, is the reproach of Fabricius removed, (*Mirum est apud Anglos eam, i. e. versionem Wiclivitam, tam diu neglexisse*) so far at least as respects the printing of the New Testament; and this version, so interesting from the circumstances under which it was made, and its connection with one of the great names of our country, so curious a monument of the language at that period,† of so much philological importance, illustrating, as it does, the formation of our own mother tongue, and exhibiting it in its transition state, and also so valuable, as showing incidentally, and therefore the more surely, how certain questions of theology were regarded by him whom we term our earliest reformer, and what was, in his day, and by him, con-

* It is not a little singular that though printing was introduced into England in 1474, no English Bible or Testament was printed till 1526, and then at a foreign press, viz. Tyndal's 4to New Testament at Cologne, and his 12mo at Antwerp. The constitutions of Archbishop Arundel in the Convocation at Oxford (1408) forbidding the translation of Holy Scripture into English, and the reading of any book of this kind composed lately in the time of John Wicliffe, since his death," were not only enforced at the time but long after.

† Fabricius, speaking of the Wicliffe version, continues, "causâ in pretio esse debeat." *Bibl. Lat.* & *infr.* p. 321.

Preface.

considered the most authentic as a standard, and, were, an original text—this,—the earliest translation of the Testament into English, is now printed for the first time, and it is believed with that scrupulous accuracy which is the first and most necessary though very humble requisite, for passing such a volume through the press.

London,
March, 1848.

The Order of the Books.



Matheu
Mark
Luke
Joon

þe dedis of þe apostlis
þe pistel of James
þe firste pistel of petre
þe secounde pistel of petre
þe firste pistel of Joon
þe secounde pistel of Joon
þe þridde pistel of Joon
þe pistil of Jude
þe pistil to romayns
þe firste pistel to corrinþeis
þe secoûde pistle to corrinþeis
þe pistel to galat̃eis
þe pistel to ephes̃es
þe pistel to philipenses
þe pistel to colocenses
þe firste pistel to tessalonicenses
þe secounde pistel to tessalonicenses
þe firste pistel to tymothe
þe secounde pistel to tymothe
þe epistel to tyte
þe pistel to philomon
þe pistil to ebrues
þe apocalips

10
11

100



1



1





1

Matheu



Ere bigynnes þe gospel of mathew • The C^m 1^m

booc of þe generacion of ihū crist þe sone
of dauid þe sone of abraham/ Abraham
gendride (or bigate) Isaac/ Isaac for-
soþe bigate Jacob/ Jacob forsoþe bigate
Judas & his breþeren/ Judas forsoþe
bigate Phares and Zaram of thamar/
Phares forsoþe bigate Esrom/ Esrom

forsoþe bigate Aram/ Aram forsoþe bigate Amynadab/ Amyna-
dab forsoþe bigate naason/ Naason forsoþe bigate Salmon/
Salmon forsoþe bigate booz of raab/ Booz forsoþe bigate obeth
of ruth/ Obeth forsoþe bigate iesse/ Jesse forsoþe bigate dauyd
þe kyng/ Dauyd forsoþe þe kyng/ bigate salamon of þat (wom-
man) þ^e was uries wiif/ Salomon forsoþe bigate roboam/ Ro-
boam forsoþe bigate abias/ Abias forsoþe bigate asa/ Asa for-
soþe bigate iosaphath/ Josaphath forsoþe bigate Joram/ Jo-
ram forsoþe bigate osias/ Osias forsoþe bigate Joathan/ Joa-
than forsoþe bigate achaz/ Achaz forsoþe bigate ezechie/ eze-
chie forsoþe bigate manasses/ Manasses forsoþe bigate amon/
Amon forsoþe bigate iosias/ Josias forsoþe bigate Jeconyas
and his breþeren/ into the transi-
actir þe transmygracion/ Jeconyas
latiel/ Salatiel forsoþe
bigate abiud/ Abyud for-
soþe bigate azor/ Azor for-
bigate achym/ Achym for-
gate eliazar/ eliazar forsoþe
bigate iacob/

ie/ and
ate sa-
forsoþe
m

Matheu

marve/ of whiche (marie) ihc is borne : pat is clepide c
And so alle generacoñs from abraham til to daupd :
 fourtene generacoñs/ and fro daupd til to he transmygr
 of babyloyne : ben fourtene generacoñs/ and fro he tran
 gracō of babyloyne til to crist : ben fourtene generacoñs/
 soþe þe generacoñ of cñt was þus/ whanne marie his m
 was spoufide to Ioseph : bfore þat þei shulden come to ge
 sche is founden haupnge in wombe of þe holy gost/ Ioseph
 housbond whan he was a iuste man (or ryztful) : & wolde
 puplische hire (or leede hir forþer) : wolde pryuelly forsake
 soþely hym þenkyng þes þingis : lo þe aungel of þe lorde
 peride in sleep (or tvenene) to hym seyinge/ Ioseph þe for
 daupd nyl þou drede : to take marie þi wijs/ forsoþe þat þ
 þat is borne in hire : is of þe holy gost/ and sche schal be
 sone : and þou schalt clepe his name Iesus/ for he schal m
 saaf : fro here synnes/ forsoþe al þis þing was done þa
 schulde be fulfild þat þing þat was seyde by þe prophete
 inge/ lo a virgyn schal haue in wombe : & sche schal bere a so
 and his name schal be clepide emanuel þat is interpretide
 expounyde) god wiþ us/ soþely Ioseph rysyng vþ fro sle
 dide as þe aungel of þe lord comaundide hym : & took
 wijs/ and he knewe hir not : til sche hadde borne hir firste
 goten sone : & clepide his name ihc/

C^m 2^m

Therfore whanne ihc was borne in bethlem of Ju
 in þe dages of kyng heroude : lo kyngis or (wisem
 camen fro þe este to ierlm seyinge/ where is he þa
 borne : kyng of ietwes/ forsoþe we haue seen
 sterne in þe este : & we comen forto worschip hym/ soþely ky
 heroude herpunge is turblide : and al ierlm wiþ hym/ and
 gederyng togedir alle þe prynces of prissis & scribis of
 puple enqueride of hem : where crist schulde be borne/ and
 seiden to hy/ In bethlem of Iuda/ so forsoþe it is wryten
 þe prophete/ & þou bethlem þe lande of Iuda : þou art n
 lea

Matheu

leaste in þe prynces of Iuda/ for of þee a duke schal gone oute:
 þat schal gouerne my puple of isrl/ þanne heroude pryuely þe
 kyngis clepide to hym: bisily lernyde of hem: þe tyme of þe
 sterre þat apperide to hem/ and he sendynge hem into bethlem:
 seyde/ go see & are see bisily of þe childe: and whā see hane
 founden: telle azen to me: þat I comynge worschip hym/ þe
 whiche whanne þei hadden herde þe kyng: wenten away/ and
 lo þe sterre: þe which þei sizen in þe este: wente bifore hem:
 til þat it comynge: stode aboue where þe childe was/ forsoþe
 þei seinge þe sterre: ioyeden wif a ful greet ioye/ and þei en-
 trynge þe hous: founden þe childe: wif marie his modir/ and
 þei fallynge doune: worschippede hū/ and here tresours open-
 yde: þei offerden to hym ziftis: golde: encens: & myr/ and an-
 swere taken in sleep: þat þei schulden not turne azen to he-
 roude: þei ben turnyde by anoper weye into here cuntre ¶ And
 whanne þei hadden gone away: lo þe aungel of þe lorde: ap-
 peride in sleep to ioseph/ rise vp: and take þe childe & his modir:
 and flee into egipte: & be þou here: til þat I seye to þee/ soþely
 it is to come: þat heroude seek þe childe for to leese hym/ þe
 whiche Ioseph risynge vp: took þe childe & his modir by
 nyzt: & wente into egipte/ and was here til þe deþ of heroude/
 þat it schulde be fulfild: þat þing þat was seyde of þe lorde
 by þe prophete: seyinge/ fro egipte I haue clepide my sone/
 þanne heroude seinge þat he was scornynge (or deceyuede) of þe
 kyngis was gretely wroþe/ and he sendyng slowe alle þe
 children þat weren in bethlem & in alle þe ēdis of it: fro two
 zeer age and wipīne: aftir þe tyme þat he had souzte oute of
 þe kyngis/ þanne it was fulfild: þat þing þat was seyde by
 Ieremye þe prophete: seyinge/ a voyce is herde an hize: we-
 pyng & myche wepyng: rachel wepyng hire sones: & sche
 wolde not be comfortide: for þei ben not/ soþely heroude
 deade: lo þe aungel of þe lorde apperide in sleep to Ioseph in
 egipte seyinge/ rise vp & take þe childe & his modir: and go in-
 to þe lande of isrl/ for þei þat souzten þe lijf of þe childe: ben
deade

Matheu

deade/ þe whiche Ioseph rystynge vp/ took þe childe & his
dir · & came into þe lande of isrl/ forsoþe he herynge þat
chelaus regnyde in Jude for heroude his fadir/ dredde so
go þidir/ and he moneside in sleep/ wente into þe partie
galilee/ and he comyge dwelte in a cytee þat is clepide
nazareth/ þat it schulde be fulfild þat þing · þat is seyd by
phetes forwhy/ he schal be clepide of nazareth//

C^m 3^m

In the ilke dayes came ioon baptist · prechyng
in the deserte of Jude seyng/ do zee penaunce/ for
kingdom of heuenes schal nyz (or comenyz)/ for
þis is he of whom it is seyd by ysaie þe prophet
voyce of a cryng in desert/ make zee reedy þe weyes of
lorde/ make zee ryztful þe payes of him/ forsoþe þat ilke i
hadde cloþe of þe heres of camels/ and a girdel of skyn abo
his leendis/ soþely his mete weren locustis & hony of þe wo
panne irfm wente oute to hym · & al Judee · & al þe c
tre aboute iordan/ & þei weren cōstenyde of hym in Iorde
knowelechyng here synnes/ soþely he seyng many of þe p
risees & of saduceis comyng to his baptyzm/ seyd to hem/ g
eracōns of neddris/ who schewide to zou · for to flee þe wi
to comyng/ herfore do zee worþi fruytis of penaunce/ and
zee seye wiþinne zou · we haue þe fadir abraham/ soþely I
to zou/ forwhy god is myzty to reyle vp of þes stoness/ þe son
of abraham/ for now þe are is putte to þe roote of þe tr
soþely euery tree þat makith not good fruyte/ schal be ki
doune · & schal be sente into þe fir/ forsoþe I cristen zou
water into penaunce/ forsoþe he þat is to come astir me ·
strenger þan I/ whos schoon I am not worþi to beere/ he sch
baptise (or cristen) zou in þe holy goost & fir/ whos wenewyn
clooth/ in his hande/ and he schal fully clense his floor · & sch
gedir his corne into his berne/ but þe chaffes he schal brenn
wiþ fir vnquencheable (or þat neuer schal be quenchide) þan
ihc came fro galilee into iordan to Ioon/ forto be cristeny

Matheu

prophete/ he lande of Zabulon & he lande of neptalym
wepe of he see · ouer iordan of galilee of heben men · he
ple þat dwelte in dirkenesses: siȝe a greet list/ and men syt
in he cuntre of schadowe of deþ: list is sprungen to hem/
þens ih̄c bigan for to preche · and seye do ȝee penaunces:
soþe he kyngdom of heuenes schal come nyz/ soþely ih̄c w
ynge biſidis he see of galilee: siȝe two breþeren · symount
is clepide petre & andrew his broþer: sendynge a nette
he see/ forsoþe þei weren fischers · & he seyde to hem/ c
ȝee astir me: and I schal make ȝou to be made fischers of m
and anone here nettis forfaken: þei sueden hym/ and he goi
forþe fro he place: siȝe two oþer breþeren · James of zebe
& Joon his broþer · in he schippe wiþ zebede here fadir: i
kyngaezen (or beetynge) here nettis/ and he clepide hem/ soþ
anone he nettis forfaken & he fadir: þei sueden hym/ and
enuyrounde al galilee techynge in he synagogis of hem
prechynge he gospel of he kyngdom · & helynge al sorowe
ache): and al seekenesse in he puple/ and his oppynyon (or sam
wente into al syrie/ and þei offerden to hym alle (men) hau
eupl: taken wiþ dyuerse sorowis & turmentis/ and hem
hadden deuplis & lunatik men · & men in paleſie · and he hel
hem/ and þere sueden hym many cumpanyes of galilee & of
capoly · & of ir̄lm̄ & of Judee & of bizonde iordan//

C^m 5



Jhesu forsoþe seinge he cumpanyes: wente vp into
hil and whanne he hadde sette: his disciplis
men nyz to hym/ and he openynge his mouþ: tau
hem seyinge/ bleſside be he pore in spirit: for
kyngdom of heuene is heren/ bleſside be mylde (men): for
schulen welde he erþe/ bleſside be þei þat mournen: for
schulen be comfortide/ bleſside be þei þat hungren & þrist
riȝtwelnesse: for þei schulen be fulfild/ bleſside be mercy
(men): for þei schulen gete mercy/ bleſside be þei þat ben of cle
berte: for þei schulen se god/ bleſside be peesible (men) for þ
schul

Mattheu

schulen be clepide he sones of god/ bleside be hei hat suffren
persecucion for rixtwelnesse: for he kyngdom of heuenes is
heren/ zee ben bleside whanne men schulen curse zou & pur-
sue zou * & schulen seye al euyl azenes zou * lizinge * for me/
ioyze zee (wihine forhe) * & glade zee (wihoute forh): for zour
mede is plenteuous in heuenes/ forsohe so hei hane pursuede &
prophetis: hat weren before ¶ zee ben salte of he erhe/ hat zif
he salte schal vangsche aweye: wherin schal it be saltide/ to no
hing is it worpi ouer: no but hat it be sente oute * & defoulide
of mē/ ¶ zee ben lizte of he worlde/ a cyte putte on an hize
hil * may not be hid/ neher (men) tenden a lanterne & putten it
vndir a buschel * but on a candillik: hat it 3yue lizt * to alle
hat ben in he hous/ so schyne zoure lizte bifore men: hē hei se
zoure good werkis * & glorifie zoure fadir hat is in heuenes//
¶ Mpl zee gesse (or deme) * hat I came to vndo (or distrupe) he
lawe or he prophetis/ I came not to vndo he lawe: but to ful-
fille it/ forsohe I seye to zou treuē: til heuene & erhe passe:
one I (hat is he leeste letter) * or a title * schal not passe fro he
lawe: til alle hingis be done/ perfore he hat vndoip (or brekeh)
one of hes leste maundementis & techip hus men: schal be cle-
pide he leste in he kyngdom of heuenes/ forsohe his hat doip
& techip: schal be clepide grete in he kingdom of heuenes//
¶ forsohe I seye to zou * but zif zoure rixtwelnesse be more
plenteuouse * han of scribis & pharisees: zee schul not entre
into he kyngdom of heuenes/ ¶ zee hane herde hat it is seyde
to olde men: hou schalt not slee/ forsohe he hat sleepe: schal be
gilty of doom/ but I seye to zou * that eueryche hat is wrope
to his broher: schal beilty of doom/ forsohe he that schal seye
to his broher racha (hat is a worde of scorne): schal beilty of
counseyl/ sohely he hat schal seye fool (hat is a worde of dis-
pyssynge) * schal beilty of he fir of helle/ perfore zif hou
offerist hi zifte at he auter * & here schalt byhenke hat hi broher
hap sumwhat azenes hee: leue here hi zifte bifore he auter *
& go firste & be recounseylide (or accorde) to hi broher/ and
panne

Matheu

panne þou comynge. schalt offre þi zift/ be þou consentyn
 to þin aduersarie soone. þe while þou art in þe weye wiþ hyr
 leste paraenture þin aduersarie take þee to þe domesman
 þe domesman take þee to þe mynysire. & þou be sente into þe
 soune/ treuly I seye to þee. þou schalt not go þens. til þu
 zilde þe laste serþing ¶ zee hane herde for it was seyde to olde
 men. þou schalt [not] do leccherie/ forsoþe I seye to zou. for
 whi euery man þat seþ a womman for to coueyte hir. now
 haþ done leccherie wiþ hire in his herte/ þat zif þin rizt y
 schlaundre þee. pulle it oute & caste it fro þee/ for it spedith to þe
 þat one of þi membres perische. þan all þi body go into helle
 and zif þi rizthande schlaundre þee. kutte it away & caste
 fro þee/ for it spedith to þee þat one of þi membres perisch
 þat þat al þi body go into helle/ forsoþe it is seyde/ who eu
 schal leue his wife. & þue he to hire a libel. (þat is a litil book
 forsakyng). soþely I seye to zou þat euery man that schal leue
 his wife. outaken cause of fornicacō. he makith hir to do le
 cherie/ and he that weddith þe forsaken wiif. doith auoutery
 ¶ eftsoþe zee hane herde/ þat it was seyde to olde men. þu
 schalt not forswere/ soþely to þe lorde þou schalt zelde þi
 oþes/ forsoþe I seye to zou. to not swere on al maner. neþer
 by heuene. for it is the trone of god. neþer by erþe. for it
 is the stool of his feet. neþer by irlm. for it is a cytee of a gre
 kyng/ neþer þou schalt swere be þin heed. for þou mayst not
 make one heer whijt or blacke/ but be þoure worde. & he
 nay nay/ forsoþe þat is more þan þis. is of euyl/ ¶ zee hane
 herde þat it is seyde/ ize for ize. toþe for toþe/ but I seye to
 zou. to not azenstonde euyl/ but zif any schal smyte þee in þi
 rizt cheek. & þue to hym & þe toþer/ and to hym þat wole stryke
 wiþ þee in doom. & take away þi coote. leue þou to hym & þi
 ouer clooth/ and who euer constreyneth þee a housande paas
 go þou wiþ hym oþer/ to hym forsoþe þat ariþ of þee & þue. an
 turne þou not away fro hym. þat wole borowe of þee/ ¶ zee
 hane herde þat it is seyde/ þou schalt loue þi neizebore. and
 þat

Matheu

hate þin enemye/ but I seye to zou· loue zee zoure enemyes· do
zee wel to hem þat haten zou· & prey zee for (men) pursuyng
zou falsely chalengynge zou· þat zee be þe sones of zoure fadir
þat is in heuenes/ þat makih his sunne to sprynge vpon good
& euyl men· and reyneþ vpon iuste men [& uniuiste]/ for zif
zee louen hem þat louen zou· what mede schulen zee hane
wheþer & puplicans done not þis þing· and zif zee greten
(or saluten) zoure breþeren onely· what more ouer schulen
zee do· wheþer & paynymis done not þis þing· þerfore be zee
parfite· as & zoure heuenely fadir is parfite/ take zee heed· lest
zee done zour ritzwetnesse bifore men· þat zee be sene of hem/
ellis zee schulen not haue mede at zoure fadir þat is in heuenes/
þerfor whan þou doiste almes· nyl þou synge bifore þee in a
trumpe as ppocritis done in synagogis & stretis þat þei ben
made worschipful of men/ forsoþe I seye to zou· þei hane re-
ceyuede here mede/ but þee doinge almes· knowe not þi liste
hande· what þi ritz hande doih· þat þin almes be in hidels/ and
þi fadir þat seeh in hidels· schal zilde to þee//



And whanne zee schulen preye· zee schulen not be as C^m 6^m
ppocritis/ þe whiche stondynge louen to preye in
synagogis· & in corners of stretis· þat þei be seen of
men/ treuly I seye to zou· þei hane receyuede here
mede/ but whanne þou schalt preye· entre into þi couche/ & þe
dore schitte· preye þi fadir in hidels/ & þi fadir þat seeh in
hidels· schal zilde to þee/ soþely preying· nyl zee speke myche·
as heþen men done/ for þei gessen þat þei ben herde· in here
myche speche/ þerfore nyl zee be made liche to hem/ for zoure
fadir woot what is nede to zou· bifore þat zee aren hym/ for-
soþe þus zee schulen preye/ ¶ Dure fadir þat art in heuenes·
halowide be þi name/ þi kyngdom come to/ be þi wille done· as
in heuene & in erþe/ zif to vs þis day· oure brede ouer oþer sub-
staunce/ and forzyue to vs oure dettis· as we forzyuen to oure
dottours/ and leede vs not into temptacōn· but delyuere vs fro

Matheu

al euyl amen/ (pat is to be it) forsoþe zif zee schulen forzyue
men here synnes: And zoure heuenely fadir schal forzyue
zou zoure trespassis/ soþely zif zee schulen not forzyue to m
neþer zoure fadir schal forzyue to zou zoure synnes/ but what
zee fasten: nyl zee be made as ypocritis sorowful/ for þei p
ten here faces (oute of kyndely termes): þat þei seeme fasty
to men/ treuely I seye to zou: þei hane receyuede here mede/ I
whanne þou fastist: anoynte þin hede & wasche þi face: þat þ
be not seen fastynge to men: but to þi fadir þat is in hidels/ a
þi fadir þat sech in hidels: schal zyue to þee/ ¶ Nyl zee t
soure to zou trespours in erþe: where ruste & mouzte distruye
and where þeues deluen oute & stelen/ but tresoure zee to z
tresours in heuene: where neþer ruste ne mouzte distrueþ
where þeues deluen not oute: (or vndirmynen not): ne stelen
forsoþe where þi tresoure is: þer & þin herte is/ þe lanterne
þi body: is þin eyze/ zif þin eyze be synple: al þi body schal
liztful/ but zif þin eyze be waywarde: al þi body schal be dir
ful/ þerfore zif þe lizte þat is in þee: be dirkenessis: howe gr
schulen þe ilke dirkenessis ben/ ¶ Roman may serue to t
lordis/ forsoþe ouþer he schal hate the toon & loue þe toþer: o
þer he schal susleyn þe toon & dispise þe toþer/ zee mowne n
serue to god & richessis/ þerfore I seye to zou: þat zee be not bi
to zour lijf what zee schulen ete: oþer to zoure body wiþ wh
zee schulen be cloþide/ wher zoure lijf is not more þan mete:
zoure body more þan cloþ: biholde zee þe sleinge foulis of
eire: for þei sowen not ne repen: neþer gederen into berne
and zoure fadir of heuene feediþ hem/ wher zee ben not mo
worþe þan þei: soþely who of zou þenkyng may putte to h
stature one cubite: and of cloþinge what ben zee besye: bihol
zee þe lilies of þe feelde: how þei wahren/ þei traueylen no
neþer spynnen/ treuely I seye to zou: for whi neþer salome
in al his glorie was coueride as one of þes/ for zif god cloþi
þus þe hey of þe feelde þat to day is: & to morowe is sente in
þe sournays: how myche more zou of litil seiþ: þerfore n

Matheu

wey pat lediþ to lijs: and þer ben fewe þat fynden it/ ¶ If
seyue & flee fro false prophetis: þe whiche comen to you
cloþinges of sheep: but wipinne þei ben rauþschynge wolū
of here fruptis: zee schulen knowe hem/ wheþer men gede
grapis of hornes: or figis of bretis: so euery good tree: ma
good fruptis/ soþely an euyl tree: makij euyl fruptis/ a g
tree may not make euyl fruptis: neþer an euyl tree make g
fruptis/ euery tree þat makij not good frupte: schal be ki
doun & schal be sente into þe fiyr/ þerfore of here fruptis
schulen knowe hem/ not eche man þat seiþ to me lorde lor
schal entre into þe kyngdome of heuenes: but he þat doiþ
wille of my fadir þat is in heuenes: schal entre into þe ky
dome of heuenes/ many schulen seye to me in þat day: lo
wheþer we hane not propheciēde in þi name: & hane caste o
deuylis in þi name: & hane done many vertues in þi nam
and þanne I schal knoweleche to hem for I knewe you neu
departe away fro me: zee þat wirchen wickednesse/ þerf
eche man þat hereþ þes my wordis & doiþ hem: schal be ma
liche to a wise man: þat haþ bildide his hous vpon a stou
and reyne came doun: & floodis camen: & windis blewen
ruscheden into þat hous: and it fel not doun: for it w
founded on a stoon/ and euery man þat heris þes my wor
& doiþ hem not: is lyche to a man fool: þat haþ bildide
hous on grauel (or sonde) and reyne came doun: & flood
camen: & wyndis blewen: and þei hurleden into þat hous
it fel doun: & þe fallynge doun þerof was greet/ ¶ And
is made whanne ihc hadde endide þes wordis: þe company
wondreden on his techynge/ soþely he was techynge hem
(aman) haupng power: and not as þe scribis of hem & þe ph
riseis//

Matheu

neffis/ soþely ih̄c seinge manye cumpanyes aboute hym: bad his disciplis go ouer þe water/ and one scribe (or a man of lawe:) comynge to: seyde to hym/ mayster I schal sue zee whidir euer þou schalt go/ and ih̄c seyde to hym/ foris hane dichis (or borrowis) & briddis of þe eyre hane neffis: but mannes sone hap not wher he reste his heed/ soþely anoper of his disciplis seyde to hym/ lorde suffre me to go firste & birie my sadir/ forsoþe ih̄c seyde to hym/ sue þou me: & lete deade men birie here deade men/ and ih̄u stepzinge into a litil schippe: his disciplis sueden hym/ and lo a greet styrngge was made in þe see: so þat þe litil schippe was hilide wiþ watwis: but he slepte/ and his disciplis camen nyȝ to hym: and reyseden hym seyinge/ lorde saue vs: we perischen/ and ih̄c seyde to hem/ what ben zee of litil seþþ agaste/ þanne he risynge comaundide to þe wyndis & þe see: and a greet peesiblenesse is made/ forsoþe men wondreden: seying/ what maner (man) is (he) þis: for þe wyndis & see obeschen to hym/ and whanne ih̄c had comyn ouer þe water: into the cuntree of men of genazareth: two men haupnge deuelis runnen to hym goinge oute fro biriels: sul seerse (or wickide): so þat noman myȝte passe by þe weye/ and lo þei crieden seyinge/ what to vs & to þee ih̄u: þe sone of god/ hast þou comen hidir bifore þe tyme: for to turmente vs/ soþely a flocke (or droue) of many swyn hoggis lesotwynge: was not fer fro hem/ but þe deuelys prepeden him: seyinge/ zif þou castist vs oute hens: sende vs into þe droue of hoggis/ and he seþþ to hem/ go zee/ and þei goinge oute: wenten into swyn/ and lo in a greet birre: al þe droue wenten hebelynge into þe see: & þei ben deade in wattris/ forsoþe þe herdis fledden aweye: and comynge into þe cytee: tolden alle þes þingis: and of hem þat hadden þe sendis/ and lo al þe cytee wenten azens ih̄u: metynge hym/ and hym sene þei prepeden þat he schulde passe fro here coostis//

And

Matheu



And ihū goinge vp · into aboot · passide ouer þe water · C^m 9^m
 & came into his cytee/ and lo þei offredento hym a
 man sijk in palestie/ liggynge in a bedde/ forsoþe ihc
 seinge þe feiþ of hem/ seyde to þe man sijk in palestie/
 sone haue þou triste/ þi synnes ben forzouen to þee/ and lo
 summe of þe scribis seyden wiþinne hem self/ þis blaffemeþ/
 and whanne ihc had seen here houztis/ he seyde/ wherto þenke
 zee euyl þingis in zoure hertis/ what is lizter to seye · þi synnes
 ben forzouen to þee · oþer to seye · rise þou & walke/ forsoþe
 þat zee wite · þat mannes sone haþ power to forzþue synnes
 in erþe/ þanne he seyde to þe sijk man in palestie/ rise vp ·
 take þi bed · & go into þin hous/ and he roos & wente into his
 hous/ soþely þe cumpanyes seeinge/ dredde & glorifieden god/ ·
 þat 3aue suche power to men/ and whanne ihc passide þens/ ·
 he si3e a man sittynge in a tolboþe/ matheu by name/ and he
 seyde to hym/ sue þou me/ and he risynge/ solowide hym/
 and it is done hym syttinge at þe mete in þe hous/ lo many
 puplicans & synful men comynge/ saten at þe mete wiþ ihū &
 his disciplis/ and pharisees seinge/ seyden to his disciplis/ whi
 etih zoure mayster wiþ puplicans & synful men/ and ihc
 herynge/ seyde a leche is not nede to men þat faren wel/ but
 to men hauynge euyl/ soþely zee goinge/ lerneþ what it is · I
 wole mercy & not sacrifice/ forsoþe I came not to clepe ryztful
 men/ but synful men/ ¶ þanne þe disciplis of Ioon camen
 ny3 to hym seyinge/ whi we & pharisees fasten ofte/ but þi dis-
 ciplis fasten not/ and ihc seyde to hem/ wheþer þe sones of þe
 spouse (or housbonde) mowne weyle (or mourne) how longe
 þe spouse is wiþ hem/ soþely dayes schulen come · whanne þe
 spouse schal be taken awey fro hem/ and þanne þei schulen
 faste/ soþely no man sendih in a medelynge of rude (or newe)
 cloþ/ into an olde clooh/ & a worse kuttynge is made/ neþer
 men senden newe wijn into olde botels (or wijn vessels)/ elles
 þe wijn vessels ben broken · & þe wijn is sched oute/ and þe
 wijn

Matheu

wijn vessels perischen/ but men senden newe wyne into
wijn vessels: and bope ben kepte/ ¶ Ihu spekyng þes þi
to hem: lo one prynce came to · & worschipide him · seyd
lorde my douzter is now deade · but come þou & putte
hande vpon hir: and sche schal lyue/ and ihc risynge suede
& his disciplis/ and lo a womman þat sufferide þe fluxe (or
nyng of blood) twelue zeer: came to byhynde · & touchid
hemme of his clooth/ soþely sche seyde wiþinne hir self/ &
touche onely þe clothes of hym: ¶ I schal be saaf/ and ihc turn
& seinge hire: seyde douzter hane þou triste: þi seih þat n
þee saaf/ and þe womman was made saaf fro þat houre/
whanne ihc came in to þe hous of þe prynce · & sate mynst
& þe cumpanye makynge noyse: he seyde go zee aweye/ fo
wenche is not deade: but slepþ/ and þei scorneden hym/
whanne þe cumpanye was caste oute: he entride in & helde
hande/ and þe wenche roos vp/ and his fame wente oute i
al þe lande/ ¶ And ihu passynge þens: two blynde men sue
hym · crynge & seyinge/ þou sone of dauid: hane mercy of
soþely whanne þei camen hoom: þe blynde men camen
to hym/ and ihc seih to hem/ what wolen zee þat I do to zo
and þei seyden lorde: þat oure eyzen ben openyde/ and
seyde/ bileue zee: þat I may do þis þing to zou: ¶ þei se
soþely (or zhe) lorde/ þanne he touchide her eyzen: seyinge
zoure seih: be it done to zou/ and þe yzen of bope · ben op
yde/ and ihc þretenyde to hem: seyinge/ se zee þat no n
wite: but þei goinge oute: defameden hym þourz al þat lan
¶ Soþely þei gone oute: lo þei offreden to hym a doun
man haupnge a deupl/ and whanne þe deupl was caste ou
þe dounbe man spac/ and þe cumpanyes wondriden seyin
it apperide neuer so in isrl: but þe pharisees seyden/ in
prince of deuplis he castiþ oute deuplis/ and ihc cumpast
aboute alle cytees & castels techynge in synagogis of hem
prechynge þe gospel of þe kyngdom helynge alle langwischyr
(or ache): and al seekenesse/ forsoþe ihc seyng þe cumpanyi
hadd

Matheu

hadden reuþe on hem: for þei weren traueþlide & liggynge as ſchepe not hauynge a ſcheperde/ þanne he ſeyde to his diſci-
plis/ ſoþely þer is myche riſp corne: but ſewe werkemen/ þer-
fore preye zee þe lorde of þe riſp corne: þat he ſende werkemen
into his riſp corne//



And þe twelue diſciplis gederide to gedir: he ȝyue to C^m 10^m
hem power of vnclene ſpiritis: þat þei ſchulden
caſte hem oute: and þat þei ſchulden heele al ache
& al ſekenefſe/ þes ben þe names of twelue apoſtliſ/
þe firſte Symount þat is clepide Petre & Andrewe his broþer:
Philip & Bartholomeu: James of zebede & ioon his broþer:
Thomas: & Matheu puplican: & James alþhei & Cadee:
Symount canane & Judas ſcarioth: þe whiche bitrayede criſt/
Ih̄c ſente þes twelue: comaundyng to hem & ſeyinge/ go zee
not into þe wey of heþen men: & entre zee not into þe cytees
of ſamaritans: but raper go zee to þe ſcheep of þe hous of iſrl:
þat perſchiden/ Soþely zee goinge: preche ſeyinge/ for þe
kyngdom of heuenes ſchal neyze/ heele zee ſeeke men: bpreyſe
zee deade men: clenſe zee meſels: caſte zee oute deuelis/ frely
zee hanie taken: frely ȝyue zee/ nyl zee welden golde neþer ſil-
uer in zoure girdels: not a ſcrippe in þe weye: neþer two
cootis: neþer ſchoon: neþer zerde/ for a werkeman is worþi
his mede/ into what euer cytee or caſtel zee ſchulen entre:
ariþ who þerinne is worþi: & here dwelle zee til þat zee gone
oute/ forſoþe zee entryng into an hous: grete zee (or ſalute
zee) it: ſeyinge pees to þis hous/ and ſoþely zif þat hous be
worþi: zoure pees ſchal come on it/ forſoþe zif þat hous be not
worþi: zoure pees ſchal turne azen to zou/ and who euer ſchal
not receyue zou: neþer here zoure wordis: zee goinge forþe
fro þat hous or cytee: ſmytiþ aweiþe þe duſte fro zoure ſeet/
trewely I ſeye to zou: it ſchal be more ſuffrable to þe lande of
men of ſodom & gomor in þe day of iugement: þan to þat cy-
tee/ lo: I ſende zou as ſcheep: in þe myddil of wolues/ þerfore

Matheu

be zee war (or wise bifore *) as fepentis: and fympl
 douues/ forfope be zee war of men/ for hei fchulen take ze
 counfeylis: and hei fchulen beete zou in here fynagogis/
 to prefidentis (or mayres) & to kyngis * zee fchulen be l
 for me: into witneffynge to hem & hepen men/ but wha
 hei fchulen take (or bitraye) zou: nyl zee henke how or t
 hing zee fpeken/ forfope it fchal be zouen to zou in pat ho
 what zee fchulen fpeke/ for it ben not zee pat fpeken: bu
 fpirit of zoure fadir pat fpekeh in zou/ fohely pe broper f
 take pe broper into deþ: & pe fadir pe fone/ and fones fch
 rife azenes fadir & modir: and fchulen turment hem by
 and zee fchulen be in hate to alle men: for my name/ for
 he pat fchal dwelle ftille vnto pe ende: his fchal be faaf/ fo
 whanne hei fchulen purfue zou in his cytee: flee zee into a
 per/ treuly I feye to zou * zee fchulen not ende pe cytee
 ifrl: til pat mannes (fonne) come/ pe difciple is not aboue
 mayfter: ne pe feruaunt * aboue his lorde/ zif hei hane clep
 pe houlfbonde man (or fadir of meyne) belzebub: how my
 more his houfholde meyne: perfore drede zee not hem/
 noþing is coueride (or hid): pat fchal not be fchewyde/
 no þing is pryuey pat fchal not be wifte/ pat þing pat I
 to zou in dirkeneffis: feye zee in pe lizte and preche zee v
 rous * pat þyng pat zee heren in ere/ and nyl zee drede f
 pat fleeen pe body: trewely hei moun not flee pe foule/
 raper drede zee hym pat may leefe foule & body into he
 wheþer two fparowis ben not folde for one halpenye * &
 of hem fchal not falle on pe erþe * with outen zoure fal
 forfope alle pe heres of zoure heede ben nowmbride/ per
 nyl zee drede: zee ben better þan many fparowis/ perfore eu
 man pat fchal knoweleche me bifore men * and I fchal kno
 leche hym bifore my fadir pat is in heuenes/ fohely he pat f
 denye me bifore men: & I fchal denye hym bifore my fadir
 is in heuenes/ ¶ Nyl zee deme pat I came to fende pees i
 pe erþe * I came not to fende pees into pe erþe: but fweri
foþ

Mattheu

pan a ptophet/ for þis is he of whom it is written/ lo I send
myn aungel bifore þi face/ þat schal make reddy þe weye bi
fore þee/ treuely I seye to zou þer roos none more þan Ioon
baptist/ amonge children of wymmen/ forsoþe & he þat is last
in þe kyngdom of heuenes/ is more þan he/ soþely fro þe daye
of Ioon baptist til now/ þe kyngdom of heuenes suffriþ
strengthe (or violence) · & violent men rauyschen it/ for all
prophetis & þe lawe til Ioon baptist prophecieden/ and zif ze
wolen receyue/ he is helie þat is to come/ he þat hath eris o
berynge/ here he/ but to whom schal I geue þis generacō
liche? It is liche to children sittynge in a cheppynge/ þe which
crynge to here peetis · seyn/ we hane sungen to zou/ and ze
hane not liyyde (or dauntyde)/ we hane mournyde to zou
and ze hane not weplyde/ soþely Ioon came · neþer etynge
ne drynckynge/ and þei seyn he hath a deuyl/ þe sone of man
came etynge & drynckynge/ and þei seyn/ lo a man deuoure
(or gloton) · & drynker of wijn · & frende of puplicans & synfu
men/ and wisdom is iustifiede of here sones/ ¶ I þanne ih̄c be
gan to seye reþroue to cytees · in whiche ful manye vertues
of hyin ben done/ for þei bidden not penaunce/ Also to þei
corozaym · wo to þee bethsaiðar for zif þe vertues þat þe
done in zou · hadden ben done in tyre & sydon/ sumtyme þe
hadden done penaunce in heyre & asche/ neþeles I seye · it
schal be softer (or lesse pcyne) to tyre & sydon þan to zou/ in
þe day of doom/ and þou capharnaum/ wheþer til into heuenes
þou schalt be retyde vp/ þou schalt go doune til into helle/ for
zif þe vertues þat ben done in þee/ hadden ben done in sodom/
þatuenture þei schulden hane dwellyde til into þis day/ ne
þeles I seye to zou · for to þe lande of sodom it schal be softer
(or lesse pcyne) in þe day of doom/ þan to þee/ I knowelechi
to þee sathir lorde of heuene & erþe · for þou hast hidde þe
þingis fro wyse men & war (or worldly wyse men)/ and hast
reueled hem to litil men/ so sadir/ for whi · so it was plesynge
bifore þee/ alle þingis ben taken to me/ of my fadir/ and ne
mar

Matheu

man knowiþ þe sone: no but þe fadir/ ne any man knewe þe fadir no but þe sone · and to whom þe sone wolde schewe/
¶ Alle zee þat traueylen & ben chargide · comeþ to me: & I schal refresche (or fulfille) zou/ take zee my zok vpon zou · & lerne zee of me · for I am mylde & meke in herte · & zee schulen fynde reste to zoure soulis/ for my zok is swete (or softe): and my charge lizte (or esy)//

In þat tyme ih̄c wente by cornes on þe saboth day/ C^m 12^m
 forsoþe his disciplis hungryng: bygunnen to plucke eris of corne & to ete/ soþely pharisees seyng: seyden to hym/ lo þi disciplis done þat þing þat is not leueful to hem: for to do in sabotis/ and he seyde to hem/ wheþer zee hane red what daupd dide whanne he hungryde · & þei þat weren wiþ hym/ how he entride into þe hous of god · & ete loues of proposicion (or puttyng forþ) · þe whiche loues was not leueful to hym to ete · neþer to hem þat weren wiþ hym: no but to priistis onely/ or wheþer zee hane not red in þe lawe · for in sabotis · priistis in þe temple defoulen þe sabotis · & þei ben wiþouten grete synnes/ soþely I seye to zou · for þis is more þan þe temple/ forsoþe zif zee wisten what is þis · I wole mercy & not sacrifice: zee schul neuer hane condempnyde innocentis/ treuely mannes sone is zhe lord: of þe saboth/ and whanne he passide þens: he came into þe sinagoge of hem and lo a man haupnge a drie hande · & þei axeden hym seyng: zif it is leueful to heele in þe saboth: þat þei schulden accuse hym/ soþely he seyde to hem/ who schal be a man of zou þat haþ one scheep · & zif it schal falle doune into a dyche in þe sabotis: wheþer he schal not holde · and lifte it vp/ how myche more is a man better þan a scheep/ and so it is leueful to do good in þe saboth/ þanne he seyde to þe man/ stretche forþe þin hande/ and he strauzte forþ: and it is restoryde to helpe: as þe toþer/ forsoþe þe pharisees goinge oute · maden a counseyl azenes hym: how þei schulden leese hym/ soþely ih̄u wit-
 ynge:

Matheu

ynge: wente away pens/ and many sueden hym: and he he
 hem alle/ and he comaundide to hem: pat þei schulden
 make hym oppn (or knowen) · pat þat þing schulde be fulfi
 þat was seyd by ysaie þe prophete: seyinge/ lo my ch
 childe whom I hane chosē: my derlynge · in whom it
 wel pleside to my soule/ I schal putte my spirit on hym:
 he schal telle doom to heben men/ he schal not stryue ne c
 neher any man schal heere his voyce in stretis/ he schal
 breke to gedir a schaken reed · & he schal not quenche a
 kynges flare: til þat he caste oute doom to victorie & heben n
 schulen hope in his name/ þanne a blynde man & a doun
 haupnge a deuyl · was offride vp til hym/ and he heelde hy
 so þat he spac & sise/ and alle þe cumpanyes wondriden & t
 den · wher þis be þe sone of dauid? but þe pharisees heryn
 seyden/ he þis castiþ not oute fendis: no but in belzebub pry
 of fendes/ toþely ihc witynge here þouztis: seyde to hem/ e
 kyngdom departide azenes hym self: schal be desolate (or
 confortide)/ and eche cytee or hous departide azenes itse
 schal not stonde/ and zif sathanas caste oute sathanas: he
 departide azenes hymself/ þerfore how schal hys kyngd
 stonde? and zif I in belzebub caste oute deuylis: in whom
 whos myzte) zoure sones casten oute? þerfore þei schul
 zoure domesmen/ forsoþe zif I in þe spirit of god caste o
 fendis: þerfore þe kyngdom of god is comen into zou
 amonge zou)/ oþer how may any man entre into þe hous
 a stronge man · & take away his vessels: no but firste he sel
 bynde þe stronge man · & þanne he schal rauysche his hous/
 þat is not wiþ me: is azenes me/ and he þat gederiþ not
 gedir wiþ me: scateriþ abroad/ þerfore I saye to zou al syn
 & blassemye · schal be forzouen to men · but þe spirit of bl
 femye: schal not be forzouen/ and who euer schal seye a wor
 azenes mannes sone: it schal be forzouen to hym/ forsoþe
 þat seye a worde azenes þe holy gost: it schal not be forzou
 to hym · neher in þis worlde ne in þe toþer/ oþer make zee

Matheu

tree good & his fruyte good: oþer make zee þe tree euyl & his fruyte euyl/ forsoþe a tree is knowen of þe fruyte/ zee generacō of neddris how motw zee speke goode þingis whanne zee ben euyl/ soþely þe mouþe spekiþ: of þe greet plente of þe herte/ a good man bryngiþ forþ good þingis: of good tresoure/ forsoþe I seye to zou/ for whi of euery ydil worde þat men speken: þei schulen zilde resoune þer of in þe day of doom/ for of þi wordis þou schalt be iustificede: and of þi wordis þou schalt be dampnyde/ ¶ Hanne summe of þes scribis & pharisees answereden to hym: seyinge/ mayster we wolen se a token of þee/ þe whiche answerynge: seiþ to hem/ an euyl generacō and aboutrer: seekiþ a token/ and token schal not be zowen to it: no but þe token of ionas þe prophet/ for as Jonas was in the wombe of a whalle þre dayes & þre nyztis: so mannes sone schal be in þe herte of þe erþe: þre dayes & þre nyztis/ men of nynyue schulen rise in doom wiþ þis generacō & þei schulen condempne it: for þei diden penaunce in þe prechyng of Jonas/ and lo heere more þan Jonas/ þe queen of þe south schal rise in doom wiþ þis generacō & schal condempne it: for sche came fro þe endis of þe erþe: for to heere þe wisdom of salamon/ & lo heere (is) more þan salamon/ forsoþe whanne an unclene spirite schal go oute fro a man: he goiþ bi drye places seekynge and he findiþ not/ þanne he seiþ/ I schal turne azen into myn hous: fro whens I came oute/ & he comynge fyndiþ it voyde: clenȝide wiþ besemes: & mayde sayre/ þanne he goiþ & takiþ seuene oþer spiritis wiþ hym: worse þanne hymself: and þei entrynge in dwelle here/ and þe laste þingis of þat man ben made worse þan þe former/ so it schal be into þis werste generacō/ ¶ Zit hym spekyng to þe cumpanyes of puple: lo hys modir & his breþeren stoden wiþ oute forþ: sekynge for to speke to hym/ soþely sum man seyde to hym/ lo þi modir and þi breþeren stonde wiþ oute: sekynge þee/ and he answerynge to þe man seyinge to hym: seiþ/ who is my modir: & who ben my breþeren? and he holdynge forþ hys hande into his

Matheu

his disciplis: seyde/ lo my modir * & my breperen/ tre
 whoeuer doih þe wille of my fadir þat is in heuenes: he is
 broþer & suster & modir//

C^m 13^m



[* Sic in MS.]

And þat day ihc goinge oute of þe hous: satte bi
 þe see/ and manye cumpanyes of puple ben gede
 to hym: so þat he steyzinge vp into a boot * satte
 al þe cumpanye stood in þe brinke/ and he spa
 hem many þingis in parablis: seyinge/ lo he þat sowih:
 oute to sowe his seed/ and þe while he sowih: summe fel
 bisidis þe weye/ and briddis of þe erþe* camen: and eten þ
 sopely oþer (seedis) felden into stonpe places: where þei
 den not myche erþe and anone þei ben sprungen vp: for
 hadden not depnesse of þe erþe/ sopely þe sunne sprunge
 þei swaleden (or brennten for heete) * & for þei hadden
 root þei drieden vp/ forsoþe oþer (seedis) sellen amo
 þornes: & þe þornes weren vp/ and strangeliden hem/ but o
 (seedis) felden into good lande: and zauen fruyte * summe
 hundride folde * & anoter sixty folde * & anoter þritty folde
 þat haþ eris of herynge: here he/ and disciplis comynge
 seyden to hym/ whi spekest þou in parablis to hem? þe whi
 answerynge: seith to hem/ for to zou it is zouen for to kno
 þe mysterie (or pryete) of þe kyngdom of heuenes: but it
 not zouen to hem/ for it schal be zouen to hym þat haþ: and
 schal haue plente/ treuly who þat haþ not: þat þing þat he
 seen to haue: schal he taken away fro hym/ þerfore I speke
 hem in parablis * for þei seinge seen not * & þei herynge he
 not neþer vnderstonðen: þat þe prophecie of ysaye seyinge
 fulfild in hem/ wiþ herynge zee schulen here: & zee schul
 not vnderstonde/ and zee seing schulen see: & zee schulen
 se/ for þe herte of þis puple is infattide * and þei herden g
 uously wiþ eris * & þei hane closide þer yzen: þat sumtyme
 seen wiþ yzen * & wiþ eris heren * & vnderstonde in herte * &
 be to gedic turnyde: & I heele hem/ forsoþe zoure yzen þ
 te

Matheu

scen ben bleffide: and zoure eris pat heren/ forsope I seye
 treuþe to zou/ for many prophetis & iuste men coueytiden to
 se þo þingis pat zee seen: & þei sizen not/ and to here þe þingis
 pat zee heren: and þei herden not/ þerfore here zee þe parable
 of þe sowynge (man) * eche pat heriþ þe worde of þe rewme &
 vnderstondiþ not: þe pynl spirit comen and raupschip pat * þat
 is sowen in his herte: þis is þat is sowen in his herte: þis is
 þat is sowen bifidis þe wey/ soþely he þat is sowen on þe soon:
 þis it is þat heren þe worde of god * & anone wiþ ioy takiþ it/
 forsope he haþ no root in hym self: but it is temporal * (þat is
 it lastiþ not but a litil tyme) * forsope tribulacōn and persecu-
 cōn made for þe worde: anone he is sclaunderide/ but he þat
 is sowen in þornes: is þis þat heriþ þe worde * & þe bisynesse
 of þis worlde: & þe falsenesse of richessis: strangeliþ þe worde:
 and it is made wiþouten fruyte/ but he þat is sowen into
 good lande: is þis þat heriþ þe worde * & vnderstondiþ &
 bringiþ forþ fruyte/ and soþely sum makਿ an hundriþ folde *
 treuly anoder sirty folde * forsope anoder þritty folde/
¶ Anoder parable ihc put forþ to hem: seyinge/ þe kingdom of
 heuenes is made liche to a man * þat sowe good seede * in his
 feelde/ but whanne men slepten: his ennemye came * & sowe
 aboue darnel (or cockel) * in þe mydel of wheet: and wente
 away/ soþely whanne þe erbe hadde growen & made fruyte:
 þanne þe darnels (or cokkils) appereden/ forsope þe seruauntis
 of þe housbonde man * comynge nyȝ: seyden to hym/ lorde
 wher þou hast not sowen good seed in þi feelde: wher of þanne
 haþ it darnel (or cokkle)? and he seiþ to hem/ þe man ene-
 mye: haþ done þis þing/ treuely þe seruauntis seyden to hym/
 wolte þou we go: and gaderen hem? and he seiþ/ nay lestte
 parauentur zee gaderynge darnels (or cokkels): drawe vp by
 þe root to gedit wiþ hem & þe wheet/ suffre zee hem boþe *
 ware til to ripe corne * & in tyme of risþ corne: I schal seye to
 repers/ firste gadir zee to gedit darnels (or cokkils) & bindiþ
 hem to gedit in knytkchis (or smale bundels) * for to be brente:

¶

but

Matheu

but gadir zee wheet into my berne/ Another parable ihc pu
 forth to hem: seyinge/ he kyngdom of heuenes is lijk to a cor
 of seneney: he whiche a man takyng: sewe in his feelde/
 whiche treuely is lesse of alle seedis/ but whanne it haf ware
 it is most of alle wortis/ & is made a tree: so pat briddis of
 eyre comen & dwellen in bowis (or braunchis) herof/ ¶ An
 other parable ihc spac to hem/ he kyngdom of heuenes is lijk
 soudouz: he which taken: a womman hid in pre mesures
 mele: til it were al soudowide/ ihc spac alle hes pingis in p
 rablis to he cumpanyes of puplis: and he spac not to he
 wipouten parablis: pat it schulde be fulfild pat ping pat
 seyde by he prophete: seyinge/ I schal open my moup in p
 rablis: I schal bulke oute (or telle oute): hid pingis fro m
 kyngde of he worlde/ panne he cumpanyes leste: he came in
 an hous/ and hys disciplis camen nyz to hym: seyinge expou
 to vs he parable of darnels (or cockels) of he selde/ he whiche
 answerynge: seih/ he pat sowih good seed: is mannes son
 sohely he feelde: is he worlde/ but he good seed: hes ben son
 of he kyngdom/ darnels (or cockels): forsohe hes ben eu
 fones/ but he enemye pat sowih hem: is he sende/ but he rijp
 corne: is he endynge of he worlde/ sohely he repers: ben au
 gels/ herfore as darnels ben gederide to gedir & brennte i
 fir: so it schal be in he endynge of he worlde/ mannes son
 schal sende his aungels: & hei schulen gedir of his rethme all
 schlauderers: and hem pat done wickidnesse/ and hei schule
 sende hem: into he chymney of fir/ her schal be wepyng an
 betynge togedir of teeh/ panne iuste men schulen thyne as p
 funne: in he rethme of here fadir/ he pat haf eris of heryng
 here he/ ¶ he kyngdom of heuenes is lijk to tresour hid in
 feelde/ he whiche a man pat fyndih: hidih/ & for ioye of it h
 goih & sellih alle pingis pat he haf: and bieih he ilke feelde
 ¶ Estesone he kyngdome of heuenes is lijk to a man mar
 chaunt: seekyng good margaritis/ sohely one precious mar
 garite founden: he wente & selde alle pingis pat he hadde and
 bouzti

Matheu

bouzte it/ ¶ Este þe kyngdome of heuenes is lijk to a nette sente into þe see: and of al kynde of fysches gederynge/ þe whiche whanne it was fulfild: men leedyng oute & settyng bysides þe brynke: clensiden þe good into here vessels: but þei senten oute þe euyl/ so it schal be in þe endyng of þe worlde/ Aungelis schulen go oute & schulen departe euyl men: fro þe mydel: of iuste men: and þei schulen sende hem into þe chymney of fyr/ here schal be wepyng & betyng togedir of teep/ hane zee vnderstonde alle þes þingis/ þei seyn to hym/ zhe/ he seih to hem/ þerfore euery writer tauzte in þe kyngdome of heuenes: is lijk an housbondeman: þat bryngih forþ of his tresour: newe þingis and olde/ ¶ And it is done whanne ihc hadde endide þes parablis: he passide fro þens/ and he comyng into his cuntre: tauzte hem in here synagogis: so þat þei wondriden & seyden/ wher of to hym þis wisdom & vertues/ wheþer is not þis þe sone of a smyth (or carpenter)/ wher his modir be not seyd marie: & his breþeren James & Ioseph & Symount & Judas/ and his sistris: wher þei alle ben not at vs/ þerfore wherof to hym: alle þes þingis/ and so þei weren sclaunderide in hym/ forsoþe ihu seyde to hem a prophet is not wiþ oute worschip: no but in his owne cuntre: & in his owne hous/ and he dide not here many vertues: for þe unbi-leue of hem//



¶ At þat tyme heroude tetrarchs þat is prynce of þe C^m 14^m
furþe parte: herde þe fame of ihu: and seyde to his children/ þis is Ion baptist/ he haþ risen fro deade: and þerfore vertues wirchen in hym/ forsoþe he-roude heelde Ioon: & bonde hym: & putte hym into prisoun: for herodias þe wife of his broþer/ for Ion seyde to hym/ it is not bileueful to þee: for to haue hir/ and he willynge to flee hym: dredde þe puple: for þei hadden hym as a prophet/ forsoþe in þe day of heroudis birþe: þe douzter of herodias lepte in þe mydil: and pleside to heroude/ wherfore wiþ an oþe he bihihte

Matheu

bihizte for to zyue to hyr: what euer þyng ſche had aride
 hym/ and ſche bifore monestide (or warnyde) of hire mod
 ſeiþ/ ziue þou to me hidir: þe heede of ion baptiſt in a diſc
 and þe kyng was ſorowful for þe oþe: and for hem þat ſat
 to gedir at þe mete: he comaundide to be zouen/ & he ſente:
 bihedide Joon in þe priſoune/ and his hede is brouzte to ir
 diſche: & it is zouen to þe wenche: & ſche bare it to hir mod
 and his diſciplis comen to: token hys body & biryeden it/ an
 þei comynge: tolden to ihū/ ¶ þe whiche þing whanne ihc h
 herde: he went fro þens in a boot into deſerte place biſidi
 and whanne þe cumpanyes of puple hadden herde: þei ſolo
 iden hym & on þere ſeete fro cytees/ and ihc goinge oute ſize
 greet multitude of puple: & hadde reuþe on hem: & heelide
 ſijk men of hem/ ſopely þe euenyng maad: his diſciplis cam
 nyz to hym ſeyinge/ þe place is deſerte: and þe houre hap no
 paſſide/ leeſe þe cumpanyes of puple: þat þei goinge into ca
 tels: bigge metis to hem/ forſoþe ihc ſeyde to hem: þei har
 not neede/ zyue zee hem for to ete/ þei anſweriden/ we har
 not here: no but ſyue looues & two fyſchis/ þe whiche ſeyþ
 hem/ brynge zee hem hidir to me/ and whanne he hadde con
 aundide þe cumpanyes for to ſitte on þe hey: ſyue looues
 two fyſchis taken: he biholdynge into heuenes: bleſſide brak
 & zæue to his diſciplis/ ſopely þe diſciplis zæuen to þe cumpe
 nyes/ and alle eten & weren fulſilde/ and þei token þe reliſe
 of broken gobitis (or metis): twelue coſyns ful/ forſoþe þ
 nowmbre of men etynge: was ſyue houſande of men: out te
 ken wymmen & litil children/ ¶ And anone ihū compellid
 (or comaundide) þe diſciplis for to go into a boot: & go bifor
 hym ouer þe ſee: til þat he leſte þe cumpanyes/ and þe cum
 panyes leſte: he ſtepyede up into an hil al one for to preye
 ſopely þe euenyng made: he was þere al one/ ſopely þe bo
 in þe mydel ſee: was þrowen wiþ watwis/ forſoþe þe wind
 was contrarie/ but in þe ſurþe wakinge of þe nyzt: he came to
 hem walkynge vpon þe ſee/ and þei ſeinge hym walkyng
 vpon

[* Sic in MS.]

Matheu

vpon þe see: weren distourblide seyinge/ for it is a fantum/ and
 for drede þei cryeden/ and anone ih̄c spak to hem: seyinge/
 haue zee triste/ I am: nyl zee drede/ tohely petre answeryng:
 seyde/ lorde zif þou art: comaunde me for to come to þee vpon
 þe watris/ and he seiþ come þou/ and petre goinge doune fro
 þe boot: walkide on þe watris for to come to ih̄u/ treuly he
 seyng a stronge wynde: was aferde/ and whanne he bigane
 for to be drenchide: he criede seyinge/ lorde make me saaf/
 and anone ih̄c holdynge forþ þe hande: cauhte hym: and seiþ
 to hym/ þou of litil seiþ: whi hast þou doutide? and whanne
 he hadde stepede vp into þe boot: þe winde ceefide/ tohely þei
 þat weren in þe boot: camen & worschippeden hym seyinge/
 verreyly þou art goddis sone/ ¶ And whanne he had passide
 ouer þe see: þei camen into þe lande of genezar/ and whanne
 men of þat place had knowen hym: þei senten into al þat cun-
 tre: & þei offreden to hym alle haupnge euyl/ and þei preyeden
 hym þat þei schulde touche ouer þe hemme of his cloþinge/
 and whoeuer toucheden: ben made saaf//



Thanne scribis & pharisees camen nyz to hym fro C^m 15^m
 ierlm̄: seyinge/ whi þi disciplis ouerpassen (or bre-
 ken) þe tradiciouns (or statutis) of eldre men? for
 þei waschen not handis: whanne þei eten breed/
 tohely he answerynge: seiþ to hem/ and whi breken zee þe
 maundement of god: for zoure tradicōn? for whi god seyde/
 honoure þi fadir & þi modir/ & he þat curseþ fadir or modir:
 die he by deþ/ but zee seyn/ who euer schal seye to fadir or
 modir: what euer zifte is of mee: it schal profite to þee/ and
 he haþ not worschipide his fadir or his modir: & zee hane
 made þe maundement of god voyde (or ydil) for zoure tradi-
 cōn/ ypocritis ysaie þe prophete propheciede wel of zou: sey-
 inge/ þis puple honoureþ me wiþ lippis: forsoþe here herte is
 far fro me/ treuely þei worschipen wiþ oute cause: techynge
 þe doctrynes and maundementis of men/ and þe cumpanyes
 of

Matheu

of puple clepide togedir to hym: he seyde to hem/ here see & vnderstonde/ not þat þing þat entriþ into þe moup defouliþ a man/ but þat þing þat cometh forþ fro þe moup defouliþ a man/ ¶ Þanne his disciplis comynge nyȝ: seyden to hym/ þou wost þat þis worde herde: pharisees ben sclaunderide/ and he answerynge seih/ euery plauntynge · whiche my fadir of heuene haþ not plauntide: schal be drawen vp bi þe root/ lustre see hem/ þei ben blynde: & leders of blynde men/ soþely ȝif a blynde man ȝife leedyng to a blynde man: boþe fallen down into þe dicke/ petre forsoþe answerynge · seyde to hym/ expounde to vs þis parable/ and he seyde/ ȝit & see ben wiþ- outen vnderstondynge/ wher see vnderstonden not · þat alle þing þat entriþ into þe moup: goiþ into þe wombe · & is sente oute into þe goinge/ but þo þingis þat comen forþ fro þe moup gone oute of þe herte/ and þo þingis: defoulen a man/ for of þe herte gone oute euyl þouȝtis · mansleingis · auoutries · for- nycacõs · pestis · false witnessis · blaspemyes/ þes þingis it ben þat defoulen a man soþely for to ete wiþ handis not was- chen: defouliþ not a man/ ¶ And ih̄c gone fro þens: wente into þe parties of tyre & sydon/ and lo a womman of canane: gon oute of þe coostis: criede seyinge to hym/ lorde þe sone of dauid haue mercy of me/ my douȝter is euyl traueylide of a deuyl/ þe whiche answeride not to hire a worde/ and his disciplis ca- men to: prepeden hym seyinge/ leue þou hire: for sche crieth aftir vs/ forsoþe he answerynge seih/ I am not sente: no but to þe scheep of þe hous of isrl̄ þat perischiden/ but sche came & worschipide hym seyinge/ lorde helpe me/ þe whiche answer- ynge: seih/ it is not for to take þe breed of sones: and sende to houndis/ and sche seyde/ ȝhe lorde for whi & litil whelpis eten of þe crummex: þat fallen doune fro þe borde of here lordis/ þanne ih̄c answerynge: seih to hire/ a þou womman: þi seih is greet/ be it done to þee as þou wolte/ and hire douȝ- ter was heelide: fro þat houre/ ¶ And whanne ih̄c had passide þens: he came biȝdis þe see of galilee/ and he slepyng into an

Matheu

an hil fatte here/ and manye cumpanyes camen nyz to hym:
 haupnge wiþ hem manye doumbe men & crokide feble &
 blynde/ and many oþer/ and þei castiden hem doune at his feet/
 and he helide hem · so þat þe cumpanyes wondriden · seinge
 doumbe men spekyng · & crokide goinge · blynde men seinge ·
 and þei magnyfieden god of isrl/ ¶ Sopely ih̄c his disciplis
 gaderide togedir: seyde I haue reuþe of þe cumpanye of ye
 puple: for nowe þe þridde daye þei dwellen stille wiþ me · &
 þei hane noþing þat þei schulden ete/ and I wole not leue hem
 fastyng: lest þei saylen in þe waye/ and þe disciplis seyn to
 hym/ þerfore wher of so manye looues to vs in desert: þat we
 fulfille so greet a cumpanye of puple/ and ih̄c seiþ to hem/ how
 many looues hane zee/ and þei seyden seuene: and a fewe
 smale fischis/ and he comaundide to þe cumpanye: þat þei
 schulden sitte to meete vpon þe erþe/ and he takynge seuene
 looues & þe fischis · & doinge þankyngis · brake & zauē to his
 disciplis: and disciplis zauen to þe puple/ and alle eten &
 weren fulfildē/ and þei token þat þat was ouer of relifes:
 seuene lepis ful/ forsoþe þei þat eten · weren foure þousande
 of men: wiþouten litil children & wymmen/ & þe cumpanye
 of puple leste: he steyzede vp into a boot · & came into þe
 coastis of magedon//



And pharisees & saduceis temptynge camen nyz to hym/ and preyeden hym for to schewe to hem a to-
 ken fro heuene/ and he answerynge: seiþ to hem/
 þe euenyng made: zee seyn it schal be cleer for þe
 heuene is lijk to reed/ and the morowe: to day tempest/ for
 heuene schyneth heuy (or sorowful)/ þerfore zee hane knowe to
 deme wisely þe face of heuene: but zee mowe not wite þe to-
 kenes of tymes/ þe euyl generacōn & auouter: sekith a token/
 and a token schal not be zouen to it: no but þe token of Jonas
 þe prophet/ and hem forsaken: he wente away/ ¶ And whanne
 þys disciplis camen ouer þe see: þei forzaten for to take looues/
 þe

C^m 16^m

Matheu

he whiche seyde to hem/ biholde zee & bewar : of þe soudre
 of pharisees & saduceis/ and þei houzten amonge hem : & t
 inge/ for we hane not taken looues/ forsoþe ih̄c witynge : sey
 to hem/ what þenken zee amonge zou of litil fesh : for zee ha
 not looues ¶/ zit zee vnderstanden not neþer hane mynde
 fyue looues into fyue housande of men & how manye cofyns
 tooken/ treuly neþer of seuene looues to foure housande of me
 and how many of leepis zee tooken/ why vnderstonde zee ne
 for I seyde not to zou of breed ¶/ be zee war of þe soudre w
 pharisees & of saducees/ þanne þei vnderstoden : þat he sey
 not to be war of soudre w of looues : but of þe techynge of ph
 risees & saducees/ ¶ Sopheþ ih̄c came into þe parties of cesar
 of philip : and axide his disciplis : seyinge/ whom seyn men
 be mannes sone ¶/ and þei seyden/ summe Jon baptist : oþ
 seyden helie : but oþer Jeremye : or one of þe prophetis/ ¶ I
 seih to hem/ sopheþ whom seyn zee me to be ¶/ Symount pet
 answerynge : seyde/ þou art c̄st þe sone of god luyng/ fo
 soþe ih̄c answeryng : seyde to hym/ bleside art þou Symoun
 bariona (þat is sone of culuer) for flesche & blood schewide ne
 to þee : but my fadir þat is in heuenes/ and I seye to þee fo
 þou art petre : and vpon þis stoon I schal bilde my chirche/ an
 þe zates of helle schulen not haue myzte (or strenghe) azene
 it/ and to þee I schal zpyue þe keyes of þe kyngdom of heuenes
 and what euer þou schalt bynde vpon erþe : schall be bounde
 in heuenes/ and whateuer þou schalt vnbynde vpon erþe
 schal be vnbounden & in heuenes/ þanne he comaundide to hy
 disciplis þat þei schulden seye to no man : þat he was crist/ fro
 þat time ih̄c bigane for to schewe to his disciplis : þat it bi
 houeþ hym go to ierlām : & suffre many þingis of þe eldris & o
 scribis & prynces of pristis : and be slayne : & þe þridday ris
 azen/ and petre takynge hym to : bigan for to blame hym : sey
 inge/ fer be it fro þee lord : þis þyng schal not be to þee/ þ
 whiche turnyde : seyinge to petre/ go astir me sathanas/ þou
 art sclaunder to me/ for þou sauerist not (or vnderstondest) þe
 þingis

Matheu

þingis þat ben of god: but þo þingis þat ben of men/ ¶ þanne
ihc seyde to his disciplis/ zif any wole come aftir me: denye
he hym self & take his crosse & sue me/ for he þat wole make
his soule saaf (þat is his lijf) schal leese it/ forsoþe he þat
schal leese his soule (þat is his lijf) for me: schal fynde it/
soþely what profitiþ it to a man · zif he wyne al þe worlde:
treuly he suffre peyrynge of his soule/ or what chaungynge
schal a man ȝyue for his soule/ for mannes sone is to come in
glorie of his fadir wiþ his aungels: and þanne he schal ȝilde
to euery man aftir his werkis/ treuely I seye to ȝou · þere ben
summe (of men) stondynge heere: þe whiche schulen not taste
deþ til þei seen mannes sone comynge in his kyngdom//



And aftir sire dayes · Jhc took & James & Jon his C^m 17^m
broþer · and ledde hem asidis into an hize hil · & was
transfiguride (or turnyde into an oþer licknesse) be-
fore hem/ and his face schone as þe sunne: forsoþe
his cloyes weren made white as snowe/ and lo moysē & helie
appereden to hem: spekyng wiþ hym/ soþely petre answer-
ynge: seyde to ihu/ lordē it is good: vs to be heere/ zif þou
wolte: make we heere þre tabernaclis/ to þee one · to moyses
one · and one to helie/ ȝit hym spekyngē: lo a lizty cloude:
schadowide hem/ and lo a voyce of þe cloude seyinge/ þis is
my derworþe sone · in whom I hane wel pleside to me: here
ȝee hym/ and þe disciplis heryng: sellen downe into here facis ·
and dreden gretely/ and ihc came nyȝ & touchide hem: & seyde
to hem/ rise vp: nyl ȝee drede/ forsoþe þei rylinge vp · here
ȝzen sizen no man: no but ihc alone/ and hem comyn e doune
fro þe mounteyne: Jhc comaundide to hem seyinge/ seȝ ȝe to
no man þe vñiounē: til mannes sone rise aȝen fro deade// And
his disciplis axeden hym seyinge/ what þerfore seȝn scribis:
þat it bihoueh helpe firste to come/ and he answerynge seiþ to
hem/ forsoþe helie is to come: and he schal restore alle þingis/
treuely I seye to ȝou · þat helie is nowē comen · & þei knetwen

Matheu

hym not: but þei diden in hym what euer þing þei wolden/
and so mannes sone is to suffer of hem/ þanne þe disciplis vn-
derstoden: þat of Jon baptist he had seyde to hem/ ¶ And
whanne he came to þe cumpanye of puple: a man came to hym
foldide on knees bifore hym · seyinge lorde haue mercy on my
sone · for he is lunatik · & suffriþ euyl/ for why ofte tymes he
falliþ into fir: and ofte tymes into water/ and I offride hym
to þi disciplis: and þei myzten not heele hym/ Ihesu answerge
seif/ a þou generacōn vnbeleueful (or oute of seif) & wep-
warde: how longe schal I be wiþ þou · how longe schal I suf-
fre þou? brynge zee hym hider to me/ and ihc blameþe hem:
and þe deuyl wente oute fro hym/ and þe childe is heelde fro
þat houre/ þanne þe disciplis camen nyȝ to ihu pryueli: and
seyden to hym/ whi myzten not we casten hym oute? Ihesu seif
to hem/ for þoure vnbeleue/ trewely I seye to þou · zif zee
schulen haue seif as a corne of seneueþ: zee schulen seye to þis
hil · passe þou hens: and it schal passe/ and no þing schal be
impossible to þou/ forsoþe þis kinde is not caste oute: no but
by preyng & fastyng/ ¶ trewely hem luyng togedir in
galilee: Ihesu seyde to hem/ mannes sone is to be bitrayede into
þe handis of men · & þei schulen flee hym: and þe þridde day
he schal rise azen/ and þei ben made ful sorp// ¶ And whanne
he came to capharnaum · þei þat token tribute camen to petre ·
& seyden to hym/ þoure mayster: payeþ he not tribute? and he
seif/ zhe/ and whanne he had entride into an hous: ihc came
bifore hym · seyinge/ Symount: what semeth to þee? of whiche
takeþ þe kyngis of erþe tribute (or rente)? of here owne sones:
or of aliens? and he seyde/ of aliens/ Ihesu seyde to hym/ þer-
fore sones ben free/ forsoþe þat we sclaunder not hem: go þou
to þe see · and sende an booc · & take þe ilke fische þat firste
comeþ up/ and his mounþ openyde: þou schalt fynde a statere
(þat is a certayne of money/) þou takyng it: ȝyue to hem for
me & for þee//

In

Matheu

In þat houre þe disciplis camen nyȝ to ih̄c: seyinge/ C^m 18^m
 who gessist þou is more in þe kyngdom of heuenes/ and ih̄c clepyng to a litil childe: putte hym in þe myddil of hem · & seyde/ I seye treuþe to ȝou · no but ȝif ȝee schulen be turnyde & made as litil children: ȝee schulen not entre into þe kyngdom of heuenes/ þerfore who euer mekiþ hym as þis litil childe: he is more in the kyngdome of heuenes/ and he þat receyueþ one suche litil in my name: receyueþ me/ forsoþe who schal sclaundre one of þes lette smale þat bileuen in me: it spedih to hym þat a mylnestone of assis · be hangide in his necke: and he drenchide into þe depnesse of þe see/ wo to þe worlde for sclaunderis/ treuly it is nede: þat sclaunderis comen/ neþeles wo to þe ilke man: by whom sclaundre comen/ forsoþe ȝif þin hande or þi foot sclaunderiþ þee: kitte it of & caste away fro þee/ it is good to þee to entre into lijf feble or crokide: þanne hauynge two handes or two feet · to be sente into euerlastynge fjr/ and ȝif þin eyȝe sclaunderiþ þee: pulle it oute & caste away fro þee/ it is good to þee wiþ one eyȝe to entre into lijf: þan hauynge two eyȝen to be sente into þe fjr of helle/ se ȝee þat ȝee dispise not one of þes litil/ treuly I seye to ȝou þat þe aungels of hem in heuenes: seen euermore þe face of my fadir þat is in heuenes/ forsoþe mannes sone came for to saue þat þing þat perischide/ ¶ What seemen to ȝou · ȝif þere weren to summan an hundride scheep: and one of hem schal erre: wher he schal not leese nynty & nyne in deserte · & schal go for to seek þat þat erride: and ȝif it bifalle þat he fynde it: treuly I seye to ȝou · for he schal ioye þeron: more þan on nynty & nyne þat erred: en not/ so it is not wille bifore ȝoure fadir þat is in heuenes: þat one of þes litil perische/ ¶ Forsoþe ȝif þi broþer schal synne in þee: go þou & reprove hym (or snybbe) bitwixe þee & hym alone/ ȝif he schal her: þou hast wonne þi broþer/ treuly ȝif he schal not heere þee: take to wiþ þee one or two þat euery worde

Matheu

worde stonde in þe mounþ of two or þre witneſſis/ þat zif
ſchal not heere hem: ſeye þou to þe chirche/ forſoþe zif he ſch
not heere þe chirche: be he to þee as an heþen man and pup
can/ I ſeye to zou treuely: what euer þingis zee ſchulen byn
vpon erþe: þo ſchulen be bounden & in heuenes/ and wh
euer þingis zee ſchulen vnbynde vpon erþe: þo ſchulen be v
bounden & in heuenes/ eftelone I ſeye to zou: þat zif two
zou ſchulen conſente on erþe of euery þing whateuer þei ſch
len are: it ſchal be done to hem: of my ſadir þat is in heuene
for where two or þre ſchulen be gederide in my name: þer
am in þe mydel of hem/ ¶ þanne petre comynge nyȝ to hym
ſeyde/ lorde how ofte ſchal my broþer ſynne in me: and I ſch
forȝyue hym? wheþer to ſeuene tymes? ihc ſeiþ to hym/
ſeye not to þee til ſeuene ſipes: but til ſeuenty ſipe ſeu
ſipes/ þerfore þe kyngdom of heuenes is lickenyde to a ma
kyng: þat wolde putte reſoune wiþ his ſeruauntis/ and wh
he bigan for to putte reſoune: one was offride to hym ten þo
ſande of beſauntis (or talentis)/ treuely whanne he had
not wherof to zilde: his lorde comaundide hym to be ſolde
his wiſe & ſones: & alle þingis þat he had: and to be payed
forſoþe þe ilke ſeruaunt ſallynge doune preyede hym ſeying
haue pacience in me: and alle þingis I ſchal zilde to þe
ſoþely þe lorde hauynge mercy of þat ſeruaunt: leet hym (
ſuffride) & forȝaue to hym þe dette/ treuely þe ilke ſerua
gon oute: ſonde one of his euen ſeruauntis: þat auzte hym
hundride pens/ and he holdynge hym: ſtranglede hym ſeying
zilde þat þat þou owiſt/ and his euen ſeruaunt: preyede hy
ſeyinge/ haue pacience in me: and alle þingis I ſchal quy
to þee/ forſoþe he wolde not: but wente & ſente hym into pi
ſoune: til þat he payede al þe dette/ ſoþely his euen ſeruaunt
ſeinge þo þingis þat weren done: gretely hadde ſorowe/ & þ
camen & tolden to here lorde: alle þingis þat weren don
þanne his lorde clepide hym: and ſeyde to hym/ weȝwar
ſeruaunt: I forȝaue to þee al þe dette: for þou preyedeſt m
þerfo

Matheu

herfore wher it bihouede not & pee to hane mercy on thin euen
seruaunt: as & I hadde mercy on pee: and hys lorde wrope:
toke hym to turmentours: til he payede al þe dette/ so & my
fadir of heuene schal do to zou: zif zee forzpuen not euery
man to his broþer: of zoure hertis//



And it is done whanne ihc had endide þes wordes • C^m 19^m
he passide fro galilee • & came into þe endis of Jude
ouer Jordan/and manye cumpanyes (of men) sue-
den hym: and he helide hem here/ and pharisees
camen nyz to hym temptynge hym & seyinge/ wher it be
leueful to a man for to leue (or forsake) his wife: of whateuer
cause: þe which answerynge: seih to hem/ hane zee not redde:
for he þat made men at the bygynnyng: male & female he
made hem: and he seyde/ for þis þing a manschal leue fadir &
modir • & he schal cleue (or draue) to his wif: & þei schulen
be two in one fleysche/ and so þei ben not now two: but one
fleysche/ herfore a man departe not þat þing þat god enioynede
(or knytte togedir/) þei seyn to hym/ what þanne comaundide
moyses: to zyue a litil booc of forsakynge: and to leue of: and
he seih to hem/ for moyses: at þe hardenesse of zoure hertis:
suffride zou forsake zoure wijfes/ forsoþe at þe bygynnyng
it was not so/ treuely I seye to zou • þat who euer leueþ his
wif • no but for fornycacōn • & weddiþ anoper: doih auoutrie/
and he þat weddiþ þe forsaken (wif): doih auoutrie/ his disci-
plis seyn to hym/ zif þe cause of a man wif a wife is so: it
spediþ not to wedde/ þe whiche seih to hem/ not alle men taken
þis worde: but to whom it is zouen/ soþely þer ben geldyngis:
þe whiche ben þus borne of þe modris wombe/ & þere ben
geldyngis: þat ben made of men/ and þere ben geldyngis:
þat hane geldyde þem self: for þe kyngdom of heuenes/ he
þat may take: take he/ ¶ þanne litil children weren offride
vp to hym þat he schulde putte handis to hem & preye/ soþely
his disciplis blameden hem/ but ihc seih to hem/ suffriþ litil
children

Matheu

children come to me: and nyl zee forbede hem for to come
 me/ for of suche is þe kyngdom of heuenes/ and whanne
 had putte to hem handis: he wente þens/ and lo one comy
 to: seip to hym/ gode mayster what of good þing schal I
 þat I haue euerlastyng lijf/ þe whiche seip to hym/ wht^a a
 þou me of gode þing/ þer is one gode god/ for zif þou w
 entre into lijf: kepe þe comaundementis/ he seip to hy
 whiche/ trewely ihc seyde/ þou schalt not do mansleinge · I
 schalt [not] do auoutrie · þou schalt not do þeft · þou sch
 not seye false witnessyng/ worschip þi fadir & þi modir: a
 þou schalt loue þi neyzebore as þi self/ þe zonge man seip
 hym/ I haue kepte alle þes þingis fro my zouþe/ what
 sayleth to me/ ihc seip to hym/ zif þou wolte be parfite: ge
 felle alle þingis þat þou hast · & zyeue to poore men · & þ
 schalt haue tresoure in heuene: & come · & sue þou me/ forso
 whanne þe zonge man had herde þes wordis: he wente aw
 sorowful · for he was haupnge many possessionis/ forsoþe i
 seyde to his disciplis/ I seye to zou treuþe · for a richeman
 harde schal entre into þe kyngdom of heuenes/ and eftesone
 seye to zou/ it is lizter (or esier) a camel for to passe þour
 an eedelis yze · þan a richeman to entre into þe kyngdom
 heuenes/ trewely þes wordis herde: þe disciplis wondrid
 gretely seyinge/ who þerfore may be saaf/ forsoþe ihc bihol
 ynge: seyde to hem/ anentis men þis þing is impossible: b
 anentis god alle þingis ben possible/ þanne petre answeryng
 seyde to hym/ lo we forsaken alle þingis & suen þee: wh
 þerfore schal be to vs/ ihc forsoþe seyde to hem/ treuely I se
 to zou · þat zee þat hane forsake alle þingis & suen me: in r
 generacō (or genderynge azen) whan mannes sone sch
 sitte in þe seet of his mageste: and zee schulen sitte on twel
 seetis · demynge þe twelue kynredis of isrl/ and euery ma
 þat schal forsake hous or breþeren or sistren · or fadir or modi
 or wiif or sones · or feeldis · for my name · he schal take a
 hundridfold: & schal welde euerlastyng lijf/ forsoþe man
 firste schulen be laste: and þe laste þe firste//

Matheu



The kyngdom of heuenes is lijk to an housbonde C^m 20^m
 man: pat wente oute firste erly (or by þe morowe)
 to hire werkemen into his vynezerde/ forsoþe þe
 couenaunt made wiþ werkemen · of a peny for þe
 day: he sente hem into his vynezerde/ and he gone oute aboute
 þe þridde houre: sise oþer stondynge ydil in þe chepyng/ and
 he seyde to hem/ go & zee into my vynezerde: and þat þat schal
 be riztful · I schal zyue to zou/ toþely þei wenten forþ/ for-
 soþe estefones he wente oute · aboute þe sirte houre & þe
 nyne: and dide on liche maner/ but aboute þe elleueneþ
 houre he wente oute · & sonde oþer stondynge & he seyde to
 hem/ what stonden zee heere ydil al day? þei seyn to hym/ for
 no man haþ hijride vs/ he seih to hem/ go zee into my vyne-
 zerde/ forsoþe whanne euenynge was made: þe lorde of þe
 vynezerde seih to his procuratour/ clepe þe werkemen: zilde
 to hem here hire: bigynnyng at þe laste: til to þe firste/ þer-
 fore whanne þei weren comen þat camen aboute þe elleueneþ
 houre: and þei token synguler pens (þat is eueryman a peny) ·
 treuely & þe firste comynge: demeden þat þei weren to take
 more/ treuly & þei token echone · by hymself a peny/ and
 þei takynge grucchiden azen þe housbondemen: sepyng/ þes
 laste diden (worche) one houre: and þou hast made hem euene
 to vs · þat hane borne þe charge of þe day & þe heete: and
 he answerynge to one of hem: seyde/ frende: I do þee no
 wronge/ wheþer þou haste not acordide wiþ me for a peny/ I
 take þat þing þat is þin: and go/ forsoþe I wole zyue & to
 þis laste (man): as & to þee/ wher it is not leueful to me · for
 to do þat þat I wole: wheþer þin yze is wickide for I am
 good: to þer schulen be þe laste men firste: and þe firste men
 laste/ for manye ben clepide: but fewe ben chosen/ ¶ And ihc
 stepzinge vp to ierlm · toke his twelue disciplis in pryuate · &
 seih to hem/ lo we gone vp to ierlm & mannes sone schal be bi-
 taken to þe prynces of pristis & scribis · & þei schulen con-
dempne

Matheu

dempne hym to deþ/ and þei schulen bitake hym to heþ
men/ for to be scornþde & scourgide & crucifiede/ and þe þri
day he schal rise azen/ þanne þe modir of þe sones of zebede
came nyȝ to hym wiþ hire sones honourþnge & aringe t
þing of hym/ þe whiche seyde to hire/ what wolte þou/ t
seih to hym/ seye þat þes two my sones sitten/ one at þi r
halfe & one at þi listehalfe in þi kyngdom/ forsoþe ih̄c answ
þnge/ seyde/ zee witen not what zee aren (or schulen ar
may zee drynke þe cuppe/ þat I am to drynke/ þei seyn
hym/ we motwne/ he seih to hem/ forsoþe zee schulen dryn
my cuppe/ but to sitte at þe rizthalse · or listehalfe is not m
to ȝyue to ȝou/ but to whom it is made reedy of my fadir/ a
þe ten herþnge/ haddē indignacōn of þe two breþeren/ soþ
ih̄c clepide hem to hym/ and seih/ zee witen for prynces
heþen men be lordes of hem/ and þei þat ben more haun
power into hem/ it schal not be so amonge ȝou/ but who er
wole be made more amonge ȝou/ be he ȝoure mynystre/ a
who euer amonge ȝou wole be firste/ he schal be ȝoure s
uaunt/ as mannes sone came not for to be seruyde · but for
serue · & for to ȝyue his soule (or lijf) redempciōn for many
and hem goinge oute of Jericho/ manye cumpanyes of pu
sueden hym/ and lo two blynde men sittþnge biȝidis þe wo
herden þat ih̄c passide/ and þei crieden seyþnge/ lorde þe so
of dauid/ haue mercy of vs/ forsoþe þe cumpanye blamy
hem for to be stille/ and þei crieden more & more/ seyþng
lorde þe sone of dauid/ haue mercy of vs/ and ih̄c stode & c
pide hem/ & seih/ what wolen zee þat I do to ȝou/ þei seyn
hym/ lorde þat oure ȝzen ben openyde/ forsoþe ih̄c haupn
mercy on hem/ touchide here ȝzen/ and anone þei siȝen & si
den hym//

Matheu

And whanne ihc came nyz to irlm · and came to C^m 21^m
 bethfage · to þe mount of oliuete · þanne ihc sente
 his two disciplis · seyinge to hem/ go zee into þe
 castel þ̄ is azenes zou · anone zee schulen fynde a
 sche asse tiede · & a colte wip hire/ vnbynde zee · and brynge to
 me/ and zif any man schal seye to zou any þing · seye zee þat
 þe lorde haþ nede to hem · & anone he schal leue hem/ treuely
 al þis was done · þat þat þing · þat was seyde by þe prophete ·
 schulde be fulfild · seyinge/ seye zee to þe douzter of sion · lo
 þi kyng cometh to þee homely (or mekely) sittynge on an asse &
 a fool · (the sone of a beest vnder zok) forsoþe disciplis goinge ·
 diden as ihc comaundide hem/ and þei brouzten to a sche asse
 & þe fool · & puttiden here cloþes on hem · & maden hym sitte
 aboue/ forsoþe ful myche cumpanye · strewide here cloþes in
 þe wey/ soþely oþer kuttiden braunchis of trees · & strewiden
 in þe weye/ but þe cumpanyes þat wenten bifore & þat sueden ·
 crieden seyinge/ Osanna (þat is I preye saue) · to þe sone of
 dauid · blestide is he þat cometh in name of þe lorde · osanna
 in hizest (þingis)/ ¶ And whanne he had entride into irlm ·
 al þe cytee was stirede · seyinge/ who is þis · treuely þe puplis
 seyden/ þis is ihc þe prophete of nazereth of galilee/ and ihc
 entride into þe temple of god · and caste oute of þe temple · alle
 sellynge & byinge · & he turnyde vpsodoune þe bordes of þe
 chaungers · and þe chapers of men sellynge culuers and he
 seih to hem/ it is writen/ myn hous schal be clepide an hous of
 preyer · forsoþe zee hane made it a denne of þeeues/ and blynde
 & crokyde camen nyz to hym in þe temple · and he helide hem/
 forsoþe þe prynces of pristin and scribis · seinge þe meruey-
 lous þingis þat he dide · & children cryinge in temple · & seyinge
 osanna to þe sone of dauid · dedeyneden & seyden to hym/
 herest þou what þes seyn · soþely ihc seih to hem/ zhe/ wher
 zee hane not redde · for of þe mouþ of children (þat kunnen not
 speec) or of soukyngge mylke · þou hast made parfite herynge/

Matheu

and hem forsaken: he wente forþ oute of þe cytee into be-
 ane/ and here he dwellyde: and tauzte hem of þe kyngdom
 god/ ¶ Forsoþe on þe morowe he turnynge azen into þe cyty
 hungride/ and he seinge a sijge tree bifidis þe weye: came
 it/ and fonde no þing þer inne: no but leeuys onely/ and he si-
 to it/ neuer he fruyte borne of þee: into wiþ outen/ and ano-
 þe sijge tree was driede vp/ and þe disciplis seinge: we
 driden seyinge/ how anone driede it? soþely ihc answeryng
 seih to hem/ treuely I seye to zou: zif zee schulen haue seih
 a corne of seneuey & doute not: not onely zee schulen do of
 sijge tree: but & zif zee seyn to his hil: take þee & caste þee in
 þe see: and so it schal be done/ and alle þingis what euer z
 schulen are in preper bileuynge: zee schulen take/ and whan
 he came into þe temple þe prynces of pristis & eldremen of
 puple camen nyz to hym techynge: seyinge/ in what pow-
 doist þou þes þingis: and who zawe to þee þis power? ihc a-
 swerynge seyde to hem/ and I schal are zou aworde:
 whiche zif zee schulen seye to me: and I schal seye to zou
 what power I do þes þingis/ of whens was þe bapty-
 Joon: of heuene or of men? & þei þouzten wiþine hem sel-
 seyinge/ zif we schulen seye of heuene: he schal seye to u
 whi þerfore bileue zee not to hym? soþely zif we schulen
 men: we dreden þe cumpanye of puple: for alle hadden Joo-
 as a prophet/ and þei answerynge to ihu: seyden/ we wite
 not/ and he seih to hem/ neþer I seye to zou: in what power
 do þes þingis/ forsoþe what seemeh to zou? summan had
 two sones/ and he comynge nyz to þe firste: seyde/ sone: go
 to wirche þis day: into my vynezerde/ soþely he answeryng
 seih/ I nyl/ forsoþe astirwarde he stiredde by penaunce (or so
 þynkinge): wente/ forsoþe he comynge to þe toher: seyde
 liche maner/ and he answerynge: seih/ lorde I go/ and
 wente not/ who of þe two: dide þe faderis wille? þei seyn
 hym/ þe firste/ Jhc seih to hem treuely: I seye to zou: for pu-
 licans & hooris schulen go bifore zou: into þe kyngdom of go-
 forsoþe

Matheu

C^m 22^m



And ihc antwerynge: seyde estefones in parablis to
hem • seyinge/ he kyngdom of heuenes is made lijk
to a man kyng • hat made weddyngis to his sone
and he sente his seruauntis for to clepe men biden
to he weddyngis: and hei wolden not come/ estefone he sent
oher seruauntis seyinge/ seye zee to he men beden to he feest • I
I haue made reedy my mete/ my boolis & volatilis ben slayne
and alle pingis reedy: come zee to he weddyngis/ sohely he
despiseden (or recken not) and hei wenten away • one into hi
vynezerde: forsohe anoyer to his marchaundise/ but he ohe
helden his seruauntis & slewen hem: punyschide wiþ contek
forsohe he kyng whanne he hadde herde: was wrohe/ and hi
ooste sente: he losse (or distrupede) he manquellers and brent
here cytee/ þanne he seih to his seruauntis/ sohely he weddyngis
ben reedy: but hei þat weren clepide to he feest • weren not wor
þi/ þerfore go zee to he oute goinge of weyes • & whom euer ze
schulen fynde: clepiþ to he weddyngis/ and his seruauntis gon
into he weyes • gederiden to gedir alle þat hei founden: good
euyl/ and he weddyngis of men sittynge at he mete: ben fulfild
forsohe he kyng entride þat he schulen se men sittynge at he
mete: and he siþe þer a man not cloþide wiþ bride cloþes/ and
he seih to hym/ frende how entredist þou hidir • not hauping
bride cloþes/ and he was dumble/ þanne he kyng seide to þe
mynystris/ his handes and feete bounden • sende zee hym into
he vttermore dirkenesses/ þere schal be wepyng: & betynge to
gedir of teeh/ forsohe many ben clepide: but fewe chosen/ þanne
pharisees goinge aweye token counseyl: þat hei schulden tak
ihū in worde/ and hei senten to hym here disciplis wiþ herod
dians • (þat ben men of heroudis): seyinge/ mayster we witen
þat þou art soþefast & þou techist • in treuþe he weye of god
and þere is no cure (or charge) to þee of any man/ for þou bi
holdist not to he persone of men/ þerfore seye to vs: wheþer it
seemeth to þee • is it leueful to zyue to cesar (or emperour) tri
but

Matheu

bute (or rente) forsoþe þe wickidnesse of hem knowen: ih̄c seiþ/
ypocritis what tempten zee me? schewe zee to me þe prynte
of þe money/ and þei offreden (or token) to hym a peny/ and
ih̄c seiþ to hem/ whos is þis ymage: and þe wrytyng aboue?
þei seyn to hym/ of cesar/ þanne he seiþ/ þerfore zilde zee to
cesar þo þingis þat ben of cesar: and to god þo þingis þat ben of
god// ¶ And þei herynge wondriden/ & hym leste: þei wenten
awey/ in þat day saduceys þat seyn þer is no risynge azen:
camen nyȝt to hym & ariden hym seying/ mayster moyses seyde/
zif any man be deade not haupnge a sone: þat his broþer wedde
his wiif & reyle seede to his broþer/ forsoþe seuene breþeren
weren at vs/ and þe firste a wiif weddide: is deade/ and he not
haupnge seed: leste his wiif to his broþer/ also þe secunde & þe
þridde: til þe seuene/ forsoþe þe laste of alle: and þe womman
is deade/ þerfore in þe risynge azen: whos wife of þe seuene
schal sche be: for alle hadden hire/ soþely ih̄c answerynge seiþ
to hem/ zee erren · neþer knowynge þe scriptures: neþer þe
vertue of god/ forsoþe in þe risynge azen neþer þei wedden
neþer ben weddide: but þei ben as aungels of god in heuene/
soþely of þe risynge azen of deade men zee hane not redde: þat
it is seyde of þe lorde: seyinge to zou/ I am god of abraham &
god of ysaac: and god of iacob/ he is not god of deade men: but
of lyuynge men/ and þe cumpanyes of puple herynge: won-
driden in his techyng/ forsoþe pharisees herynge þat he had
putte silence to saducees: camen to gedit into one/ and one of
hem a techer of þe lawe: axide ih̄c temptynge hym/ mayster:
whiche is a greet maundemente in þe lawe? ih̄c seiþ to hym/
þou schalt loue þe lorde þi god of al þin herte: & in alle þi soule:
& in al þi mynde/ þis is þe firste and þe moste maundement/
forsoþe þe secounde is lijk to þis/ þou schalt loue þi neȝebore
as þi selfe/ in þes two maundementis: hangih al þe lawe &
prophetis/ soþely þe pharisees gederide togedit: ih̄c axide hem
seyinge/ what seemeh it to zou of ȝit? whos sone is he/ þei seyn
to hym of dauid/ he seiþ to hem/ þerfore how in spirit clepih
dauid

Matheu

daupd hym lorde: seyinge/ he lord seyde to my lorde · sitte on my rizthalse: til þat I putte þin enemyes a stool of þi feet/ þerfore zif daupd clepiþ hym lorde: how is he his sone? and no man myzte answere a worde to hym: neþer any man was hardy fro þat day · for to are hym more//

C^m 23^m



Whanne ihc spak to þe cumpanyes of puple · & to his disciplis: seyinge/ vpon þe chayre of moyses: scribis & pharisees saten (redynge þe lawe)/ þerfore kepe zee & do zee · alle þingis whateuer þingis þei schulen seye to zou: but nyl zee do astir here werkis/ soþely þei seyn & done not/ soþely þei bynden to greuous chargis & vnportable & þat mowne not be borne and putten into schulders of men: but wiþ here spnger þei wolen not moue hem/ þerfore þei done alle here werkis þat þei be seen of men/ forsoþe þei a- largen here filateries (þat ben smale scrowis): and magnyflen here hemmes/ soþely þei louen þe firste sittynge places in so- pers · & þe firste chapers in synagogis: and salutacons in þe cheppynge · & to be clepide of men maystris/ soþely nyl zee be clepide maystris: for one is zoure mayster/ forsoþe alle zee ben breþeren/ and nyl zee clepe to zou fadir on erþe: for one is zoure fadir þat is in heuenes/ neþer be zee clepide maystris: for one is zoure mayster cñ/ he þat is more of zou: schal be zoure mynyster/ forsoþe he þat schal hize hym self: schal be mekide/ and he þat schal meke hym self: schal be enhaunside/ soþely wo to zou scribis & pharisees ypocritis: for zee closen þe kyngdom of heuenes bifore men/ soþely zee entren not: ne lustre men entrynge for to entre/ ¶ Wo to zou scribis & pha- risees ypocritis · þat eten þe houses of widowis: in longe preyer prepyng/ for þis þing zee schulen take þe more doom/ ¶ Wo to zou scribis & pharisees ypocritis · þat cumpassen þe see & þe lande: þat zee make one profelite (þat is a conuertide to zour ordre)/ and whanne he schal be made: zee maken hym a sone of helle: double more þan zou/ ¶ Wo to zou blynde

Matheu

blynde leders hat seyn * who euer schal swere by þe temple of
 god: no þing is/ soþely he þat schal swere in þe golde of þe
 temple: oþer (or is dettoure) to paye it/ zee foolis & blynde/
 forsoþe what is more þe golde or þe temple: þat halowþ þe
 golde: and who euer schal swer in þe auter: no þing is/ but
 he þat schal swere in þe zifte þat is on þe auter: oþer it/
 blynde men/ forsoþe what is more þe zifte: or þe auter: þat
 halowþ þe zifte: forsoþe he þat swerþ in þe auter: swerþ
 in it: and in alle þingis þat ben þeron/ and he þat swerþ in
 þe temple: swerþ in it: & in hym þat dwellþ in þe temple/
 and he þat swerþ in heuene: swerþ in þe trone of god: & in
 hym þat sittþ þer on/ ¶ Mo to zou scribis & pharisees ypoc-
 ritis: þat tihen myntte & annet & comyn: and hane leste þo
 þingis þat ben greuouser (or of more charge) of þe lawe: (as)
 doom & mercy & feiþ/ and þes þingis it behouede (or needide)
 for to do: & not to leue hem/ blynde leders: clensynge a
 knatte: but swolowynge a camel/ ¶ Mo to zou scribis &
 pharisees ypocrites þat maken clene þat þing of þe cuppe &
 of þe plater þat is wiþ outhen forþ: forsoþe wiþinne þei ben
 ful of raueyne & vnclennesse/ þou blynde pharisee: clense firste
 þat þing of þe cuppe & plater: þat is wiþine forþ: þat & þat
 þing þat is wiþ outhen forþ: he made clene/ ¶ Mo to zou
 scribis & pharisees ypocritis: þat ben lijk to sepulchris made
 whijt/ þe whiche wiþ outhen forþ seemen sayre to men: soþely
 wiþinne: þei ben ful of boones of deade men & al filþe/ so &
 zee forsoþe wiþ outhen forþ apperen iuste to men: but wiþinne
 zee ben ful of ypocrisie & wickednesse/ ¶ Mo to zou scribis &
 pharisees ypocritis: þat bilden sepulchris of prophetis: and
 maken sayre þe biriels of iuste men: & seyn/ zif we hadden ben
 in þe dayes of oure faderis: we schulden not haue ben here
 felowis in þe blood of prophetis/ and so zee ben in witnessynge
 to zoure self: for ze ben þe sones of hem þat slouen þe pro-
 phetis/ and zee fulfillen þe mesure of zoure faderis/ zee ser-
 pentis scryptis or bursounyngis of eddris (þat sleen here mo-
deris

Matheu

deris): how schulen zee flee fro þe dome of helle: þerfore
sende to zou prophetis & wysemen & scribis (or writers)/ an
of hem zee schulen flee & crucifie: & of hem zee schulen been
in zoure synagogis: & zee schulen pursue fro cytee into cytee
þat al þe iuste blode come vpon you: þat was sched on þe
erþe: fro þe blood of iuste abel: til þe blood of zacharie þe son
of barachie: whom zee slouen bitwixe þe temple & þe auter
treuely I seye to zou: alle þes þinges schulen come on þi
generacōn/ Irlm irlm þat sleest prophetis: and stonest her
þat ben sente to þee/ how ofte wolde I gader to gedir þi sones
as a henne gaderiþ to gedir hir chykyngs vnder hir wengis: an
þou woldist not/ lo zoure hous schal be leste to zou deserte (o
forsaken) forsoþe I seye to zou zee schulen not see me fr
hens forþ: til þat zee seyn/ blesside (is) he þat comiþ in þe
name of þe lorde//

C^m 24^m



And ihc gone oute of þe temple: wente/ and his dis
ciplis camen nyȝ to hym: þat þei schulden schew
to hym þe bilyngis of þe temple/ forsoþe he an
swerpng: seiþ to hem: se zee alle þes þinges
treuely I seye to zou/ a soon schal not be leste heere on
soon: þe whiche schal not be distrupede/ soþely hym sittng
on þe hil of olyuete: þe disciplis camen nyȝ to hym: prpuely
seyinge seye to vs whanne þes þinges schulen be: and wha
token of þi comynge & of endynge of þe worlde /and ihc an
swerpng: seyde to hem/ se zee þat no man decepue zou/ man
schulen come in my name seyinge: I am crist/ and þei schulen
decepue manye/ soþely zee ben to heere battaylis: & opynpoun
of bataylis/ se zee þat zee be not distourblide/ forsoþe it bi
houep þes þinges for to be done: but not zit is þe ende/ fol
schulen rise azenes solc: & rewme into rewme: and pestilence
& hungrys & erþe moupngis schulen be by places/ forsoþe all
þes þinges: ben bigynnyngis of sorowis/ þanne þei schulen
bitake zou into tribulacōns: & þei schulen flee zou & zee schulen

Matheu

be in haate to alle folkis for my name/ and panne many
schulen be schlaunderide & to gedir bitraye (eche oher): and in
hate haue to gedir/ and many false prophetis schulen rise: and
deceyue many/ and for wickidnesse schal be plenteuous: he
charite of manye schal ware colde/ forsoþe he þat schal dwelle
stable vnto þe ende: he þis schal be saaf/ and þis gospel of
kyngdom/ schal be prechide in al þe worlde: into witnessynge
to alle folkis: and panne þe ende schal come/ þerfore whanne
zee schulen se þe abhomynacōn of discoumforþ þat is seyde
of daniel þe prophet: stondynge in holy place: he þat reedis
vndirsonde/ panne þei þat ben in Judee: flee þei to moun-
teynes/ and he þat (is) in þe hous roof: come he not doune to
take any þing of his hous/ and he þat is in þe feelde: turne not
azen to take his coote/ forsoþe wo to wymmen wiþ childe &
norischyng: in þo dayes/ forsoþe preye zee þat zoure fleinge:
be not made in wynter or in saboth/ forsoþe panne schal be greet
tribulacōn: what maner was not fro þe begynnynge of þe
worlde til now: neþer schal be made/ and no but zif þe dayes
hadden ben breggide: al fleytsche (þat is mankynde) schulde
not be made saaf/ but þo dayes schulen be made schorte: for
þe chosen men/ panne zif any man schal seye to zou: lo heere
is cñt or þere: nyl zee bileue/ forsoþe false cristis & false pro-
phetis schulen rise: & þei schulen zyue grete tokenes: & wondris:
so þat þe chosen be led into erreure: zif it may be done/ lo I
haue bifore seyde to zou: zif þei schulen seye to zou: lo he is in
deserte: nyl zee gone oute/ lo in pryue chaumbris (or places)
he is: nyl zee bileue/ soþely as leyte gos oute fro þe este: & ap-
perith til into þe weste: so schal be in þe compynge of mannes
sone/ where euer þe body schal be: and þe eglis schulen be ge-
deride hidir/ forsoþe anone astir þe tribulacōn of þe dayes: þe
sunne schal be made dirke: & þe mone schal not zyue hir lizt/
and sterres schulen falle doune fro heuene: & þe vertues of
heuenes schulen be mouede/ and panne þe token of mannes
sone schal appere in heuene: and panne alle þe kynredis (or
lynagis)

Matheu

lynagis) of erþe schulen weyle/ and þei schulen se mannes sone
 compnge in cloudis of heuene: wiþ myche vertu & mageste/
 and he schal sende his aungels wiþ a trumpe and greet voyce:
 and þei schulen gedir his chosen fro foure wyndis of heuene:
 fro þe hizeste þingis of heuenes: til to þe termes (or endis) of
 hem/ lerne zee a parable of a figge tree/ whanne his bowe (or
 braunche) is nowetendre & leues sprungē: zee witen þat somer
 is nyȝ/ to & zee whanne zee schulen se alle þes þingis: wit þat
 it is nyȝ in þe zatis/ treuely I seye to ȝou. for þis generacōn
 schal not passe: til þat alle þingis ben done/ heuene & erþe schu-
 len passe: but my wordis schulen not passe/ forsoþe of þe ilke
 day & hour no man woot. neþer aungels of heuenes: no but
 þe fadir alone/ Forsoþe as it was in þe dayes of noe: so schal be
 & þe compnge of mannes sone/ for as in þe dayes bifore þe greet
 flood. þei weren etynge & drynkynge. weddynge & takynge to
 weddynge til into þat day: in þe whiche noe entride into þe
 schip/ and þei knewe not til þe greet flood came & toke alle men:
 so schal be þe compnge of mannes sone/ þanne twomen schulen
 be in þe feelde: one schal be taken to. & anoþer lefte/ two
 (wymmen) schulen be gryndynge in one querne: one schal be
 take to. & þe toþer forsaken/ two in one bed: þe tone schal be
 taken to. & þe toþer forsaken/ þerfore wake zee. for zee witen
 not in what houre: ȝoure lorde is to come/ soþely þat þing wite
 zee. for ȝif þe housbonde man wiste in what houre þe þeef were
 to come. treuely he schulde wake. & suffre not his hous to be
 undirmyndyde/ and þerfore & zee be reedy. for in what houre
 zee gessen not mannes sone is to come/ who gessist þou is a
 trewe seruaunt & prudent (or war). whom his lorde has or-
 deyndyde on his meyne: þat he ȝyue to hem mete in tyme:
 blesside is þat seruaunt whom his lorde whan he schal come:
 schal fynde so doynge/ treuely I seye to ȝou. for vpon alle his
 goodis he schal ordeyne hym/ forsoþe ȝif þe ilke euyl seruaunt
 schal seye in his herte. my lorde mak þi dwellynge (or tary-
 ynge) to come. & bygynneþ to smyte his euene seruauntis: soþely
 ȝif

Matheu

zif he ete and dryncke wif drunken lewe men: þe lorde of þe ilke seruaunt schal come in þe dawe in whiche he hopiþ not: & in houre þat he knowiþ not & schal departe hym: and putte hys parte wif ypocritis/ þere schal be wepyng & beetynge togedir of teep//



Thanne þe kyngdom of heuenes schal be lijk to ten C^m 25^m
virgyns: þe whiche takyng here laumpis wenten oute metyng þe spouse (or housbonde): and þe spouse (or wiif)/ for syue of hem weren foolis: and syue prudent/ but þe syue foolis here laumpis taken: taken not oyle wif hem/ forsoþe þe prudent taken oyle in here vessels: wif laumpis/ forsoþe þe spouse (or housbonde) makynge dwellynge: alle nappiden & slepten/ soþely at mydnyzt a crie was made: lo þe spouse cometh: go zee oute metyng to hym/ þanne alle þe virgyns risen vp: & anourneden here laumpis/ soþely þe foolis seyden to þe wisemen/ zife zee to vs of zoure oyle: for oure laumpis ben quenchide/ þe prudent aunswerynge/ lest þe parauenture it suffice not to vs & to zou: go raper to men sellynge: & bye to zou/ forsoþe þe while þei wenten for to bye: þe spouse come/ and þo þat weren reedy entreden in wif hym to þe weddyngis: & þe zate is schitte/ soþely at þe laste: & þe oþer virgynes camen seyinge/ lorde lorde open to vs/ and þe answeryng: seiþ/ trewely I seye to zou: I knowe not zou/ and so wake zee & preye: for zee witen not þe day ne þe hour/ soþely as a man going in pilgrimage clepide his seruauntis: and bitoke to hem his goodis/ and to one he zawe syue talentis (or besauntis): forsoþe to anoter one/ to eche astir his owne vertue: and wente forþe anone/ forsoþe & he þat hadde take syue talentis: wente forþe & wrouzte in hem & wan oþer syue/ also & he þat had taken one: goinge forþ dalue it into þe erþe: and hid þe money of his lorde/ but astir myche tyme þe lorde of þe seruauntis came: and puttide resoun wif hem/ and he þat had take syue talentis comynge to offride oþer syue: seyinge/

Mathen

inge/ lorde þou bitokeſt to me fyue talentis/ lo I haue geten ouer fyue oper/ his lorde ſeiþ to hym/ wel be þou gode ſeruaunt & ſeiþful • for vpon ſewe þingis þou haſte ben trewe I ſchal ordeyne þee vpon manye þingis • entre þou into ioye of þi lorde/ forſoþe & he þat had taken two talentis/ came to & ſeiþ/ lorde þou bitokeſt to me two talentis/ lo I haue geten ouer oper two/ his lorde ſeiþ to hym/ wel be þou good ſeruaunt & trewe • for vpon ſewe þingis þou haſt ben trewe/ I ſchal ordeyne þee vpon manye þingis • entre into þe ioye of þi lorde/ forſoþe & he þat hadde taken one talent/ comynge to ſeiþ/ lorde I wote for þou art an harde man þou repeſt where þou haſt not ſowen • & þou gederidiſt to gedir/ where þou haſte not ſprad abroode/ and I dredynge/ wente & hid þi talent in þe erþe/ lo þou haſte þat þat is þin/ ſopely his lorde anſwerynge/ ſeyde to hym/ euyl ſeruaunt & ſlowe • wiſtiſt þou þat I repe where I ſowe not • & gedir to gedir where I ſprad not abroad/ þerefore it bihouede þee to ſende (or bitake) my money to chaungers/ þat I comynge ſchulde haue receyuede • forſoþe þat þing þat is myn/ wiþ vtures/ and ſo takith away fro hym þe talent/ and gyue it to hym þat haþ ten talentis/ for to euery man hauyng ſchal be zouen/ and he ſchal haue plente/ and to hym þat haþ not • & þat þat he ſemeth to haue • ſchal be taken fro hym/ and caſte zee oute þe vnprofitable ſeruaunt • & ſende zee hym into vttermore dirkenessi/ þere ſchal he wepynge & heetyng to gedir of teep/ forſoþe whanne mannes ſone ſchal come in his mageſte • & alle his aungellis wiþ him/ þanne he ſchal ſitte on þe ſeege of his mageſte/ and alle ſolkis ſchulen be gediride bifore hym • & he ſchal departe hem atwynne/ as a ſcheperde departith ſcheep fro kidis/ and ſopely he ſchal ſette þe ſcheep on his rizthalfe/ þe kiddis forſoþe on his liſtehalfe/ þanne þe kyng ſchal ſeye to hem/ þat ſchulen be on his rizthalfe/ come zee þe bleſſide of my ſadir • welde zee (or take zee in poſſeſſion) þe kyngdom made reedy to zou/ fro þe makynge of þe worlde/ forſoþe I was hungry/ and zee zauen to me for to ete/ I þriſtide/ & zee zauen

Matheu

alabaſtre of precious oynement came nyz to hym • & ſche
oute on þe heed of hym reſtynge/ and þe diſciplis ſeinge hadde
dedeyn ſeyinge/ wherto þis loſſe/ forſoþe it myzt be ſolde fo
myche: & be zouen to poore men/ ſoþely ih̄c witynge: ſeiþ to
hem/ what ben zee heuy to þis womman/ ſoþely a good werk
ſche has wrouzte in me/ for whi zee ſchulen euermore hau
pore men wiþ zou: but zee ſchulen not algatis haue me/ for
ſoþe þis womman ſendynge þis oynement into my body: ſch
made for to birie me/ treuely I ſeye to zou: where euer þis goſ
pel ſchal be prechide in al þe worlde: it ſchal be ſeyde þat & þi
womman dide into mynde of hym/ þanne one of þe twelue þa
was ſeyde Judas ſcarioth: wente forþ to þe prynces of priſti
& ſeiþ to hem/ what wolen zee zpyue to me: and I ſchal bitaki
hym to zou: and þei ordeynyden to hym: pritty platis of ſiluer
and fro þat tyme he ſouzte couenablete: for to bitake hym
forſoþe in þe firſte day of þe feſte of paſke • þe diſciplis camer
to ih̄u: ſeyinge/ where wolte þou we maken reedy to þee: for
to ete paſke/ and ih̄c ſeiþ/ go zee into þe cytee to ſumman
and ſeye zee to hym/ þe mayſter ſeiþ/ my tyme is nyz: at þe
I make my paſke wiþ my diſciplis/ and þe diſciplis diden: as
ih̄c comaundide to hem: and þei maden reedy paſke/ forſoþe
euenyng made: he ſatte at þe mete wiþ his twelue diſciplis
and he ſeye to hem: etynge/ treuely I ſeye to zou: for one of
zou is to bitraye me/ and þei ful ſoory: bigunnen eche to
ſeye/ lorde wher I am/ and he anſweryng: ſeiþ/ he þat wiþ
me puttith þe hande in þe plater: ſchal bitraye me/ forſoþe
mannes ſone goiþ: as it writen of hym/ but wo to þat man
by whom mannes ſone ſchal be bitrayede/ it were good to hym:
zif þat man hadde not ben borne/ forſoþe Judas þat bitrayede
hym: anſweriden ſeyinge/ mayſter wher I am/ he ſeiþ to hym/
þou haſt ſeyde/ forſoþe hem ſoupyng I h̄c took breed & bleſſide
& brake & zafe to his diſciplis: & ſeiþ/ take zee & ete: þis is my
body/ and he takynge þe cuppe: dide þankyngis & zafe to hem:
ſeyinge/ dryncke zee alle herof/ þis is my blood of þe newe tes
tament

Matheu

handis of synners/ rise zee/ go we/ lo he þat schal trape me/ schal nyz/ and zit hym spekyng/ lo Judas one of þe twelue • & wiþ hym came a greet cumpanye • wiþ swerdis & battis sente of þe prynces of pristis • & of þe eldre men of þe puple /forsoþe he þat bitrayede hym/ zafe to hem a token seyinge/whomeuer I schal kisse/ he it is • holde zee hym/ and anone he comynge nyz to ihū/ seyde/ heyle mayster/ and he kistide hym/ and ihc seis to hym/ frende/ wherto art þou comen/ þanne þei camen nyz • & castiden handis into ihū/ and helden hym/ and lo one of hem þat weren wiþ ihū • holdynge oute þe hande/ drowe oute his swerde/ and he smytynge þe seruaunt of þe prynce of pristis/ kitte of his litil ere/ þanne ihc seih to hym/ turne þi swerde into his place/ soþely alle þat schulen take swerde/ schulen perische by swerde/ wher gessist þou þat I may not preye my fadir • & he schal zpye to me now/ more þan twelue legiouns of aungels/ how þerfore schulen þe scriptures be fulfilled/ for so it bihoueh to be done/ In þat houre ihc seyde to þe cumpanyes of puple/ as to a þeef zee hane gon oute wiþ swerdes & battis for to catche me/ day bi day I satte at zou techynge in þe temple/ and zee hilden not me/ forsoþe alle þing was done/ þat þe scriptures of prophetis schulden be fulfilled/ ¶ Þanne alle þe disciplis fledden/ hym forsaken/ and þei holdynge ihū/ ledde hym to caphas prynce of pristis • where scribis & pharisees & þe eldre men of þe puple hadden comen to gedir/ forsoþe petre suede hym fer/ til into þe halle of þe prynce of pristis/ and he gone wiþinne/ satte wiþ seruantis þat he schulde se þe ende/ forsoþe þe prynces of pristis & al þe counseyl souzten false witnessyng azenes ihū • þat þei schulden take hym to deþ/ & þei founden not/ whanne many false witnessis hadden comen to/ treuly at þe laste two false witnessis camen & seyde/ he þis seyde/ I may distrupe þe temple of god/ and astir þe þridde day bilde it azen/ and þe prynce of pristis rysinge/ seih to hym/ answerest þou no þing to þo þingis/ þe whiche þes wytnessen azenes þee/ forsoþe ihc was stille/

Matheu

stille/ and þe pryncce of pristis seiþ to hym/ I coniure þee by
 quyeke god· þat þou seye to vs· zif þou be crist þe sone of god/
 and ihc seyde to hym/ þou hast seyde/ neþeles I seye to zou·
 anoter tyme· (or fro þis tyme forth·) zee schulen se mannes
 sone sittynge at þe rizthalse of þe vertue of god· & comynge in
 cloudis of heuene/ þanne þe pryncce of pristis kitte (or to
 rente) his cloyes· seyinge/ he haþ blasfemyde/ what zit nede
 hane we to witnæssis· lo nowe zee hane herde blasfemyde/
 what seemeþ to zou·/ and þei answerynge· seyden/ he is
 gilty of deeth// ¶ þanne þei spittiden into his face· and smy-
 ten hym wiþ buffetis/ forsoþe oþer zauen strokis wiþ þe
 patwme of handis into his face· seyinge/ þou crist prophecie
 to vs who is he þat smote þee/ toþely petre satte wiþ outen in
 þe porche/ and one hande mayden came nyz to hym· seyinge/
 and þou were wyþ ihu of galilee/ and he denyede before alle
 men· seyinge/ I woote not what þou seyst/ forsoþe hym go-
 inge oute þe zate· anoter hande mayden siþe hym· & seiþ to
 hem þat weren þere/ and þis was wiþ ihu of nazareþ/ and
 eftesone he denyede wiþ an oþer for he knewe not þe man/
 and aftir a litil· þei þat stoodden camen nyz· and seyden to pe-
 tre/ treuely and þou art of hem/ for whi & þi speche makith þee
 open· þanne he bigan to warie & to swere· þat he knewe not
 þe man/ and anone þe cocke crewe/ and petre biþouzte on
 þe worde of Ihu· þat he had seyde· before þe cocke crowe·
 þries þou schalt denye me/ & he gone oute· wepte bittirly//

F
C^m 27^m
 orsoþe þe moroutide made· alle þe pryncis of pris-
 tis & eldre men of þe puple token counseyll azenes
 ihu· þat þei schulden take hym to deþ/ and þei led-
 den hym bounden· and bitoke to pilate of pounce·
 mayre (or chief iustise)/ þanne Judas þat bitrayede hym· se-
 inge þat he was dampnyde· he ledde by penaunce (or for-
 pinkyng)· brouzte azen pritty platis of siluer· to þe prynces of
 pristis & to þe eldre men of þe puple· seyinge/ I haue synned·
bytrayinge

Mathew

bytappinge iuste blood/ and þei seyden what to us/ se þou/
 and the platis of siluer caste aweye in þe temple/ he wente
 aweye/ and goinge awey/ he hengide hymself wip a gerne/
 forsoþe þe prynces of pristis tooken þe platis of siluer/ sey-
 den/ it is not leueful to sende hem into þe tresourie/ for it is
 þe pris of blood/ soþely counseyl taken/ þei brouzten wip
 hem þe feelde of a potter into bityng of deade men/ for þis
 þing þe ilke feelde is clepid acheldemak/ þat is feelde of
 blood/ til into þis day/ þanne it is fulfild þat is seyd by þe
 prophete Jeremye/ seyinge/ and þei tooken þritty platis of
 siluer/ þe pris of a man prepside/ whom þei prepsiden of þe
 sonex of isrl/ þei zauen hem into þe feelde of þe potter/ as the
 lorde ordeynede to me/ soþely ihc stode bifore þe mayre (or
 domesman) and þe domesman axide hym seyinge/ art þou kyng
 of iewis/ ihc seip to hym/ þou seyst/ and whanne he was accuside
 of þe prynces of pristis & eldre men of þe puple/ he answeride
 no þing/ þanne pilate seip to hym/ berist þou not how manye
 witnesyngis þei seyn azenes þee/ and he answeride not to
 hym to any worde/ so þat þe domesman wondride gretely/
 forsoþe bi a solempne day/ þe domesman was wonte for to de-
 lyuer to þe puple one bounden/ whom þei wolde/ forsoþe he
 had one nobelman bounden/ þat was seyd barrabas/ þerfore
 pilate seyd to hem gederide to geder/ whom wolen zee I
 leese (or deliuer) to zou/ wher barrabas or ihc/ þat is seyd
 cryst/ soþely he wiste þat by enuye þei bitrayeden hym/ for-
 soþe hym sittynge for iustice (or domesman)/ his wiif sente to
 hym/ seyinge/ no þing to þee/ and to þat iuste man/ soþely I
 haue suffride þis day many þingis for hym/ by a diuion (or
 stwenene/) forsoþe þe prynces of pristis & þe eldre men/ sey-
 den (or counseyliden) to the puples þat þey schulden axe bar-
 rabas/ but ihu þei schulden leese/ forsoþe þe president answer-
 yng/ seip to hem/ whom of þe two wolen zee to be leste (or de-
 liueride) to zou/ and þei seyden barrabas/ pilate seip to hem/
 what þerfore schal I do of ihu þat is seyd crist/ alle seyn be he
 crucifiede/

Matheu

made oþer men ſaaf/ he may not make hym ſelf ſaaf/ ſif he is
kyng of iſrlt/ come he now doune fro þe croſſe/ & we bileuen to
hym/ he triſtiþ in god/ Delyuer he hym nowe ſif he wole/ for-
ſoþe he ſeyde/ for I am goddis ſone/ forſoþe & þe þeeſes þat
weren crucifiede wiþ hym/ puttiden to hym wiþ reproſe þe
ſame þing/ ſoþely fro þe ſitte houre dirkneſſis ben made on
al þe erþe/ til to þe nyghte houre/ and aboute þe nyghte houre/
Jh̄c criede wiþ greet voyce/ ſeyinge/ hely/ hely lamaſabata-
nye/ þat is my god wherto (or why) haſt þou forſaken me/
ſoþely ſummen ſtondynge þere & herynge/ ſeyden/ þis clepiþ
helie/ and anone one of hem rennyng/ ſillide a ſpounge ta-
ken wiþ eyſel or bynegre/ & puttide to a rede/ & ſaue to hym
for to drinke/ but oþer ſeyden/ ſuffre þou/ ſe we wheþer helie
come delyueryng hym/ forſoþe ih̄c eſteſones cryinge wiþ
greet voyce/ ſente oute þe ſpirit/ and lo þe beyle of þe temple
is kytte (or rente) into two parties/ fro þe hiȝeſt til doune/
and þe erþe is mouede/ & ſtones ben cleſte/ & biriels ben
openyde/ & manye bodieſ of ſeyntes þat ſlepten (or weren
deade/) riȝen aȝen/ and þei goinge oute of here biriels/ after
his reſurreccōn/ camen into þe holy cytee/ and apperiden to
manye/ treuely centurio & þei þat weren wiþ hym kepyng
ih̄u/ þe mouynge of þe erþe ſeen/ & þo þingis þat weren done/
dreddengretly ſeyinge/verrepleþ þis was goddis ſone/ forſoþe
þere weren here/ manye wymmen aȝer/ þat ſueden Jh̄u fro ga-
ſilee/ mynſtryng to hym/ amonge whiche was mary ma-
deleyn/ & mary of James/ & modir of ioſeph/ & þe modir of
zebedees ſones// ¶ Forſoþe whanne þe euenynge was made/
þere came one riche man fro armathie Joſeph by name/ þe
whiche & he was a diſciple of ih̄u/ he wente to pilat/ & aȝide þe
body of Jh̄u/ þanne pilat comaundide þe body to be ſolden/
and þe body taken/ Joſeph wlaȝpide it in a clene ſandel (or
lynnen cloþ) & puttide it in his newe birpel/ þat he hadde
betwen in a ſtoon/ and he walowide to a greet ſtoon at þe dore
of þe biriell/ and wente away/ forſoþe mary madeleyn & ano-
þer

Matheu

kepers camen into þe cytee & telden to þe prynces of pristin:
 alle þingis þat weren done/ and þei gederide to gedit wiþ þe
 eldre men & a counseyl taken: zauen to þe knyztis plenteuous
 money & seyinge/ seye zee for his disciplis camen by nyzt &
 hane stolne hym & vs slepyngē/ and zif þis be herde of þe pre-
 sident (or iustice): we schulen counsel hym & make you siker/
 and þe money taken: þei diden as þei weren tauzte/ and his
 worde is puplischede at þe iewis: til into þis day// Jforsoþe
 elleuene disciplis wenten into galilee: into an hil where ihc
 hadde ordeynede to hem/ and þei seyinge hym: worschipiden/
 toþely summe of hem doutiden/ and ihc comyng to: spac to
 hem & seyinge/ al power is zouen to me: in heuene & in erþe/
 þerfore zee goinge teche alle folkis: cristenyngē hem in þe
 name of þe fadir & of þe sone & of þe holy gost/ techyngē hem
 for to kepe alle þingis: what euer þingis I haue comaundide
 zou/ and lo I am wiþ zou in alle dayes: til to þe endyngē of
 þe worlde//

Mark

C^m 1^m



Ere bigynnes þe gospel of mark. The
 bigynnyngē of þe gospel of ihu crist þe
 sone of god: as it is writen in ysaie þe
 prophete/ lo I sende myn aungel bifore
 þi face: þat schal make reedy þe weye
 bifore þee/ þe voyce of one cryngē in de-
 serte: make zee reedy þe weye of þe lorde:
 make zee his payes riztful/ Joon was in
 desert baptisynge & prechyngē þe baptym of penaunce: in re-
 myssion of synnes/ and alle men of irlm wenten oute to hym:
 and al þe cuntre of Jude/ and weren baptiside of hym in þe
 flood of iordan: knowelechyngē here synnes/ and Joon was
 clopide

Mark

clopide wip heetis of camels: and a girdel of skynne about his
leendis/ and he ete locustis & hony of þe wode: and prechide
seyinge/ a strengre þan I schal come astir me · of whom I
knelynge am not worþi for to vndo (or vnbynde) þe þwonge
of his schoon/ I haue baptiside zou in water: forsoþe he schal
baptise zou in þe holy goost// ¶ And it is done in þo dayes · ih̄c
came fro nazareþ of galilee · & was baptiside of Ioon in Jor-
dan/ and anone he steyzinge vp of þe water: s̄ize heuenes open-
pde · & þe holy goost comynge doune · as a culuer · & dwellynge
in hym/ & a voyce is made fro heuenes/ þou art my louede sone:
in þee I haue pleside/ and anone þe spirit puttide hym into de-
serte and he was in deserte fourty dayes & fourty nyztis: and
was temptide of sathanas/ and he was wip beestis: and aungels
mynystriden to hym// forsoþe astir þat Ioon was taken: Ih̄c
came into galilee · prechyng þe gospel of þe kyngdom of god: &
seyinge/ for tyme is fulfild: and þe kyngdom of god schal come
niȝ/ forþinke zee (or do zee penaunce): and bileue zee to þe
gospel/ and he passinge biȝidis þe see of galilee: syȝe Symount
& andrew his broþer · sendynge nettis into þe see/ soþely þei
weren fischers/ and ih̄c seyde to hem/ come zee astir me: I
schal make zou to be made fischers of men/ and anone þe net-
tis forlaken: þei sueden hym/ and he gone forþ þens a litil · s̄ize
iames of zebedee · & Ioon his broþer · & hem in þe boot mak-
ynge nettis · & anone he clepide hem/ and zebedee here sadir
leste in þe boot wip hijride seruauantis: þei sueden hym// ¶ And
þei wenten forþ into capharnaum/ and anone in þe sabotis he
gon in · into þe synagoge: tauȝte hem/ and þei wondriden on
his techynge/ soþely he was techynge hem as hauynge power:
and not as scribis/ and in þe synagoge of hem was a man in
an vnclene spirit: and he criede seyinge/ what to vs & to þee:
þou ih̄u of nazareþ? haȝt þou comen biȝore þe tyme for to dis-
truȝe vs? I woot þat þou art þe holy of god/ and ih̄c þretenyde
to hym: seyinge/ ware dountbe: and go oute of þe man/ and
þe vnclene goost debrekynge hym & cryinge wip greet voyce:
wente

Mark

wente aweye fro hym/ and alle men wondriden: so þat þei
souten to gedir amonge hem seyinge/ what is þis þing/
what is þis newe techynge/ for in power he comaundith to
vncleue spiritis: and þei oberschen to hym/ & þe tale (or tyd-
ynge) of hym: wenten forþ anone into þe cuntre of galilee/ and
anone þei goinge oute of þe synagoge: camen into þe hous of
symount & andrewe: wif James and ioon/ toþely þe modir
of symountis wif: reside (or laye sick) in þe feueres/ and
anone þei seyn to hym of hir/ and he comynge to: reride hire
up: þe hande of hire taken/ & anone þe feuer lefte hire: and sche
mynnsride to hem/ forsoþe þe euenynge made: whanne þe
sunne wente doune: þei brouzten to hym alle haupnge euyl:
& haupnge deuelis/ and al þe cytee was gederide at þe zate/
and he helide many þ̄ weren traueplide wif dyuerse sooris:
and he castide oute many deuelis/ and he suffride hem not for
to speke: for þei knewen hym/ and in þe mornynge ful erly:
he risynge gone oute wente into deserte place: and preyede
þere/ and Symount suede hym & þei þat weren wif hym/ and
whanne þei hadden founden hym: þei seyden to hym/ for alle
men seeken þee/ and he seip to hem/ go we into þe nexte tounes
& cytees: þat & þere I preche/ for to þis þing I came/ and he
was: prechynge in þe synagoges of hem & in al galilee: and
castynge oute fendis// ¶ And a leprous man came to hym:
bisechynge hym/ and þe kne folden: seyde/ zif þou wolte: þou
mayste clense me/ and ih̄c haupnge mercy on hym: streppte
oute his hande/ and touchynge hym: seip to hym/ I wole/ be
þou made clene/ and whanne he had seyde: anone þe lepre
partide aweye fro hym/ and he is clenstide/ and he pretenpde
to hym/ and anone he putte hym oute: and seip to hym/ se þou:
sepe to no man/ but go schewe þee to þe prynces of pristin: &
offer for þi clenstynge þo þingis þat moyses bad: into witness-
ynge to hem/ and he gon oute: bigan to preche. & defame (or
puplische) þe worde: so þat now he myzte not go into þe cy-
tee: but he wif oute forþ in deserte places/ and þei camen to
gedir to hym on alle sidis//

Mark



And este he entride into capharnaum: astir eyzte C^m 2^m
 dayes/ and it is herde þat he was in an hous &
 manye camen togedir · so þat it toke hem not: neþer
 at þe zate/ and he spac to hem a worde/ and þere
 camen to hym men bryngynge a sijk man in palesie: þe whiche
 was borne of foure men/ and whanne þei myzten not offer hym
 to hym for þe cumpanye of puple: þei maden þe roof nakide
 where he was/ and makynge open: þei setten doune þe bed · in
 whiche þe sijk man in palesie lay/ soþely whanne ih̄c s̄ize þe
 seih of hem: he seih to þe sijk man in palesie/ sone: þi synnes
 ben forzouen to þee/ forsoþe þere weren summe of þe scribis
 sittynge & þenkyng in here hertis/ what spekist he þis þus? he
 blaffemeth/ who may forzue synnes: but god alone? þe whiche
 þing anone knowen by þe holy gost · for þei þouzten wipinne
 hemself: ih̄c seih to hem/ what þenken zee þes thingis in zoure
 hertis? what is lizter for to seye to þe sijk man in palesie ·
 synnes be forzouen to þee: or for to seye take þi bed & walke/
 soþely þat zee witen · þat mannes sone haþ power in erþe to
 forzue synnes: he seih to þe sijk man in palesie/ I seye to þee
 rise vp · take þi bed: and go into þin hous/ and anone he roos
 vp/ and þe bed taken vp he wente bifore alle men · so þat alle
 men wondriden & honoureden god: seyinge/ for we sizen neuer
 so// ¶ And he went out estefones to þe see: & al þe cumpanye
 of puple came to hym: and he tauzte hem/ and whanne he
 passide: he s̄ize leuy alþei sittynge at þe tolboþe/ and he seih
 to hym/ sue me/ and he risynge: sude hym/ and it is done
 whanne he satte at þe mete in his hous: many puplicans &
 synful men: saten togedir at þe mete wip ih̄u & his disciplis/
 soþely þere weren manye þat folowiden hym/ and scribis &
 pharisees seinge for he ete wip puplicans & synful men: seyden
 to his disciplis/ whi etist zoure mayster & drynkist wip pupli-
 cans & synners/ þis þing herde: ih̄c seih to hem/ hoole men
 hane no neede to a lecher: but þei þat hane euyl/ forsoþe I came

Mark

not to clepe iuste men: but synners// ¶ And þe disciplis of ion (baptist) & þe pharisees weren fastynge: & þei camen & seyn to hym/ whi þe disciplis of Ion & of pharisees fasten: but þi disciplis fasten not? and ihc seip to hem/ wheper þe sones of wed- dynges motwne faste · as longe as þe spouse is wip hem? how longe tyme þei hane þe spouse wip hem? þei motwne not faste/ forsoþe dayes schulen come · whanne þe spouse schal be taken away fro hem: and þanne þei schulen faste in þo dayes/ no man sewip a pacche of rude (or newe) clooth · to an olde clooth/ ellis he takip supplyment (or pacche:) and a more brekyngge is made/ and no man sendip newe wijn into olde botels (or wijn vessels) ellis þe wijn schal berste þe wijn vessels · & þe wijn schal be heelde oute · & þe wijn vessels schulen perische/ but newe wijn schal be sente into newe wijn vessels/ and it is done estesones whanne þe lorde walkide in þe sabotis by þe cornes · & his disciplis bigunnen to passe forþe & plucke eris/ soþely þe pharises seyden/ lo what þi disciplis done in sabotis þat is not leueful? and he seip to hem/ redden zee neuer what dauid dide · whan he had nede? and he hungride/ and þei þat weren wip hym · howe he wente into þe hous of god · vndir abiathar prynce of pristis · & ete looues of proposicion · þe whiche it was not leueful to ete · no but to pristis alone/ & he zawe to hem þat weren wip hym/ and he seyde to hem/ þe saboth is made for man: and not man for þe saboth/ and so mannes sone is lorde also of þe saboth/

C^m 3^m



And he entride estesone into þe synagoge: and þer was a man haupnge a drie hande/ and þei aspieden hym · zif he heelide in sabotis: for to accuse hym/ and he seip to þe man haupnge a drie hande/ rise into þe mydel/ and he seip to hem: is it leueful to do wel in þe sabothis or euyl? for to make a soule saaf: wher to leese? and þei weren stille/ and he biholdynge hem aboute wip wrappe · haupnge sorowe vpon þe blyndenesse of here hertes: seip to þe man/

Mark

he is disperplide · & he schal not motwe stande · but hap an
ende/ noman gon into a stronge mannes hous · may take
awey his vessels/ no but he bynde firste · þe stronge man/ and
þanne he schal dyuertely/ rauysche his hous// ¶ Treuely I seye
to you · for alle synnes & blasfemes · by whiche þei haue blas-
femyde/ schulen be forzouen to þe sones of men/ soþely þe þat
schal blasfeme azenes þe holy goost/ schal not haue remyscion
into wip outhen ende/ but he schal be gilty · of euerlastynge
trespasse/ for þei seyden/ he hap an vnclene spirit/ and his mo-
dir & breperen camen/ and þei stondynge wip outhen forþe/
senten to hym · clepyng to hym/ and a cumpanye satte aboute
hym/ and þei seyn to hym/ lo þi modir & þi breperen wip outhen
forþe seeken þee/ and he answerynge to hem/ seip/ who is my
modir & my breperen/ and biholdynge hem aboute · þat taten
in þe cumpas of hym/ he seip/ lo my modir & my breperen/
forsoþe who þat doip þe wille of god/ he is my broþer & my
sister & modir//

C^m 4^m



¶ And este ihc bigan for to teche at þe see/ and myche
cumpanye of puple is gederide to hym · so þat he
steþzinge into a boot · satte in þe see/ and al þe
cumpanye of puple/ was aboute þe see on þe lande/
and he tauzte hem in parablis/ many þingis/ and he seyde to
hem in his techynge/ here zee/ lo a man sowynge/ goip outhen
for to sowen/ and þe while he sowip/ anoper seede felde aboute
þe weye · & briddis of heuene camen & eten it/ forsoþe anoper
felde doune on stoonyn places/ where it hadde not myche erþe/
anone it is sprungen vp/ for it hadde not depnesse of erþe/ and
whanne þe sunne roos vp/ it welowide for heet/ and it dreyde
vp/ for it had not root/ and anoper felde doune into þornes/
& þornes steþzeden vp & strangliden it/ and it zawe not fruyte/
and anoper felde doune into good lande/ and it zawe fruyte
steþzinge vp & waringe/ and one brouzte þritty folde fruyte ·
& one sixty folde/ & one an hundred folde/ and he seyde/ he þat
hap

Mark

haþ eris of herynge: here/ ¶ And whanne he was synguler (or
 by hym self:) he twelue þat weren wih hym · axeden hym for
 to expoune his parable/ and he seyde to hem/ to zou it is zouen
 for to knowe þe mysterie (or pryuate:) of þe kyngdom of god/
 soþely to þem þat ben with outh forþ: alle þingis ben made
 in parablis/ þat þei seinge se: and se not/ & þei herynge here:
 & vnderstonde not/ þat sum tyme þei be conuertide: and synnes
 be forzouen to hem/ and he seiþ to hem/ witen zee not his pa-
 rable · & how zee schulen knowe alle parablis/ he þat sowiþ:
 sowiþ a worde/ þes soþely ben þat ben aboute þe weye where þe
 worde is sowen · & whanne þei hane herde: anone cometh sa-
 thanas · & takiþ away þe worde · þat is sowen in here hertis/
 and so þes ben þat ben sowen on a stoon: þe whiche whanne
 þei herden þe worde: anone taken it wih ioye/ and þei hane not
 root in hemself: but þei ben temperal: (þat is lasten but a litil
 tyme)/ astirwarde tribulaciō sprungen vp & persecucion for
 þe worde: anone þei ben sclaunderide/ and þer ben oþer þat
 ben sowen in þornes/ þes ben þat heren þe worde & mysseþce
 of þe worlde & decepte of richellis · & oþer charge of coueytise
 entryng: in stranglen þe worde · & it is made wih outh fruyte/
 and þes it ben þat ben sowen on good lande · þe whiche heren
 þe worde & taken it & maken fruyte · one þritty folde · one
 sixty folde · & one an hundride folde/ ¶ And he seiþ to hem/
 wher a lanterne come · þat it be putte vnder a buschel/ wher
 not þat it be putte: vpon a candillsticke/ forsoþe þer is no þing
 hidde: þat schal not be made open/ neþer any þing is pry-
 uey: þe whiche schal not come into apeert/ zif any man haþ
 eris of herynge: here he/ and he seyde to þem/ se zee what zee
 heren/ in what mesure zee mesure: it schal be meten · & be
 caste to zou/ soþely it schal be zouen to hym þat haþ/ and it
 schal be taken away · fro hym þat haþ not · also & þat þat he
 haþ/ ¶ And he seyde/ so þe kyngdom of god is · as zif a man
 caste seede into þe erþe · & it slepiþ & it risiþ vp in nyzt & day &
 bryngiþ forþ seed · & wariþ faste: þe while he woot not/ forsoþe
 þe

Mark

he erbe by his owne wirchynge: makih fruyte/ firste an erbe
grene corne)/ astirwarde an ere: astirwarde ful fruyte in
ere/ and whanne of it self it haf brouzte forþ fruyte: anone
sendih a sikel (or hook): for rijs corne comeþ/ and he seyde/
what þing schul we licken þe kyngdom: or to what paral
schulen we comparifoune it? as a corne of seneuey: þe whi
whanne it is sown in þe erbe: is lesse þanne alle seed is þ
ben in þe erbe/ and whanne it is bredde (or quykenyde:)
steyzeth vp into a tree: & is made more þan alle wortis (o
erbis)/ and it schal make greet braunchis: so þat briddis
heuene motone dwelle vndir þe schadowe þer of/ and in mar
tuche parables he spac to hem a worde: as þei myzten her
sophely he spac not to hem: wiþouten parable/ forsoþe he e
pounyde to his disciplis alle þingis: on sidishonde (or by hem
self)/ ¶ And he seih to hem in þat day whenne euenynge wa
made: passe we azenwarde/ and þei leeyng þe cumpanye o
puple: taken hym/ so þat he was in þe boot: & oþer booti
weren wiþ hym/ and a greet stoorme of wynde is made: an
sente watwis in þe boot: so þat þe boot was ful/ and he was in
þe hyndir parte of þe boot: slepyng on a pilowe/ and þei reysen
hym: and seyn to hym/ mayster parteyneþ it not to þee: þa
we perischen: and he rysynge vp: manasside to þe wynde: and
seyde to þe see/ be stille: ware doumbe/ and þe wynde ceeside:
and greet peesiblenesse is made/ and he seih to hem/ what drede
zee: not zit hane zee seih/ and þei dredden wiþ grete drede:
and seyde to eche oþer/ who gessist þou is þis: for þe wynde &
þe see oberschen to hym//

Om 5^m



¶ And þei camen ouer þe waue of þe see: into þe cuntre
of genazareth/ and anone a man in vnclene spirit
ran oute of a biriell: to hym goinge oute of þe boot/
þe whiche man had an hous in graues (or biriells)/
and neþer wiþ cheynes nowe: myzte any man bynde hym/ for
ofte tymes he bounden in stockis & cheynes: had broken þe
cheynes

Mark

cheynes and had broken þe flockis to smale gobitis/ & no man myzte daunte (or tame) hym/ and euermore nyzt & day in bi-riels or hillis he was crynge & betynge hym self wip stones/ soþely he seinge ihū afer: ran & worschipide hym/ and he crynge wip greet voyce: seyde/ what to me & to þee · þou ihū þe sone of hizeſt god? I coniure þee by god: þat þou turment me not/ forsoþe ihc seyde to hym/ þou vnclene spirit: go oute fro þe man/ and ihc axide hym/ what name is to þee? and he seiþ to hym/ a legioune is name to me: for we ben manye/ and he preyede hym myche: þat he schulde not putte hym oute of þe cuntre/ forsoþe þer was þere aboute þe hil · a floc of hoggis lesowynge in feeldis/ and þe spiritis preyeden ihū seyinge/ sende vs into hoggis: þat we entre into hem/ and anone ihc grauntide to hem/ and þe vnclene spiritis entreden into þe hoggis/ and wip greet birre (or haste:) þe flokke was caste doune into þe see · to two housande · & þei ben stranglide in þe see/ soþely þei þat sedden hem: fledden & tolden into þe cytee & into þe feeldis/ and þei wenten oute for to see what was done/ & þei camen to ihū: and þei sizen hym þat was traueplide of þe fende · sittynge cloþide · & of hool mynde: and þei dredden/ and þei tolden to hem þat sizen · hoʋe it was done to hym þat had a fende · & of þe hoggis: & þei bigunnen for to preye · þat he schulde go aweye fro here coostis/ and whanne he steyzede into a boot: he þat was traueplide of þe deuyl: bigan to preye hym þat he schulde be wip hym/ soþely ihc receyuede hym not: but seiþ to hym/ go þou into þin hous (to þi meyne ·) & telle hem how many þingis þe lorde hap done to þee · & hadde mercy of þee/ and he wente forþ · & bigan for to preche in decapolie (þat is a cuntre of ten cytees ·) how manye þingis ihc had done to hym · & alle men wondriden// ¶ And whanne ihc had steyzede into þe boot eftesone ouer þe see: myche cumpanye of puple came togedir to hym · & was aboute þe see/ and one of þe prynces of synagogis: by name iayrus came/ and seinge hym fel doune at his feet: and preyede myche seyinge/

Mark

seyinge/ fortohi my douzter is in þe laste þingis: come þou
putte þin hande on hire þat sche be saaf & lyue/ and he wente
forþ wiþ hym: and myche cumpanye of puple sueþe hym: and
oppreßide hym/ and a womman þat was in þe flure of blood
twelue zeer · & had suffride manye þingis of ful manye leechis ·
& spendide alle hir þingis · & no þing profitide: but hadde more
worße whanne sche hadde herde of ihū · sche came in þe cum-
panye byhynde/ and touchide his clooth/ soþely sche seyde/ for
zif I schal or touche or his clooth: I schal be saaf · & anone þe
welle of hire blood is dryede vp: & sche feelide in body · þat
sche was heeide of þe wounde (or seekenesse)/ and anone ihc
knowynge in hym self þe vertue þat had gone oute of hym: he
turnyde to þe cumpanye · seih/ who touchide my clothes? and
his disciplis seyde to hym/ þou seest þe cumpanye oppreßynge
þee · & seyste þou who touchide me? and ihc lokide aboute · for
to se hir þat had done þis þing/ forsoþe þe womman dredynge
& quakynge: witynge þat it was done in hir · came & felde
doun biforn hym & seyde to hym al treuþe/ forsoþe ihc seyde
to hire/ douzter þi seih haþ made þee saaf/ go in pees: & be
saaf fro þi seekenes/ zit hym spekynges: messangeris camen to
þe prynce of þe synagoge · seyinge/ for þi douzter is deade/
what traueylist þou þe mayster forþer/ forsoþe þe worde herde
þat was seyde: Ihc seih to þe prynce of þe synagoge/ nyl þou
drede: onely bileue þou/ and he receyuyde not any man to
sue hym: no but peter & iames · & Joon þe broþer of iames/
and þei comen into þe hous of þe prynce of þe synagoge/ and
he sate noȝle · & men wepynges & weplynges myche/ and he gone
in: seih to hym/ what ben zee trublide & wepen: þe wenche is
not deade but slepiþ/ & þei scorneden hym/ forsoþe alle caste
oute: he takip þe sadir & modir of þe wenche · & hem þat weren
wiþ hym · & þei entren in · where þe wenche laye/ and behold-
ynge þe hande of þe wenche: seih to hire/ tabita cump þat is
interpretide (or expounyde) wenche to þee I seye rise/ and
anone þe wenche roos & walkide/ soþely sche was of twelue
zeer:

Mark

zeer: & hei weren abayschide wip greet stoneynge/ and he comaundide to hem gretely: pat no man schulde wite it/ and he comaundide to 3yue to hir for to ete/ and ihc̄ gone oute pens: wente into his owne cuntre * & his disciplis solowiden hym//



And he saboth made: ihc̄ bigan for to teche in a syn- C^m 6^m
agoge/ and many herynge: wondriden in his tech-
ynge: seyng: of whens to hym his: alle hes pingis/
& what is he wisdom pat is zouen to hym: & suche
vertues he whiche ben made by his handis: wher his is not
he smyth (or carpenter) he sone of marpe he broper of James
& Ioseph & Judas & Symount: wheper & his sisters ben not
here wip vs: and hei weren sclaunderide in hym/ and ihc̄ seyde
to hem/ for a prophete is not wip ouden honour: but in his
owne cuntre: and in his hous & in his kyn/ and he myzt not
make here any vertue: no but heelide a few seek men: he handis
putteto/ and he wondride for he vnbeleue of hem/ and he wente
aboute castels in enuyroune techynge/ & he clepide twelue: &
bigan for to sende hem by two: & 3aue to hem power of vn-
cleane spiritis/ and comaundide hem pat hei schulde not take
any ping in he wey: no but a zerde onely/ not a scrippe ne
brode neper money in he girdel: but schodde wip sandalies
(pat ben open abouen)/ and pat hei weren not clopide: wip
two cootis/ and he seyde to hem/ whider euer zee schulen entre
into an hous: dwelle zee here til zee gone oute pens/ and who
euer schal not receyue ne here zou: zee goinge oute fro pens:
schakip aweye he poudre/ fro zoure feet: into witnessynge to
hem/ and hei goinge oute: prechiden pat men schulden dopen-
aunce/ & hei castiden oute many sendes: & anoyntiden wip oyle
many sick men & hei weren heelide/ and kyng heroude herde/
forsope his name was made open: & he seyde for ion baptist:
hah risen azen fro deade men: and herfore vertues worchen
in hym/ tohely oher seyden: for it is helpe/ but oher seyden:
for it is a prophete: as one of prophetis/ he whiche ping herde:

L

heroude

Mark

heroude seih/ whom I haue bihedede ion: his hap risen fr
 deade men/ forsope he ilke heroude sente & hilde Ion & bond
 hym into prisoune. for herodias he wife of philip his broper
 for he hadde weddide hir/ sohely Ion seyde to heroude/ it
 not leueful to pee. for to haue he wijs of pi broper/ herodia
 forsope leyde a spies to hym: and wolde flee hym & myzte no
 sohely heroude dredde Ion. witynge hym a iuste man & hooly
 and kepte hym/ and hym herde: he diide many pingis & gladi
 herde hym/ and whanne a couenable day had fallen. heroud
 in his birthe day made a soper to he prynces & tribunes: and t
 he firste (or grettist) of galilee/ and whanne he douzter of p
 ilke herodias had entride in & lepte. & pleside to heroude. &
 also to men resynges: he kyng seyde to he wenche/ are hou o
 me what pou wolte: & I schal zyue to pee/ and he swore to
 hire. for what euer pou schalt are: I schal zyue to pee: hou
 he halfe of my kyngdom/ he whiche whanne sche hadde got
 oute: seyde to hire modir/ what schal I are: and sche seyde
 he heede of ion baptist/ and whanne sche had entride anon
 wip hast to he kyng: sche arede seyinge/ I wole pat anone hou
 zyue to me in a dische he heed of ion baptist/ and he kyng was
 soory for he ope/ and for men sittynge to gedir at he mete: he
 wolde not hir be made soory. but a manqueller sente he com
 aundide he heed of ion baptist for to be brouzte/ and he bi
 hedide hym in he prisoune: and brouzte his heede in a dische.
 & zaue it to he wenche/ and he wenche zaue to hire modir/ he
 whiche ping herde: his disciplis camen & taken his body: &
 puttide it in a biriel// ¶ And apostlis comynge to gedir to ihu:
 tolden to hym alle pingis pat hei hadden done & tauzte/ & he
 seih to hem/ come zee by zou self into deserte place: reste a
 litil/ forsope here weren many pat camen & wenten azen: and
 hei hadden not space for to ete/ and hei slepyng into a boot:
 wenten into deserte place. by hem self/ and hei siZen hem go
 inge aweye. & many knewen & goinge on feet fro alle cytees
 hei runnen to gedir pidir & came bifore hem/ and ihc goinge
 oute.

Mark

oute · fize myche cumpayne · & hadde mercy on hem . for þei
 weren as ſcheep not hauynge a ſcheperde/ and he bigan for to
 teche hem manye þingis/ and whanne myche houre (or forþ
 dayes) was made nowē/ his diſciplis comen nyȝ ſeyinge/ þis
 place is deſerte/ and nowē þe houre haȝ paſſide/ leeue hem .
 þat þei goinge into þe nexte tounes & villagis/ bie to hem metis
 whiche þei ſchulen ete/ and he anſwerynge ſeiþ to hem/ ȝyue
 ȝee to hem for to ete/ and þei ſeyden to hym/ goinge bie we
 looues wiȝ two hundride pens/ and we ſchulen ȝyue to hem for
 to ete/ and he ſeiþ to hem/ how many loues haue ȝee/ go ȝee
 & ſe/ and whanne þei hadden knowen/ þei ſeyn fyue & two
 fiſchis/ and he comaundide to hem · þat þei ſchulden make alle
 men ſitte to mete/ aftir cumpaynes vpon grene/ and þei ſeten
 doune by parties/ by hundridis & fifties/ and þe fyue loues
 taken & two fiſchis/ he biholdynge into heuene · bleſſide & brake
 þe looues & ȝaue to his diſciplis/ þat þei ſchulden putte bifore
 hem/ and he departide two fiſchis to alle/ and alle eten & weren
 fulfildē/ and þei token þe reliſes of broken mete twelue coſyns
 ful/ and of fiſchis/ ſopely þei þat eten/ weren fyue houſande
 of men// ¶ And anone he conſtreynede his diſciplis for to ſteȝe
 into a boot · þat þei ſchulden paſſe bifore hym ouer þe ſee to
 bethſayda/ þe while he leſte þe puple/ and whanne he hadde
 leſte hem/ þei* wenten into an hil for to preye/ and whanne
 euenynge was/ þe boot was in myddis þe ſee/ & he al one in
 þe lande/ & he fize hem traueþlynge in rowynge/ ſopely þe
 wynde was contrarie to hem/ and aboute þe fourþe wakyng
 of þe nyȝt · he wandrynge on þe ſee came to hem/ and wolde
 paſſe hem/ and as þei ſizen hym wandrynge on þe ſee/ geſſiden
 for to be a fantum · & crieden/ forſoþe alle ſizen hym/ & þei
 weren diſtourblide/ and anone he ſpac wiȝ hem/ and ſeyde to
 hem/ triſte ȝee/ I am/ nyl ȝee drede/ and he came vp to hem
 into þe boot/ and þe winde ceſſide/ and þei more wondriden
 wiȝinne hem/ and þei vndreſtoden not of þe looues/ ſopely
 here herte was blyndide/ and whanne þei hadde paſſide ouer
 þe

* ſic in MS.

Mark

he see: þei camen into þe lande of genazareth: and setten to lande/ and whanne þei hadden gone oute of þe boot: anone þei knewen hym/ & þei rennyng þourgh al þe cuntre: bigunnen to bere hem aboute in beddis þat hadden hem euyl: where þei herden hym to ben/ and whidur euer he entride into vil- lagis & townes or into cytees: þei puttiden sikk men in streetis & preyeden hym þat þei schulden touche: oþer þe hemme of his cloof/ and how manye euer touchiden hym: weren made saaf//

7^m



And pharisees & summe of scribis comyng fro ierlm: camen to gebir to hym/ and whanne þei hadden seen summe of his disciplis ete breede wip comoune handes (þat is not waschen:) þei blameden hem/ forsoþe pharisees & alle iewis eten not * no but þei waschen ofte herehandis: holdyng þe tradiciouns (or statutis) of eldre men/ and þei turnyng azen fro þe chepyng: eten no but þei waschen/ and many oþer þingis ben taken to hem for to kepe
 * sic as waschyng of *cumpes & cruetis: and of vessels of brass & of beddis/ and pharisees & scribis: axeden hym seyinge/ whi gone not þi disciplis aftir þe tradicioun of eldre men: but wip comoune handis þei eten breed? and he answerynge: seyde to hem/ ysate propheciēde wel of zou ypocritis: as it is writ- en/ þis puple worshipþ me wip lippis: forsoþe here herte is set fro me/ in veyne treuely þei worshipen me techyng doctrine & preceptis of men/ forsoþe zee forsakyng þe maun- dement of god: holden þe tradicoñs of men/ waschyng of cru- etis & cuppis * & manye oþer þingis lijk to þes zee done/ and he seyde to hem/ wel zee hane made þe maundement of god voyde: þat zee kepe zoure tradicioñ/ forsoþe moyses seyde/ worship þi fadir & þi modir/ and he þat schal curse fadir or modir: by ðeþ die he/ soþely zee seyn/ zif a man schal sepe to fadir or modir: corban þat is what euer zifte of me schal pro- fite to þee/ and ouer zee sustren not hym do any þing to fadir or

Mark

or modir · brekyng þe worde of god · by zoure tradicion · þat
 zee hane zouen: and zee done manye oþer ſuche þingis/ and
 he eſteſones cleyng to þe cumpanye of puple: ſeyde to hem/
 zee alle here me & vnderſtondiþ/ no þing wiþouten man is en-
 trynge into hym: þat may defoule hym/ but þo þingis þat
 comen forþ of a man: þo it ben þat defoulen a man/ forſoþe
 ʒif any man hane eris of herynge here he// ¶ And whanne he
 had entride into an hous fro þe cumpanye of puple: his diſ-
 ciplis axeden hym þe parable/ and he ſeiþ to hem/ ſo & zee ben
 vnprudent (or vnwiſe)/ vnderſtonde zee not for alle þing wiþ-
 outen forþe entrynge into a man: may not defoule hym/ for
 it haþ not entride into his herte · but into þe wombe/ and by-
 neþe it goiþ oute: purgyng alle meetis/ ſoþely he ſeyde/ for
 þes þingis þat gone oute of a man: þo defoulen a man/ for-
 ſoþe fro wiþinne of þe herte of men comen forþ euyl þouztis ·
 auoutries · fornycacons · manſleingis · þeſtis · coueytiſe · (or
 ouer harde kepyng of goodis) · wickidneſſis · gile · vnchaſtite ·
 euyl yze · blaſfemyes · pride · & folie ·/ alle þes euelis: fro wiþ-
 ine comen forþ & defoulen a man/ and ih̄c riſyng þens: wente
 in þe endis of tyre & ſydon/ and he gone into an hous wolde
 no man wite (or knowe) · & he myzte not daare (or be pryue)/
 ſoþely a womman anone as ſche herde of hym · whos douzter
 had an vnclene ſpirit: entride & fel doune at his feet/ ſoþely þe
 womman was heþen: of þe generacō of ſyrogeniſſe/ and ſche
 preyde hym þat he wolde caſte oute a deuyl fro hire douzter/
 þe whiche ſeyde to hir/ ſuffre þou ſones to be fulſilde firſte/ it
 is not good to take þe breed of ſones · & ſende to houndis/ and
 ſche anſweride & ſeyde to hym/ forſoþe lorde/ for whi & litil
 whelpis eten vnder þe borde of þe crummes of children/ and
 ih̄c ſeiþ to hir/ for þis worde go: þe ſende is wente oute of þi
 douzter/ and whanne ſche hadde gone home: ſche ſonde þe
 wenche ſittyng on þe bed · & þe deuyl gone oute fro hire//
 ¶ And eſteſones ih̄c goinge oute fro þe endis (or cooſtis) · of
 tyre · came þourgh ſydon to þe ſee of galilee: þat is bitwixe þe
mydel

Mark

mydel endis of decapolios/ and hei ledden to hym a deaf ma
 & doumbe: & preyeden hym þat he putte to hym þe hande/ an
 he takynge hym afidis fro þe cumpanye: sendis his syngeri
 into his litil eris: & spittynge: touchide his tonge/ & he bihold
 ynge into heuene: sorowide wiþinne & seiþ/ effata/ þat is b
 þou openyde/ anone his eris weren openyde: & þe bonde of hi
 tunge is vnbunden: & he spac ritzly/ and he comaundide to
 hem: þat þei schulden seye to no man/ forsoþe how myche h
 comaundide to hem: so myche more: þei prechiden more/ and
 bi þat þe more þei wondriden: seyinge/ he dide wel alle þingis
 and deaf men he made to here: & doumbe for to speke//

C^m 8^m



X þo dayes whanne myche cumpanye of puple was
 wiþ ihū: & hadden not what þei schulden ete: his
 disciplis gederide to gedir: he seiþ to hem/ I haue
 reuþe on þe cumpanye of puple/ for lo now þe
 þridde day: þei susteynen (or abiden) me: and hane not what
 þei schulen ete/ and zif I leue hem fastynge in to here housis:
 þei schulen sayle in þe weye/ forsoþe summe of hem camen fro
 fer/ and þe disciplis answereden to hym/ wher of schal a man
 fille hem wiþ looues: here in wildirnesse? and he aride hem/
 how many looues hane zee? þe whiche seyden: seuene/ and he
 comaundide þe cumpanye to sitte doune on þe erþe/ and he
 takynge þe seuene looues & doinge þankyngis: brake & zawe
 to his disciplis: þat þat þei schulden putte hem forþ to þe cum-
 panye/ & þei hadden fewe smale fischis: & he blestide hem: &
 comaundide for to be putte forþ/ and þei eten & ben fulfild/
 and þei tooken vp þat leste of relife: seuene leepis ful/ forsoþe
 þei þat eten: weren as foure *hundride of men: & he leste hem/
 and anone he wente vp into a boot wiþ his disciplis: and came
 into þe parties of dalmainytha/ and pharesees wenten oute:
 & bigunnen to seek (or to are) wiþ him aringe a token of hym
 fro heuene: temptyng hym/ and he sorowynge wiþinne in spi-
 rit: seiþ/ what seekiþ his generacoñ a token? treuely I seye
 to

* Error 4000

Mark

to zou • zif a token schal be zouen to his generacōn// ¶ And he leeynghe hem • wente vp eftesone into a boot: and wente ouer þe see/ and þei forzetten to take breed • & þei hadden not wiþ hem: no but one loof in þe boot/ & he comaundide to hem: seyinge/ se zee & be war of þe sordowz of pharisees: & of þe sordowz of heroude/ and þei þouzten one to anoper seyinge: for we hane not breed/ þe whiche þing knowen • ihc seip to hem/ what þenken zee: for zee hane not breed? zit zee knowen not • ne vnderstonnden/ zit zee hane zoure herte blyndide/ zee haupnge vzen • seen not/ and zee haupnge eris: heren not/ ne þer zee haue mynde whanne I brake fyue looues • into fyue housande • & howe manye cofyns ful of broken meete tooken zee vp? þei seyn to hym • twelue/ whanne & seuene looues into foure housande of men: how many leepis of broken mete tooken zee vp? and þei seyn seuene/ and he seyde to hem/ how vnderstonde zee not zit/ and þei comen to bethsayda • and þei bryngen to hym a blynde man • & preyde hym: þat he schulde touche hym/ and þe hande of blynde man taken: he ledde hym oute of þe streete/ and spittynge into his vzen • his handis putte • he aride hym zif he size any þing/ and he biholdynge: seip/ I size men as trees walkynge/ aftirwarde eftesones he puttide handis on his vzen: & he bigan for to se/ & he is restoride: so þat he size clerely alle þingis/ and he sente hym into his hous: seyinge/ go into þin hous/ and zif þou schalt go into þe strete: seye to no man// ¶ And ihc entride in & his disciplis • into þe castels of cesarie of philip: & in þe weye he aride his disciplis seyinge to hem/ whom seyn men me for to be? þe whiche answereden/ summe ion baptist: oþer seyn helie/ but oþer seyn: as one of þe prophetis/ þanne he seip to hem/ but whom seyn zee: me for to be? petre answerynge seip to hym/ þou art crist/ and he þretenyde hem: þat þei schulden not seye to any man of hym/ and he bigan for to teche hem • for it bihoueth mannes sone to suffre manye þingis & to be reprobued of þe hizest priffis • & of eldre men • & scribis to be slayne: and
aftir

Mark

astir þre dayes for to rise azen/ and he spak pleyuely þe worde
and petre takynge hym/ bigan for to blame hym/ þe which
turnyde • seinge his disciplis/ manafide to petre • seyinge/ ge
astir me sathanas/ for þou sauerist not þo þingis þat ben o
god/ but þo þingis þat ben of men/ and þe cumpanye of pupl
gederide wip his disciplis/ he seyde to hem/ zif any man wol
sue me/ denye he hym self • & take he his crosse/ and sue he
me/ soþely whoso wole make his soule (þat is his lijf) saaf/ he
schal leese it/ forsoþe he þat schal leese his soule (þat is his lijf)
for me & for þe gospel/ schal make it saaf/ soþely what profiteþ
it to a man/ zif he wyne al þe worlde/ and do peyrnge to
his soule/ or what chaungynge schal a man ȝue for his soule/
forsoþe who þat schal knoweleche me • & my wordis in þis ge
neracon auoutresse/ and mannes sone schal knoweleche hym/
whanne he schal come in þe glorie of his fadir wip his aun
gels/ and he seyde to hem/ treuely I seye to ȝou for þere ben
summe of men stondynge heere • þe whiche schulen not taste
deþ/ til þei seen þe rewme of god comynge in vertue//

C^m 9^m



And astir ȝire • ih̄ took petre & James & Joon & leed
ip hem bi hem self, al one into an hize hil/ and he
is transfiguride bifore hem/ and his clothes ben
made schynynge & white ful myche as snowe/ and
whiche maner a fuller may not make whijt on erþe/ and helie
wip moyses apperide to hem/ and þei weren spekyng with
ih̄u/ and petre answeryng seih to ih̄u/ mayster it is good/ vs
to be heere/ make we heere þre tabernaclis/ one to þee • one to
moyses/ & one to helie/ soþely he wiste not what he schulde
seye/ forsoþe þei weren agaste by dreede/ & þere is made a
cloude schadowynge hem/ & a voyce came of þe cloude seyinge/
þis is my moste derworþe sone/ heere zee hym/ and anone þei
biholdynge aboute ȝizen no more any man • no but ih̄u onely
wip hem// ¶ And he comynge doune fro þe hil/ he comaun
dide hem • þat þei schulden not telle to any man þo þingis þat
þei

Mark

þei hadden seen: no but whanne mannes sone haþ risen fro
 deade (spiritis)/ and þei helden þe worde at hem self seekyng
 what schulde be whanne he had risen fro deade/ & þei axiden
 hym seyinge/ what therfore seyn pharisees & scribis: for it bi-
 houeh helpe for to come firste/ þe whiche answerynge: seih to
 hem/ whanne helie schal come firste: he schal restore alle þin-
 gis/ and how it is writen into mannes sone: þat he schal suffre
 manye þingis: & be dispiside/ but I seye to zou: for & helie is
 comen: and þei diden to hym what euer þingis þei wolden: as
 it is writen/ and he comynge to his disciplis: siþe a greet cum-
 panye aboute: and scribis togedir axinge wiþ hem/ and anone
 al þe cumpanye seinge Ihu: was astonyede & dredde/ & þei
 rennyng to: gretten hym/ and he axide hem/ what seeken zee
 amonge zou? and one of þe cumpanye answerynge: seyde/
 mayster I haue brouzte to my sone: haupnge an vnclene spi-
 rit/ þe whiche where euer he schal take hym: hurtih hym/ and
 he tropih (or vomeh) & beetih to gedit wiþ teeh: and waxih
 drie/ and I seyde to þi disciplis þat þei schulden caste hym
 oute: and þei myzten not/ þe whiche answerynge to hem:
 seyde/ a pou schrewide generacōn & oute of bileue: how longe
 schal I be at zou? how longe schal I suffre zou? bryngih hym
 to me/ and þei brouzten hym hym to/ and whanne he hadde
 seen hym: anone þe spirit trublide hym/ and he caste doune into
 þe erþe: walowide troþinge/ and he axide his fadir/ how myche
 of tyme it is: siþ þis þing fel to hym: and he seih fro childe-
 hede/ and ofte he haþ sente hym: and into fir & into watir: þat
 he schulde leese hym/ but & zif þou mayste any þing helpe vs:
 þou haupnge mercy on vs/ soþely ihc seih to hym/ zif þou
 mayste bileue: alle þingis ben possible to a man byleuyng/ and
 anone þe fadir of þe childe cryinge wiþ teeris seyde/ lorde I
 bileue/ helpe myn vnbilefulness/ and whanne ihc hadde seen
 þe cumpanye of puple rennyng to gedit: he manasside to þe
 vnclene spirit: seyinge to hym/ þou deaf & doumbe spirit: I
 comaunde þee: go oute fro hym: and entre not more into hym/

Mark

and he crynge and myche to braydyngge hym: wente oute fro hym/ and he is made as deade: so þat many seyden · þat he was deade/ forsoþe ih̄c holdynge his hande: lifte hym vp · & he roos// ¶ And whanne he hadde entride into an hous: his disciplis axeden hym pryuel/ whi myzten not we caste oute hym/ and he seyde to hem/ þis kynd in no þing may gon oute: no but in preyer & fastynge/ and þei gone fro þens: wente forþ into galilee · & he wolde no man wite/ he tauzte his disciplis: and seyde to hem/ for mannes sone schal be bitrayede into þe handis of men: and þei schulen slee hym/ and hym slayne: on þe þridde day schal rise azen/ and þei knewen not þe worde: and dredde for to are hym// ¶ And þei camen to capbar-naum/ whiche whanne he was in þe hous: aride hem/ what tretiden zee in þe weye: and þei weren stille/ soþely þei disputiden amonge hem in þe weye: who of hem schulde be more/ and he sittynge clepide þe twelue: and seiþ to hem/ zif any wole be þe firste amonge zou: he schal be þe laste · & mynysstre (or seruaunt) of alle/ and he takynge a childe: ordeynede hym in þe mydel of hem/ whom whanne he had biclippide: he seiþ to hem/ who euer schal receyue one of suche children in my name: he receyueþ me/ and who euer receyueþ me · he receyueþ not me alone: but hym þat sente me/ Toon answeride to hym: seyinge/ mayster we seen sum one for to caste oute sendis in þi name · þe whiche sueþ not vs: and we hane forbeden hym/ soþely ih̄c seiþ to hym/ nyl zee forbede hym/ þer is no man þat doih̄ vertue in my name: and may soone speek euyl of me/ forsoþe he þat is not azenes vs: is for vs/ soþely who euer schal ȝpue dryncke to zou a cuppe of colde water in my name · for zee ben of crist: trewely I seye to zou · he schal not leese his meede/ and who euer schal sclaundre one of þes litil bileupnge in me: it is good to me þat a mylnestone of an asse · were done aboute his necke · and were sente into þe see/ and zif þin hande sclaundre þee: kitte awey/ it is good to þee · feble to entre into lijf: þanne haupnge two handis go into belle ·
into

Mark

into fyr þat neuer schal be quenchide/ wher þe worme of hem dieþ not: and þe fyr is not quenchide/ and zif þi foot sclaundre þee: kitte it of/ it is good to þee for to entre crokide into euerlastyngge liif: þan haupyngge two feet to be sente into helle fyr: þat neuer schal be quenchide/ where þe worme of hem dieþ not: & þe fyr is not quenchide/ þat zif þin yze sclaundre þee: caste it oute/ it is good to þee to entre gogil yzede into þe rewme of god: þan haupyngge two yzen for to be sente into helle fyr/ where þe worme of hem dieþ not: & þe fyr is not quenchide//

¶ Forsoþe euery man schal be saltide (or made sauer) wiþ fyr: & euery slayne sacrifice schal be saueride wiþ salte/ salte is good þing/ þat zif salte be unsauery: in what þing schulen zee make it sauer? haue zee salte in zou: and haue zee pees amonge zou//



And ihc risynge vp fro þens: came into þe endis of Jude ouer iordan/ and estefone þe cumpanye of puple camen to gedit to hym/ and as he was wonte: estefone he tauzte hem/ and pharisees comynge nyz ariden hym/ zif it be leueful to a man for to leue (or forsake) his wiif: temptynge hym/ and he answerynge: seih to hem/ what comaundide moyses to zou: þe whiche seyden/ moyses suffride to write a libil of forsakynge: and to forsake/ to whom ihc answerynge: seih/ to þe hardenelle of zoure herte: moyses wrote to zou þis precepte/ forsoþe fro þe bigynnyngge of creature: male & female god made hem/ and he seyde/ for þis þing a man schal leue fadir & modir: and schal cleue to his wife: & þei schulen be two in one fleysche/ and so now þei ben not two: but one fleysche/ þerfore þat þing þat god ioynede to gedit: no man departe//

¶ And estefone in þe hous: his discipulis ariden hym of þe same þing/ and he seih to hem/ who euer schal leue his wiif & wedde anoper: he doih auoutrie vpon hir/ and zif þe wiif schal leue hir housbonde: & be weddide to anoper: sche doih auoutrie/ and þei offreden to hym lital children: þat

Mark

þat he schulde touche hem/ soþely disciplis þretiden to me
 offrynge/ whom whan ihc hadde seen: he bare heuply (or vn
 worþily) • & seiþ to hem/ suffre zee litil children to come to
 me: and forbede zee hem not/ forsoþe of suche is þe kyngdom
 of god/ treuely I seye to zou • who euer schal not receyue þ
 kyngdom of god as þis litil childe: he schal not entre into it
 and he biclippyng hem & puttyng handis vpon hem blessid
 hem/ ¶ And whanne ihc was gone oute in þe weye: a mar
 rennyng bifore: þe knee bowide: preyede hym seyng/ good
 mayster what schal I do • þat I receyue euer lastyng lif: for
 soþe ihc seyde to hym/ what seyst þou me good? no man good
 no but god al one/ þou hast knowen þe comaundementis/ do
 þou none auoutrie • flee not • steel not • seye not false witness
 yng • do no fraude • worschip þi fadir & modir/ and he an
 sweryng: seiþ to hym/ mayster I haue kepte alle þes þingis:
 fro my yowþe/ soþely ihc bihelde hym/ and he seyde to hym/
 one þing sayliþ to þee/ go • selle what euer þingis þou hast • &
 gyue to pore men: and þou schalt haue tresoure in heuene • &
 come þou sue me/ þe whiche made sorowful in þe worde: wente
 aweye mournyng/ forsoþe he was haupng many possessiouns/
 and ihc biholdyng aboute: seiþ to his disciplis/ how harde
 þei þat hane money: schulen entre into þe kyngdom of god/
 forsoþe þe disciplis weren astonyede in his wordis/ and ihc
 estefones answeryng: seiþ to hem/ zee litil sones • how harde
 þing is it men trisyng in richessis: for to entre into þe kyng
 dom of god/ it is lizter (or esier) a camel for to passe þourgh a
 nedlis yze: þan a riche man for to entre into þe kyngdom of
 god/ whiche wondriden more at hem self seyng/ and who may
 be made saaf: and ihc biholdyng hem: seiþ to hem/ anentis
 men it is impossible: but not anentis god/ for alle þingis ben
 possible anentis god// ¶ And aftirwarde petre bigan for to
 seye to hym/ lo we hane lefte alle þingis: and hane suede þee/
 Ihc answeryng: seiþ/ treuely I seye to zou • þer is no man
 þat schal leue hous or breþeren • or sistris • or fadir or modir •
or

Mark

or sones or seeldis for me & for þe gospel • þe whiche schal not take an hundridesolde so myche nowē in þis tyme • housis & breheren & sistris & modris & sones & seeldis wiþ persecuciōns; and in þe worlde to comynge euerlastynge liif/ forsoþe many schulen be þe firste; þe laste/ & þe laste þe firste// ¶ Forsoþe þei weren in þe weye steþzinge to irlm̄ & ih̄c wente bifore hem; and þei wondriden/ and solowynge dreedden/ and estesone ih̄c takynge to twelue; bigan for to seye to hem • what þingis weren to come to hym/ for lo we steþzen to irlm̄; and mannes sone schal be bitrayede to prynces of pristis & to scribis & to eldre men; and þei schulen dampne hym by deþ/ and þei schulen bitake hym to heþene men • and þei schulen scorne hym • & dispite hym • & beet hym • & þei schulen sleehym; and in þe þridde day he schal rise azen/ and James & Joon zebedees sones; comen nyȝ to hym seyinge/ mayster we wolen þat what euer we schulen are; þou do to vs/ and he seyde to hem/ what wolen zee þat I do to zou; and þei seyden ȝyue to vs þat we sitte one at þi rizt halfe • & þat oþer at þi lifte • in þi glorie/ forsoþe ih̄c seiþ to hem/ zee witen not what zee schulen are/ mowne zee drynke þe cuppe whiche I am to drynke; or be waschen wiþ þe baptysm in whiche I am baptiside; and þei seyden to hym we mowne/ soþely ih̄c seiþ to hem; treuely zee schulen drynke þe cuppe þat I drynke & zee schulen be waschen wiþ þe baptysm in whiche I am baptiside/ soþely for to sitte at my rizt halfe; is not myn for to ȝyue to zou • but to whom it is ordeynyde// ¶ And þe ten herynge hadden indignaciō of James & Joon/ soþely Ih̄c clepyng hem; seiþ to hem/ zee witen þat þei þat seemen (or ben seyn) to haue pryncchode of folkis; lordeschipen of hem • & þe prynces of hem haue power of hem/ forsoþe it is not so in zou • but who euer schal wole be made more; schal be zoure mynystre/ and who euer schal wole be firste in zou; schal be seruaunt of alle/ for whi and mannes sone came not þat it schulde be mynystride to hym; but þat he schulde mynystre • & ȝyue his soule azen byinge for manye// ¶ And

Mark

¶ And þei camen to Jericho/ and hym goinge forþ fro Jericho
 & his disciplis & a ful myche cumpanye of puple: þe sone of
 thymey barthymeus blynde: satte biðdis þe wepe beggyng/
 þe whiche whan he had herde · for it is ih̄c of nazareth: bygan
 for to crie & seye/ Jhū þe sone of dauid: haue mercy on me/
 and manye pretiden hym: þat he schulde be stille/ and he criede
 myche more/ Jhū þe sone of dauid: haue mercy on me/ and
 ih̄c stondynge comaundide hym for to be clepide/ and þei cle-
 piden þe blynde man: seyinge to hym/ be þou of better herte/
 rise vp: he clepith þee/ þe whiche his cloþe caste aweye: sirt-
 ynge came to hym/ and ih̄c answerng: seyde to hym/ what
 wolte þou I do to þee? þe blynde man seyde to hym mayster
 þat I se/ soþely ih̄c seyde to hym · go: þi seih þaþ made þee
 saaf/ and anone he sizer and suede hym in þe wepe//

C^m 11^m



And whanne ih̄c came nyȝ to ierlm̄ & to bethanye to þe
 mounte of olyuete · he sente two of his disciplis · &
 seih to hem/ go zee to þe castel þat is azenes zou/
 and anone zee entrynge in þidir: schulen fynde a
 colte tizede · on þe whiche none of men sate zit/ vnbynde zee
 & brynge hym/ and zif any schal seye any þing to zou: seye zee
 þat he is nedeful to þe lorde · & anone he schal leue hym þidir/
 and þei goinge forþ: founden a colte bounden bifore þe zate
 wiþ outhen forþ in þe metynge of two weyes: and þei vnbounden
 hym/ and summe of men stondynge þere: seyden to hem · what
 done zee · vnbyndynge þe colte? & þei seyden to hym: as ih̄c
 comaundide hem/ and þei lesten hem/ and þei brouzten þe
 colte to Jhū · & þei puttiden to hym here cloþes: and ih̄c satte
 vpon hym/ forsoþe manye strewiden here cloþes in þe wepe/
 soþely oþer men kuttiden botwis fro trees: and strewiden in
 þe wepe/ and þei þat wenten biforne/ & þat sueden: crieden
 seyinge/ osanna · bleside is he þat comeþ in name of þe lorde/
 bleside þe kyngdom þat comeþ of oure sadir dauid: osanna in
 þezþes// ¶ And he entride into ierlm̄ into þe temple · and alle
 þingis

Mark

þingis seen aboute whanne þe houre was now euenyng: he
 wente into bethanye wip twelue/ and anoper day when he
 wente oute of bethanye: he hungride/ and whanne he had seen
 a fige tree afer hauyng leeuës: he came zif happely he schulde
 fynde any þing þerinne/ and whanne he came to it * he sonde
 noþing * outaken leeuës/ for it was no tyme of figis/ and ihc
 answerynge seyde to it/ now no more wipouten ende: any man
 ete fruyte of þee/ & his disciplis herden: and þei camen to
 ierlm// ¶ And whanne he had entride into þe temple: he bigan
 for to castie oute men sellyng & byinge in þe temple/ and he
 turnyde vpsodoune þe bordis of chaungers: and þe chapers
 of men sellyng culuers/ and he suffride not þat any schulde
 bere a vessel þourgh þe temple/ and he tauzte hem seyng/
 wher it is not writen * for myn hous schal be clepide a hous of
 preyinge to alle folkis/ forsoþe zee hane made it a denne of
 þeefes/ þe whiche þing herde * þe princis of pristis & scribis
 souzten how þei schulden leese hym * forsoþe þei dredden hym *
 for al þe cumpanye of puple wondride on his techyng/ and
 whanne euenyng was made: he wente oute of þe cytee/ and
 whanne þei passiden erly: þei sizen þe fige tree made drie fro
 the rootis/ and petre hauyng mynde: seyde to hym/ mayster
 lo þe fige tree whom þou cursidist: haþ driede vp/ and ihc an-
 swerynge seiþ to hym/ hane zee þe seiþ of god/ trewely I seye
 to zou * þat who euer seiþ to his hil * take & sende þee into þe
 see & doutiþ not in his herte but bileueþ: for what euer seye be
 it made: it schal be made to hym/ þerfore I seye to zou * all
 þingis whateuer þingis zee preyinge schulen are: bileue zee
 þat zee schulen take * & þei schulen come to zou/ and whanne zee
 schulen stonde for to preye: forzþue zee zif zee hane any þing
 azenes any man * þat and zoure fadir þat is heuenes forzþue
 to zou zoure synnes/ þat zif zee schulen not forzþue: neþer
 zoure fadir þat is in heuenes schal forzþue to zou zoure synnes//
 ¶ And eftesones þei comen to ierlm and whanne he walkide
 into þei temple: he hizest pristis & scribis & eldre men comen
nyz

Mark

nyz to hym • & seyn to hym/ in what power doist thou þes þingis/ or who ȝaue to þee þis power/ þat thou do þes þingis/ forsoþe Ihc̄ answerynge/ seih to hem/ and I schal are ȝou one worde • & answeren ȝee to me/ and I schal seye to ȝou in what power I do þes þingis/ wheþer was þe baptysm of Ioon/ of heuene or of men/ answeren ȝee to me/ and þei þouȝten wiþinne þemselu/ seyinge/ ȝif we schulen seye of heuene/ he schal seye to vs/ whi þerfore bileuen ȝee not to hym/ ȝif we schulen seye of men/ we dredden þe puple/ for alle men hadden ioon/ for he was verreyly a prophete/ and þei answerynge/ seyn to ihu/ we witten neuer/ and ihc̄ answerynge/ seith to hem/ neþer I seye to ȝou in what power I do þes þingis//

C^m 12^m



and ihu bigan to speek to hem in parablis/ a man plauntide a vynezerde • & putte aboute it an hegge • & dalse a lake & bildide a toure • & hijride it to erþe tiliers/ and wente forþe in pilgrymage/ and he sente to þe erþe tiliers in tyme a seruaunt þat he schulde receyue of þe fruyte of þe vynezerde • at þe erþe tiliers/ þe whiche taken/ beeten hym • & lesten hym voyde/ and estelones he sente to hem anoper seruaunt/ and þei woundiden hym in þe beede • & punyschiden wiþ chydyngis (or reprouyngis)/ and estelones he sente anoper/ and þei slowen hym/ and oþer moo • beetynge summe/ but sleinge oþer/ þerfore ȝit he haupinge a sone moſte derworþe/ and to hem he sente hym þe lasse seyinge/ for by hap þei schulen schame my sone (or drede wiþ reuerence)/ forsoþe þe tenauntis seyd to hemself (or togedir)/ þis is þe eyre/ come ȝee flee we hym/ & þe heritage schal be ouren/ and þei takynge hym • castiden oute wiþ outen þe vynezerde/ and slowen/ þerfore what schal þe lorde of þe vynezerde do/ he schal come & leese þe tenauntis/ & ȝyue þe vynezerde to oþer/ wher ȝee hane not red þis scripture/ þe soon whiche men bildyng haue dispiside/ þis is made into þe heed of þe corner/ þis þing is made of þe lorde/ and is wondirful in oure ȝzen/ and þei

Mark

hei souzten for to holde hym: and hei dredden he cumpanyes of
 puple/ soþely hei knewen for to hem he seyde his parable/ and
 hym leste: hei wenten aweye// And hei senten to hym summe of
 þe pharisees & herodians: for to take hym in worde/ þe whiche
 comynge: seyn to hym/ mayster we witen for þou art soþefast:
 and reckist not of any man/ soþely neþer þou seest into þe face
 of man: but techest þe weye of god in treuþe/ is it leueful for to
 ȝyue tribute to cesar: or we schulen not ȝyue? þe whiche wi-
 tyngge here pryue falsenesse: seih to hem/ what tempten zee me?
 brynge zee to me a penye þat I se/ and hei offreden (or token) to
 hym: & he seih/ whos is his ymage: & þe intwertyngge? þei seyn
 to hym/ cesars/ forsoþe ih̄c answerynge: seih to hem/ þerfore
 zilde zee to cesar: þat ben of cesar: and to god þo þingis þat ben
 of god/ and alle wondren on hym// And saduceis þat seyn no
 resurreccōn to be: comen to hym & axiden hym seyinge/ mayst-
 ter moytes wrote to vs þat zif þe broþer of a man were deade
 & leste a wiif & leste not sones: his broþer schal take his wiif:
 & reyse vp seed to his broþer/ þerfore seuene breþeren weren:
 & þe firste took a wiif & is deade: no seede leste/ and the se-
 counde took hire & he is deade: and neþer þis leste seede/ and
 þe þridde also/ and seuene taken hire: & lesten not seed/ and
 þe womman laste of alle is deade/ þanne in þe resurreccōn
 whan þei schulen rise azen: whos wife of þes schal sche be?
 soþely seuene hadden hir wife/ and ih̄c answerynge: seih to
 hem/ wher zee erren not þerfore: not knowyngge scriptures
 neþer þe vertue of god? forsoþe whanne þei schulen rise azen
 fro deade men: neþer þei wedden ne ben weddide: but þei
 schulen be as aungels of god in heuenes/ soþely of deade men:
 þat þei risen azen zee haue not red in the booc of moytes on
 þe butsche: how god seyde to hym seyinge/ I am god of abra-
 ham: & god of ysaac & god of iacob/ he is not god of deade men:
 but god of lyuyng men/ þerfore zee erren myche/ And one of
 þe scribis þat had herde hem aringe to gedir: came nyz/ and
 seinge þat he had wel answeride hem: axide hym whiche was

Mark

þe firſte maundement of alle/ ih̄c anſweride to hym: þat þe firſte of alle maundementis is/ here iſſel: þe lorde þi godis one/ and þou ſchalte loue þe lorde þi god of al þin herte · & of alle þi ſoule · & of al þi mynde · & of al þi vertue (or myzte)/ þis is þe firſte maundement · forſoþe þe ſecounde is lijk to þis/ þou ſchalt loue þi neyzebore as þi ſelf/ þer is none oþer maundement more þan þis/ and þe ſcribeſeiþ to hym/ mayſter in treuþe þou haſt wel ſeyde: for one god is/ and þere is none outaken hym/ and þat he be louyde of al herte & of al þouzte (or mynde) · & of al vnderſtondyng · & of al þe ſoule · & of al þe ſtrengþe · & to loue þe neyzebore as hym ſelf: is more þan al brent offeringis & ſacrificis/ ih̄c forſoþe ſeinge þat he had anſweride wiſely: ſeyde to hym/ þou art not fer fro þe kyngdom of god/ and nowe no man durſte are hym more/ and ih̄c anſwerynge ſeyde: techyng in þe temple: þerfore how ſeyn ſcribis · criſte for to be þe ſone of dauyd: to whom dauyd hym ſelf in þe holy goſt ſeyde/ þe lorde ſeyde to my lorde: ſitte on my rizt halfe: til I putte myn enemyes þe ſtool of þi feet/ þerfore dauyd hymſelf ſeiþ hym lorde: and wher of is he his ſone? and myche cumpanye: gladly herde hym/ and he ſeyde to hem in hiſ techyng/ be zee war of ſcribis þat wolen wandre in ſtoolis · & be ſalutide in þe chepyng · & ſitte in þe ſynagogis in þe firſte chayers · & in þe firſte ſittyng places in ſopers: þe whiche deuouren þe houſis of widowis vnder coloure of longe preyers/ þei ſchulen take lenger doom// ¶ And ih̄c ſittyng azen þe treſorie · bihelde how þe cumpanye of puple caſtide money into þe treſorie/ and many riche men caſtiden many þingis/ ſoþely whanne one pore widowe had comen: ſche ſente two mynutis · þat is a ſerþinge/ and hiſ diſciplis clepide to gedir: he ſeiþ to hem/ treuely I ſeye to zou for þis pore widowe ſente more þan alle þat ſenten into þe treſorie/ ſoþely alle ſenten of þat þing: þat was plenteuouſe to hem/ but þis of hire myſepþe · ſente alle þingis þat ſche had: alle hire lyuelode//

And

Mark



And whanne he wente oute of þe temple: one of his C^m 13^m
 disciplis seyde to hym/ mayster: biholde what ma-
 ner stones: and what maner bildyngis/ and he an-
 swerynge: seih to hym/ seest þou alle þes grete bild-
 yngis? þer schal not be lefte a stoon vpon a stoon: þe whiche
 schal not be distrupede/ and whanne he satte in þe mounte of
 olyuete azenes þe temple: þei axiden hym by hem self * petir
 & James & andrewe/ seye þou to vs: whanne þes þingis schu-
 len be made: and what token whanne alle þes þingis schulen
 bygynne * for to be endide/ and ihc answerynge: bigan for
 to seye to hem/ se zee þat no man deceyue zou/ for many schu-
 len come in my name: seyinge/ for I am: and þei schulen de-
 ceue manye/ soþely whanne zee schulen heere bataylis and
 oppynyouns of batayls: drede zee not/ forsoþe it bihoueh þes
 þingis for to be done but not zit anone þe ende/ for folc schal
 rise vpon folc * & retwme vpon retwme * & erþe mouynge schal
 be by places & hunger/ bigynnyngis of sorowis (ben) þes
 þingis/ soþely se zee zou self/ for þei schulen take zou in coun-
 seylis: & zee schulen be beten in synagogis/ and zee schulen
 stonde bifore kyngis & domesmen for me into witnessyng to
 hem/ and into alle folkis * & it bihoueh firste þe gospel to be
 prechide/ and whanne þei schulen leede zou bitrayinge: nyl
 zee þenke what zee schulen speke/ but speke zee þat þing þat
 schal be zouen to zou in þat houre/ soþely zee ben not spek-
 ynge: but þe hooly gost/ forsoþe a broþer schal bitray a broþer
 into deþ: and þe fadir þe sone/ and sones schulen rise to gedir
 azenes fadirs & moders: & punysche hem by deþ/ and zee schu-
 len be in haat to alle men: for my name/ but he þat schal suf-
 teyne (or suffre) into þe ende: þis schal be saaf// ¶ Forsoþe
 whanne zee schulen se þe abhomynacōn of discoumfort stond-
 ynge wher it owih not: vndirstonde he þat reedih/ þanne
 þei þat ben in Jude: fle into hillis/ and he þat aboue þe roof:
 come not doune into þe hous/ neþer entre he: þat he take any
 þing

Mark

þing of his hous/ and he þat schal be in þe seelde: turne not
azen biþynde for to take his cloop/ soþely wo to hem þat ben
wiþ childe & norischynge in þo dayes/ þerfore prepe zee þat
þei ben not done in wynter// ¶ forsoþe þe ilke dayes of tribu-
lacoñ schulen besuche · whiche maner weren not fro þe bigyn-
nyng of creature · þe whiche god made til now: neþer þei
schulen be/ and no but þe lorde had breggide þo dayes: al
slepscche (or mankynde) · had not been saaf/ but for þe chosen
whom he chees: þe lorde haþ breggide þe dayes (or made
shorte)/ and þanne zif any man schal sepe to zou · lo heere is
crist · lo þer: bileue zee not/ for false cristis & false prophetis
schulen rise vp: and schulen gyue tokenes & grete wondris · to
deceyue zif it may be done: zhe þe chosen/ þerfore se zee: lo I
haue bifore seyde to zou alle þingis/ but in þo dayes astir þat
tribulacoñ: þe sunne schal be made dirke · & þe mone schal not
gyue hir schynnyng & sterres of heuenes schulen be fallynge
doun · & vertues þat ben in heuenes schulen be mouede/ and
þanne þei schulen se mannes sone comynge in cloudis of he-
uene: wiþ greet vertue & glorie/ and þanne he schal sende his
aungels & gedir his chosen fro soure wyndis/ fro þe lowest
þing of erþe: vnto the hizest þingis of heuene// ¶ forsoþe of
þe fige tree lerne zee þe parable/ whanne now his braunche
schal be tendre · & leues ben sprungen oute: zee witen for
somer is in the nerte/ so & whanne zee schulen se alle þes þin-
gis be made: wite zee þat it is in þe nerte in þe dore/ treuely
I sepe to zou for þis generacoñ schal not passe awepe: tille alle
þes þingis ben done/ heuene & erþe schulen passe: forsoþe my
wordis schulen not passe/ treuely of þat daye or houre · no man
woot/ neþer aungels in heuene · neþer þe sone: no but þe fa-
dir/ so zee · wake zee · & prepe zee · soþely zee witen not whan
tyme is/ for as a man þe whiche is gone fer in pilgrymage ·
sette his hous · & zawe to his seruauntis power of euery werke:
and comaundide to þe porter · þat he schulde wake/ þerfore
wake zee/ forsoþe zee witen not whanne þe lorde of þe hous
comeþ

Mark

comeh/ in þe euen or in mydnyzt • or in cockis crowynge: or
in þe mornynge/ lest þat whanne he schal come sodeynly: he
fynde zou slepynge/ forsoþe þat þat I seye to zou • I seye to
alle: wake zee//

Forsoþe paske & þe feest of þerfe looues • was astir C^m 14^m
þe secounde daye • & þe hizest pristin & scribis souzten
how þei schulden holde (crist) wiþ gile & slee hym/
soþely þei seyden not in þe feest day: lest parauen-
ture noyse were made in þe puple/ and whanne he was at be-
thane in þe hous of symount leprouse & reside: a womman
comynge haunþe a bore of precious oynement spikanarde/
and þe bore broken: (sche) hilde oute on his heede/ forsoþe
þere weren summe berynge vntowpily (or heuely) wiþinne
hem self: and seyinge/ wherto is þis losse of oynement made:
for þis oynement myzte haue ben solde: more þan for þre
hundride pens: and be zouen to pore men/ and þei groyneden
into hire/ soþely ihc seyde/ suffre zee hir/ what ben zee heuye
to hir? sche hap wrouzt a good werke in me/ for euer zee
schulen haue pore men wiþ zou • & whanne zee schulen wille •
zee mowne do wel to hem/ forsoþe zee schulen not euermore
haue me/ sche dide þat sche had/ sche bifore come for to an-
oynte my body: into byrþinge/ treuely I seye to zou • wher
euer þis gospel schal be prechide in al þe worlde: and þat þis
womman hap done: schal be tolde into mynde of hire/ and
Judas scarioth one of þe twelue • went to þe hizest pristin:
þat he schulde bitraye hym to hem/ þe whiche berynge ioy-
zedens: and bihizte hem to zþue hym money/ and he souzte
how he schulde bitraye hym couenably/ and þe firste day of
þerfe looues • whanne paske was offride: his disciplis seyn to
hym/ whidir wolte þou we gone & make reedy to þee: þat þou
ete paske? and he sendiþ two of his disciplis: and seiþ to hem/
go zee into þe cytee • and a man berynge a galoune of water:
schal renne to zou • (or come azenes zou) • sue zee hym whider
euer

Mark

euer he schal entre: seye zee to þe lorde of þe hous · for þe
mayster seih/ where is my fullillyng or (etyng) place? where
I schal ete paskē wiþ my disciplis? & he schal schewe to zou a
greet soupyng place strewide: and here make zee redy to vs/
and his disciplis wenten forþ · & comen into þe cytee: and
founden as he had seyde to hem · & þei maden reedy pask/
soþely euene made: he came wiþ twelue/ and hem sittynge at
þe mete and etynge: ih̄c seih treuely I seye to zou · for one of
zou þat etih wiþ me: schal bitraye me/ and þei bygunnen for
to be soory & to seye eche by hym self/ wher I? þe whiche seih
to hem/ one of þe twelue · þat puttih in þe hande wiþ me in
þe plater/ and soþely mannes sone goih: as it is writen of hym/
forsoþe wo to þat man by whom mannes sone schal be bitray-
ede/ it were good to hym: zif þe ilke man had not ben borne/
and hem etynge: ih̄c took breed/ and blessynge brake to hem
& seih/ take zee/ þis is my body/ and þe cuppe taken: he doinge
graces · ʒaue to hem/ and alle drynken þerof/ and he seih to
hem/ þis is my blood of þe newe testament: þe whiche schal
be schēd oute for manye/ treuely I seye to zou · for nowe I
schal not drynke of þis fruyte of vyne: til into þat day · whan
I schal drynke it newe in þe rewme of god/ and þe ympne (or
herynge) seyde: þei wenten oute into þe hil of olyues/ and
ih̄c seih to hem/ alle zee schulen be sclaunderide in me: in þis
nyzt/ for it is writen/ I schal smyte þe scheparde: and þe
scheep of þe flocke schulen be disparplide/ but aftir þat I schal
risen azen: I schal go bifore zou into galilee/ forsoþe petre
seih to hym/ and zif alle schulen be sclaunderide: but not I/
and ih̄c seih to hym/ treuely I seye to þee · for þou to day bi-
fore þat þe cocke in þis nyzt twyes ʒyue his voyce: þries þou
art to denye me/ and he spak more/ and zif it bihoue me for to
dye togedir wiþ þee: I schal not denye þee/ soþely lijk maner
and alle seyden/ and þei comen into þe place · to whom þe
name gethsamany · & he seih to his disciplis sitte zee here: þe
while I preye/ and he takis petre & James & Joon wiþ hym:
and

Mark

and biganne for to drede & to heuye/ and he seih to hem/ my soule is sorowfultil to þe deþ/ susteyne zee (or abide zee) heere/ and preye zee wiþ me/ and whanne he had gone forþ a litil he fel doune on þe erþe & preyede/ þat zif it myzte be • þe houre schulde passe fro hym/ and he seide sadir alle þingis ben possible to þee/ turne fro me þis cuppe/ but not þat I wole/ but þat þou/ and he came & fonde hem slepyng/ and he seih to petre/ Symount slepist þou/ myztist þou not wake wiþ me one houre/ wake zee & preye zee/ þat zee entre not into temptacōn/ forsoþe þe spirit is reedy/ but þe sleysche sijk/ and eftesone he goinge/ preyede þe same wordis seyinge/ and he turnyde azen eftesone/ fonde hem slepyng/ soþely here yzen weren greuyde • & þei knewen not what þei schulden answere to hym/ and he come þe þridde tyme/ and seih to hem/ slepe zee now & reste zee/ soþely it sufficiþ/ þe houre cometh/ lo mannes sone schal be bitrayede into handis of synful men/ rise zee/ go we/ lo he þat schal bitraye me is nyz// ¶ And zit hym spekynge/ Judas scarioth one of þe twelue/ came/ and wiþ hym myche cumpayne wiþ swerdis & staues • sente fro þe hizest pristin & scribis & fro þe eldre men/ forsoþe þe traytour had zouen to hem a token/ seyinge/ whom euer I schal kisse/ he it is • holde zee hym & leede zee warly (or queyntly)/ and whanne he came/ anone he comynge to hym • seih/ mayster/ and he kistide hym/ and þei leyden hondis into hym/ and helden hym/ soþely one of þe men stondynge aboute • leedyng oute a swerde/ smote þe seruaunt of þe hizest prist • & kutte of to hym an eere/ and ih̄c answerynge/ seih to hem/ as a þeef zee hane gon oute wiþ swerdis and staues for to take me/ forsoþe day bi day • I was at zou techynge in þe temple/ and zee helden not me/ but þat þe scriptures ben fulfild/ þanne hym forsaken/ alle his disciplis fledden/ soþely sum zonge man cloþde wiþ sandel (or lynnen cloof) on þe bare/ suede hym • & þei helden hym/ and þe lynnen cloof forsaken/ he nakiden fledde aweye fro hem/ and þei ledden ih̄u to þe hizest prist/ and alle camen
togedir

Mark

togedir into one: þe priſtis & ſcribis & eldre men/ forſoþe
petre ſuede hym aſer til to wiþinne into þe halle of þe hiȝeſt
priſt/ and he ſate wiþ þe mynyſtris/ and warmyde hym at
þe fiȝr/ forſoþe the hiȝeſt priſtis & alle þe counſepl · ſouȝten
witneſſynge azenes ihū: þat þei ſchulden ȝue hym to deþ:
neþer þei ſounden/ ſoþely manȝe ſeyden falſe witneſſynge
azenes hym: and þe witneſſyngeſ weren not couenable/ and
ſumme riſynge: ſouȝte falſe witneſſynge azenes hym ſeyinge/
for we hane herde hym ſeyinge/ I ſchal vndo þis temple made
wiþ handiſ · & aſtir þe þridde day I ſchal bilde anoþer: not
made wiþ handiſ/ & þe witneſſynge of hem was not couena-
ble/forſoþe þe hiȝeſt priſt rȝſynge vp into þe myȝle: aride hym
ſeyinge/ anſweriſt þou not any þing · to þo þingis þat ben
putte to þee of þeſ? ſoþely he was ſille: and no þing anſwer-
ide/ eſteſone þe hiȝeſt priſt aride hym: and ſeyde to hym/ art
þou criſt þe ſone of bleſſide god? ſoþely ihc ſeyde to hym/ I
am/ and ȝee ſchulen ſe manneſ ſone ſittynge on þe riȝthalfe
of þe vertue of god: and comynge in cloudiſ of heuene/ forſoþe
þe hiȝeſt priſt kuttynge hiſ cloþeſ: ſeiþ/ what ȝit deſiren ȝee
witneſſiſ? ȝee hane herde blaſfemye/ what ſeemeth to ȝou? þe
whiche alle condempnyde hym: for to be gilty of deþ/ and
ſumme bigunnen for to biſpitte hym & hid hiſ ȝzen · and ſmyte
hym wiþ buſſetiſ · & ſeþe to hym/ prophecy þou/ and þe my-
nyſtriſ beeten hym wiþ buſſetiſ/ and whanne petre was in þe
halle byneþen: one of þe hande maydens of þe hiȝeſt priſt came/
and whanne ſche hadde ſeen petre warmynge hym: ſche bi-
holdynge ſeiþ/ and þou were wiþ ihū of nazereth/ and he de-
nyede ſeyinge/ neþer I woot · neþer I haue knowen: what
þou ſeiſt/ and he wente forþ biſore þe halle: and anone þe
cocke crewe/ eſteſoneſ forſoþe whanne anoþer hande mayden
hadde ſeen: ſche bigan for to ſeþe to men ſtondynge aboute ·
for þiſ iſ of hem/ and he eſteſone denyede/ and aſtir a litil · &
eſteſone þat ſtoden nyȝ: ſeyden to petre/ verrepleȝ þou art of
hem/ for whi þou art of galilee/ ſoþely he bigan for to curſe &
to

Mark

to swere: for I knowe not his man whom zee seyn/ and anone
estefones he cocke crewe/ and petre bihouzte on þe worde þat
ihū hadde seyde to hym * bifore þe cocke synge twyes: þries
þou schalt denye me/ and he bigan for to weep/ and anone þe
morne made: þe hizeste pristiis makynge counseyl wip þe eldre
men & scribis * & al þe counseyl byndynge ihu: ledde & bito-
ken to pilate//



And pilate axide hym/ art þou kyng of iewis? and C^m 15^m
he answerynge: seih to hym/ þou seyste/ and þe hi-
zest pristiis accusiden hym: in manye þingis/ pilate
forsoþe estefone axide hym seyinge/ þou answerist
not any þing/ seest þou in how many þingis þei accusen þee/
forsoþe ihc more no þing answeride: so þat pilate schulde won-
dre// ¶ Forsoþe by a solempne day he was wonte to leue to
hem one bounden: whom euer þei axiden/ forsoþe þer was he
þat was seyde barrabas þat was bounden wip fleers of men *
& þat had done manslauzter in sediciō (þat is debate in þe cy-
tee)/ and whanne þe cumpanye had stepezede vp: he bigan for
to preye * as he euer more dide to hem/ soþely pilate answer-
ide to hem & seyde/ wolen zee I leue to zou þe kyng of Iewis/
soþely he wiste þat þe hizest pristiis hadden take hym by enuþe/
forsoþe þe bischopis stireden þe cumpanye of puple: þat more
he schulde leue to hem barrabas/ forsoþe pilate answerynge:
seih to hem/ what þerfore wolen zee? I schal do to þe kyng of
iewes? and þei estefones crieden/ crucifie hym/ forsoþe pilate
seyde to hem/ soþely what of euyl haþ he done? and þei cri-
eden more: crucifie hym/ soþely pilate willynge to do inowz
to þe puple * (or to fulfille here wille): lefte to hem barrabas *
& bitoke to hem ihū smyten (or beeten) wip scourgis * þat he
schulde be crucifiede/ ¶ Forsoþe knyztis ledde hym wipinne
into þe floor of þe moot halle: and clepiden to gedit alle þe
cumpanye of knyztis * cloþiden hym wip purpur/ and þei fold-
ynge a crowne of þornis * puttiden to hym: and bigunnen for

Mark

to grete hym seyinge/ heyle kyng of iewes/ and hei smyten his
 heuede wih a reed · & bispittiden hym/ and puttynge (or bow-
 ynge) here knees: hei worschipiden hym/ and astir pat hei had-
 den scornynge hym: hei vnclopeden hym fro purpur · & clo-
 piden hym wih his clothes · & ledden hym pat hei schulden cru-
 cifie hym/ & hei constreyneden summan passynge forþ · Sy-
 mount of sirynce comynge fro þe toun · þe sadir of alisaun-
 der & ruse: pat he schulde take his crosse/ and hei ledden hym
 into a place · galgatha · pat is interpretide (or expounyde) þe
 place of caluarie/ and hei zauen hym for to drynke wyn med-
 delide wih myrre: and he took not/ and hei crucifynge hym ·
 departiden his clothes · & sendynge lotte · who what schulde
 take/ forsoþe it was þe priddde houre (pat men clepen vndren):
 and hei crucifieden hym/ and þe title of his cause was wryten:
 ihc of nazereth kyng of Jewis/ and hei crucifieden wih hym ·
 two þeefes/ one at þe rizthalse: and one at þe listehalse/ and
 þe prophete is fulfildde pat seiþ/ and he is gesside (or ordeyn-
 yde) wih wickide men/ and passynge forþ hei blasfemeden
 hym mouynge here heedis · & seyinge vath (or fy) . þou pat
 distruyest þe temple of god · & in þre dayes azen bildest it/ þou
 comynge doune fro þe crosse: make þi self saaf/ also & þe bi-
 zest pristiis scornynge hym: eche to oþer wih scribis seyden/
 crist kyng of isrl · made oþer men saaf: he may not saauē hym
 self/ come he doune nowē fro þe crosse: pat we se & bileue/
 and hei pat weren crucifiede wih hym: puttiden wronge (or
 false reprove) to hym/ and þe sirte houre (or vndrun): dirke-
 nesses ben made vpon alle erþe · til into þe nynþe houre (pat
 is noon)/ and in þe nynþe houre ihc criede wih greet voyce:
 seyinge/ heloy heloy lamazabathanye · þe whiche is interpre-
 tide · my god my god · whi (or wherto) hast þou forsaken me/
 and summe of men stondynge aboute & herynge: seyden/ lo he
 clepiþ helie/ soþely one rennyng & fyllynge a spounge wih vy-
 negre · & puttynge aboute to a reede: zauē hym drynke sey-
 inge/ suffre zee se we zif helie come: for to do hym doune/ for-
 soþe

Mark

toſe ihc a greet voyce ſente oute: diede (or ſende oute he
breepe/ and he veyle of he temple is kitte into two: fro he biz-
eſſe til to bynepe/ forſohe centurio ſeinge * whiche ſtood euen
azenes * for ſo crynge he had diede: ſeiþ/ verreyley his man
was goddis ſone/ ſohely here weren & oher wymmen * bihold-
ynge fro aſer/ amonge whiche was marye matwdeleyne & ma-
rie of James he leſſe: and he modir of Joſeph & Salome/ and
whanne ihc was in galilee: hei ſolowiden hym & mynſtreden
to hym * & manye oher wymmen * þat to gedir ſteyzeden vp
wiþ hym to ierlm// ¶ And whanne euene was now made: for
it was he euene biſore he ſaboth: Joſeph of armathie he noble
decurioune (þat hadde ten men vndir hym) came: he whiche
& he was abydyng he rewme of god/ and hardily he entride
into pilate: and aride he body of Jhu/ forſohe pilate won-
dride: zif he had now diede/ and centurio aride to (or brouzte
to): he aride zif he were now deade/ and whanne he hadde
known of centurio: he zawe he body of Jhu to Joſeph/ ſohely
ioſeph bynge ſandel (or lynnen clooþ) * & doinge hym doune:
wlappide hym in he lynnen clooþ * & putte hym in a newe ſe-
pulcre * þat was hewen in a ſtoon/ and walowide to a ſtoon:
at he mouþe of he ſepulcre//



Mary matwdeleyne forſohe & marie of Joſeph: bihelden C^m 16^m
where he was putte/ and whanne the ſaboth had
paſſide: mary matwdeleyne & marye of James & sa-
lome brouzten oynementis: þat hei compnge ſchulde
anoynte Jhu/ and ful erly in one of he woke dayes: hei camen
to he ſepulcre * he ſunne now ſprungen vp/ and hei ſeyden
togedir/ who ſchal azen turne to vs he ſtoon of he dore of he
ſepulcre? and hei byholdynge: ſizen he ſtoon walowide aweye/
forſohe it was ful greet/ and hei ingoinge into he ſepulcre:
ſizen a zonge one hilide wiþ a whijt ſtool * ſittynge at he riht-
halfe * & hei weren abayſche (or gretely aſerde)/ he whiche
ſeiþ to hem/ nyl zee drede/ zee ſeeken ihu of nazareth cruci-
fiede/

Mark

stedē/ he haþ risen/ he is not heere/ lo þe place wher þei putti-
den hym/ but go see · seye see to his disciplis & to petre/ for
he schal go bifore zou into galilee/ þere see schulen se hym/ as
he haþ seyde to zou/ and þei goinge oute/ fledden fro þe sepul-
cre/ forsoþe dreede and quakyng · had assaylyde hem/ and to
no man þei seyden any þing · forsoþe þei dredden// ¶ And
ihū rysyng ealy in þe firste day of þe wook · apperide firste to
mary magdaleyne · of whom he had caste oute seuene deuyllis/
sche goinge tolde to hem þat weren wif hym · hem wepyng
& wepyngē/ and þei heryngē þat he lyuede & was seen of hir/
bileueden not/ soþely astir þes þingis two of hem wandryngē/
he is schewide in anoter lickenesse to hem goinge into a toune/
and þei goinge tolden to oþer/ neþer þei bileueden to hem/
forsoþe at þe laste hem elleuenerestynge/ ihc apperide to hem/
and reprouede þe unbileue of hem · & þe hardenesse of hertes/
for þei bileueden not to hem þat hadden seen hym to haue
risen fro deade/ and he seyde to hem/ see goinge into al þe
worlde/ prechih þe gospel to eche creature/ he þat schal bileue
& schal be baptiside (or cristenyde/) schal be saaf/ soþely he
þat schal not bileue/ schal be dampnyde/ forsoþe þes tokenes
schulen sue hem þat schulen bileue in my name/ þei schulen
caste oute fendis · þei schulen speke wif newe tungis · þei
schulen do aweye serpentis/ and zif þei schulen dryncke any
venym (or deadeþ þing) þat bryngeþ deeth/ it schal not noye
hem/ þei schulen putte here handis vpon sick men/ and þei
schulen haue hem wel/ and soþely þe lorde Ihū astir þat he
had spoken to hem/ is taken vp into heuene · & sittih on þe
rizthalse of god/ soþely þei gon forþ · prechiden euery where ·
þe lorde worchyng wif · & confermyngē þe worde · wif signes
folowyngē//

Here

Luke

and he aungel answerynge: seyde to hym/ forsoþe I am gabriel þat stonde nyȝ bifore: and I am sente to þee for to speke & to euangelize (or schewe) to þee þes þingis/ and lo þou schalt be stille (or doumbe) * & þou schalt not mowe speek til into þe day/ in whiche þes þingis schulen be done: for þat þat þou hast not bileuede to my wordis þe whiche schulen be fulfild in here tyme/ and þe puple was abydyng zacharie: and þei wondriden for he tariede in þe temple/ forsoþe he gone oute/ myȝte not speek to hem: and þei knewen þat he had seen a visioun in þe temple/ and he was bekenyng to hem: and dwelliðe doumbe/ and it is made * as þe dayes of his office were fulfild: he wente into his hous/ forsoþe aftir þes dayes * elizabeth his wiif conseyuede * & hid hir fyue monethes * seyinge/ for so þe lord dide to me in þe dayes in whiche he bihilde for to take away my schenschip amonge men/ soþely in þe sirte moneth * þe aungel gabriel is sente fro god into a cytee of galilee * to whom þe name nazareth * to a virgyn weddide to a man * to whom þe name was Ioseph * of þe hous of dauid: and þe name of þe mayden marie/ and þe aungel gone in to hire: seyde/ heyle ful of grace * þe lord wiþ þee: bleßide þou amonge wymmen/ þe whiche whanne sche hadde herder: is turblide in his worde * & þouȝte: what maner salutacōn þis was/ and þe aungel seyde to hire/ ne drede þou marie/ soþely þou hast founden grace anentis god/ lo þou schalt conseyue in wombe & bere a sone: and þou schalt clepe his name ihc/ þis schal be greet: & he schal be clepide sone of þe hizest/ and þe lord god schal ȝyue to hym þe seet of dauid his fadir: and he schal regne in þe hous of Iacob wiþ outen ende/ and of his rewme schal be none ende/ forsoþe marie seyde to þe aungel/ on what maner schal þis þing be done: for I knowe not man/ and þe aungel answerynge: seyde to hire/ þe holy goost schal come fro aboue into þee: and þe vertue of þe hizest * schal shadowe to þee/ þerfore & þat hooly þing þat schal be borne of þee schal be clepide þe sone of god/ and lo elizabeth þi cosyn:
and

Luke

and sche haþ confeyuyde a sone in hir elde/ and þis moneþ is
þe sirte to hire þat is clepide bareyne/ for euery worde schal
not be impossible anentis god/ forsoþe marie seyde/ lo þe hande
mayden of þe lorde/ he it done to me astir þi worde/ and þe
aungel departide fro hir// ¶ Forsoþe marie risynge vp in þo
dayes wente wiþ haste into hilly places • into a cytee of Jude/
and sche entride into þe hous of zacharie/ and grette eliza-
beth/ and it is done as elizabeth herde þe salutacōn of marie •
þe zonge childe in hir wombe gladide/ and elizabeth is fulfild
wiþ þe hooly goost & criede wiþ grete voyce • & seyde/ bleffide
þou amonge wynnmen/ and bleffide þe fruyte of þi wombe/
and wher of þis þing to me/ þat þe modir of my lorde come
to me/ lo forsoþe as þe voyce of þi salutacōn is made in myn
eris/ þe zonge childe gladide in ioye in my wombe/ and bleffide
þou þat hast bileuede/ for þe ilke þingis þat ben seyde to þee
of þe lorde/ schulen be partitely done/ and marie seyde// ¶ My
soule magnyfieth þe lorde/ and my spirit haþ ful oute gladide
in god myn helpe zyuier/ for he haþ biholden þe mekenesse of
his hande mayden/ lo forsoþe of þis • alle generacōns schulen
seye me bleffide/ for he þat is myzty haþ done to me greet
þingis/ & his name is holy/ and his mercy fro kynrede into
kynrede/ to men dredynge hym/ he made myzte in his armes
he scatride proude men wiþ mynde of his herte/ he puttide
doun myzty men fro þe teet/ and enhauncide meke/ he haþ
fulfild hungry men wiþ good þingis/ & he haþ leste riche men
voyde/ he haupinge mynde of his mercy/ took vp isrl his
childe/ as he haþ spoken to oure faderis/ to abraham & to his
seed into worldis// Forsoþe marie dwellyde wiþ hire as þre
moneþes/ and turnyde azen into hire hous/ soþely þe tyme of
berynge childe is fulfild to elizabeth/ and sche childide a
sone/ and þe neyzeþors & colyns of hire herden • for þe lorde
haþ magnyfiēde his mercy wiþ hir/ & þei togedir ioyeden to
hire/ and it is done in þe eyztþe day þai camen for to circuncide
þe childe/ and þei clepiden hym zacharie by name of his fadir/
and

Luke

and his modir answerynge: seyde/ nay: but he schal be clepide ioon/ and hei seyden to hire/ for no man is in hi kyn: he is clepide by his name/ sohely hei made a signe to his fadir whom he wolde hym for to be clepide/ and he aringe a popytel: wrote seyinge/ Ioon is his name/ and alle men wondriden// ¶ Forsoþe his mouþ is openyde anone & his tunge and he spak blessinge god/ and drede is made on alle her neyzebors/ and þes wordis weren publischide vpon alle þe hilly places of Iudee/ and alle men þat herden: puttiden in here herte seyinge/ who gessist þou þis childe schal be/ and sohely þe hande of þe lorde was wip hym/ and zacharie his fadir is fulfild wip þe holy gost: and propheciede sayinge/ ¶ Blesside þe lorde god of isrl: for he haþ visitide & made redemption of his puple/ & he haþ reride to vs an horne of helpe in þe hous of dauid his childe/ as he spak by þe mouþ of seyntis: þat ben fro þe worlde his prophetis/ helpe of oure enemyes: and of þe hande of alle men þat hatiden vs/ to bi done mercy wip oure faderis: and to haue mynde of his holy testament/ þe oþe þat he swore to abraham oure fadir: to gyue hym to vs: þat we delyueride fro þe hande of oure enemyes: serue to hym wip outen drede/ in holynes & ryztwelesse biforn hym: alle oure dayes/ and þou childe schalt be clepide þe prophete of þe hizest: for þou schalt go biforn þe face of þe lorde: for to make reedy þis weyes/ for to gyue science & helpe to his puple: into remysсионe of here synnes/ by þe entraylis of mercy of oure god: in þe whiche he spryngyng vpon fro an hize: haþ visitide vs/ for to gyue lizt to hem þat saten in dirkeness & in schadowe of deþ: for to dresse oure feet into þe wey of pees/ sohely þe childe weride & was comfortide in spirit: and was in deserte til to þe day of his schewing to isrl//

Forsoþe

Luke



Ersope it is done in þo dayes a maundement wente C^m 2^m
 oute fro cesar august (or noble): þat al þe worlde
 schulde be distrynede/ þis firste distrynyng was
 made of cpyrne iustice (or keper of cirie) and alle
 men wenten þat þei schulden make professiõ or knowelech-
 ynge: eche by hym self into his cytee/ soþely & Ioseph steyzede
 vp fro galilee of þe cytee of nazareth: into Jude into þe cytee
 of daupd: þat is clepide bethlem: for þat he was of þe hous-
 meyne of daupd: þat he schulde knoweleche wiþ marie spouside
 to hym wijs wiþ childe/ soþely it is done whanne þei weren
 þer: þe dayes ben fulfild þat sche schulde bere childe/ and sche
 childide hire firste bigoten sone/ and inwolappide hym in cloþes
 & puttide hym in a cracche: for þer was not place to hym in þe
 comyn stable// ¶ And scheperdis weren in þe same cuntre:
 wakynge & kepyng þe watchis of þe nyzt: vpon here floc/ and
 lo þe aungel of þe lorde stood bisides hem: & clerenes of god
 schynnde aboute hem: and þei dredden wiþ greet drede/ and
 þe aungel seyde to hem/ nyl zee drede/ lo soþely I euangelize
 (or preche) to zou greet ioye: þat schal be to al puple/ for a
 saueour is borne to day to vs: þat is crist a lorde in þe cytee
 of daupd/ and þis a token to zou/ zee schulen fynde þe childe
 wlappide in cloþes: and putte in a cracche/ and sodeynly þer
 is made wiþ þe aungel a multitude of heuenely knyzthode:
 herpyng god & sepyng/ glorie in þe hizest þingis of god: and
 in erþe pees to men of gode wille/ and it is done þat whanne
 þe aungels passiden aweye fro hem into heuene: þe scheperdis
 spaken to gedir sepyng/ go we ouer til to bethlem: and se we
 þis worde þat is made: þe whiche þe lorde made & schewide
 to vs/ and þei hizinge camen: and founden marie & Ioseph:
 & a zonge childe putte in a cracche/ soþely þei seinge knewen
 of þe worde þat was seyde to hem of þe childe/ and alle men
 þat hadden herde wondriden: & of þes þingis þat weren seyde
 to hem of þe scheperdis/ forsoþe marie kepte alle þes wordis:

Luke

berynge to gedir in hir herte/ and he scheperdis turneden azen
glorifyinge & berynge god · in alle þingis þat þei hadden berde
& seen: as it is seyde to hem/ and aftir þe eyzte dages weren
endide · þat þe childe schulde be circumcidide: his name is cle-
pide ih̄c: þe whiche was clepide of þe aungel: bifore he was
conseyupde in wombe/ and aftir þat þe dages of purgacōn of
marie weren fullillide aftir moyses lawe: þei tooken hym into
irlm̄ · þat þei schulden offer hym to þe lorde · as it is writen
in þe lawe of þe lorde/ for euery male kynde openynge þe
wombe for to go oute: schal be clepide hooly to þe lorde/ and
þat he schulde ȝue an offerynge aftir þat it is seyde in þe lawe
of þe lorde · a payre of turturs: or two culuer briddis/ and lo
a man was in irlm̄: to whom þe name symeon/ and þis man
was iuste & dredeful abidyng þe comfort of isrl̄/ and þe holy
goſt was in hym/ & he had taken answer of þe holy goſt hym
not for to ſe deþ: no but he ſize firſte criſt of þe lorde/ and he
came into þe temple/ and whanne his eldris ledden þe childe
þat þei schulden do aftir þe cuſtom of lawe for hym: and he
toke hym into his armes: and he bleſſide god & ſeyde/ lorde
now þou leueſt þi ſeruaunt: aftir þi worde in pees/ for myn
ȝen haue ſeen: þin helpe ȝuer/ þe which þou haſt made reedy:
bifore þe face of alle puplis/ liȝt to þe ſchewynge of hepen men:
& glorie of þi puple of isrl̄// ¶ And his ſadir & his modir weren
wondrynge vpon þes þingis þat weren ſeyde of hym/ and ſy-
meon bleſſide hem: and ſeyde to marie his modir/ lo þis is
putte into fallynge & into ryſynge azen of manȝe men in isrl̄/
and into a token: to whom it ſchal be azen ſeyde/ and a ſwerde
ſchal paſſe þorow þin owne ſoule: þat þouȝtis ben ſchewide of
manȝ hertis// ¶ And anna was a prophetelle · þe douȝter of
phanuel of þe lynage of aſer/ and ſche had gone forþe in ma-
ny dages · and had lȝuede wiþ hir houſbonde ſeuen zeeris fro
hir maydenhede/ and þis was a widowe: til to fourſcore zeer
& ſoure/ þe whiche departide not fro þe temple: ſeruyng nȝt
& day to faſtyngis & beſechyngis/ and ſche þis in þe ilke houre
aboue

Luke

aboue compynge · knowelechide to þe lorde · and spac of hym to alle þat abiden þe redempcōn of isrl/ and as þei hadden partitely done alle þingis aftir þe lawe of þe lorde · þei turneden azen into galilee · into here cytee nazereth/ soþely þe childe were & was comfortide · ful of wisdom · & þe grace of god was in hym// ¶ And his eldris þat is fadir & modir wenten by alle zeeris into irlm · in þe solempe day of pask/ and whanne ihc was made of twelue zeeris · hem steyzinge vp into irlm · aftir þe custum of þe feestie day/ and þe dayes endide · whanne þei turneden azen · þe childe dwelte in irlm · and his fadir & modir knewen not/ forsoþe þei gessynge hym for to be in þe cumpanye (or felowschip) · camen þe wey (or iourney) of one day · & souzten hym amonge his colyns & knewen/ and þei not fyndynge · wenten azen into irlm · seekynge hym/ and it is done aftir þe þridde day · þei founden hym in þe temple · sit-tyng in þe mydel of doctours heryng hem & aringe/ soþely alle men þat herden hym · wondriden vpon þe prudence & answeris of hym/ and þei seinge wondriden/ and his modir seyde to hym/ sone · whi hast þou done to vs þis? lo þi fadir & I sorowynge · hane souzte þee/ and he seip to hem/ what is þat zee souzten me? wisten zee not for in þo þingis þat ben of my fadir · it bihoueh me for to be? and þei vndirfoden not þe worde · þe whiche he spac to hem/ and he came doune wip hem · & came to nazereth · & was sujet (or vndirloute) to hem/ and his modir keppe to gedir alle þes wordis · berynge to gedir in hir herte/ and ihc profitide in wisdom age & grace · anen-tis god & men//



Forsoþe in þe fiftenthe zeer of þe empire of tyberye C^m 3^m
emperour · pilate of pounceprocuryng (or kepyng)
Jude · soþely heroude prynce of þe fourþe parte of
galilee · philip forsoþe his broþer prynce of the
fourþe parte of yturie · & of þe cuntre of tracon · & lpsany
prynce of þe furþe part of abilyn · vndir þe prynces of pritis
annas

Luke

annas & caphphas: þe worde of þe lorde is made vpon ioon þe sone of zacharie in deserte/ and he came into al þe cuntre of iordan prechynge bapty[m] of penaunce into remyssion of synnes · as it is writen in þe booc of þe wordis of ysaiæ þe prophete/ þe voyce of (one) cryinge in deserte/ make zee reedy þe weye of þe lorde: make zee his paves ryzt/ eche valey schal be fulfyllide · & euery hil & hilloc schal be made lowe: and schrewide þingis schulen be into dreside þingis: and scharpe þingis into playne weyes/ and euery fleysche (or man): schal se þe helpe of god/ þerfore he seyde to þe cumpanyes · þe whiche wenten oute · þat þei schulden be baptiside of hym/ kyndelyngis of neddris who schewide to zou for to fle fro þe wrappe to comynge/ þerfore do zee worþi fructis of penaunce: and bigynne zee not for to seye · we hane a fadir abraham/ soþely I seye to zou · god is myzty for to reyle of þes stonys: þe sonys of abraham/ forsoþe now an are is putte to þe root of þe tree/ soþely euery tree not makynge good fructe · schal be kutte doune · and be sente into þe fyr/ and þe cumpanyes axiden hym: seyinge/ what þerfore schulen we do/ soþely he answerynge: seyde to hem/ he þat haþ two cootis: zye to none haupng/ and he þat haþ metis: do on þe like maner/ soþely & puplicans camen for to be baptiside: and þei seyden to hym/ mayst what schulen we do/ and he seyde to hem: do zee no þing more: þan þat is ordeynede to zou/ forsoþe & knyztis axiden hym: seyinge/ what schulen & we do/ and he seip to hem/ smyte zee wrongefuly no man · neþer make zee false chalenge: and be zee apayede wip zoure soudis/ forsoþe al þe puple gessynge · & alle men þenkyng in here hertis of ioon · lest þe parauenture he were cōst: ioon answeride · seyinge to alle men/ soþely I baptise zou in water · forsoþe a strengier þan I schal come astir me · whos I am not worþi for to vnbynde þe þwonge of his schone/ he schal baptise zou in þe hooly gost & fyr/ whos wenowynge tool in his hande · & he schal purge his corne floor · & schal gedit þe wheet into his berne: soþely þe
chaffes

Luke

chaffes he schal brenne wih fir vnquencheable/ forsope & he
monestynge manye oþer þingis euangelizide to þe puple//
¶ I sopely heroude prynce of þe fourþe parte of galilee . whanne
he was blamyde of ioon . of herodias wife of his broþer . & of
alle þe euglis þat heroude dide/ he castide to þis ouer alle . &
shutte ioon in prisoune/ forsope it is doune . whan al þe puple
was baptiside . & ihū cristenyde & prechyngē/ heuene is open-
yde . & þe holy gost came doune in bodily likenesse as a culuer
into hym/ and a voyce is made fro heuene/ þou art my der-
worþe sone/ in þee it haþ pleside to me/ and he ihc was by-
gynnyngē as of þritty zeer/ þat he was gesside þe sone of Jo-
seph/ þe whiche was of hely . þe whiche was of mathath . þe
whiche was of leui . þe whiche was of melchi/ þat was of
Jamne/ þat was of Ioseph/ þat was of mathatie/ þat was
of amos/ þat was of naum/ þat was of hely/ þat was of nagge/
þat was of mathath/ þat was of mathatie/ þat was of semey/
þat was of Ioseph/ þat was of Iuda/ þat was of Johanna/ þat
was of resa/ þat was of zorobabel/ þat was of salatiel/ þat was
of nery/ þat was of melchi/ þat was of addy/ þat was of cosan/
þat was of elmadan/ þat was of her/ þat was of ihū/ þat was
of eleazar/ þat was of Iorym/ þat was of mathath/ þat was
of leuy/ þat was of symeon/ þat was of Iuda/ þat was of Jo-
seph/ þat was of Jona/ þat was of eliachym/ þat was of mel-
cha/ þat was of menna/ þat was of mathatha/ þat was of na-
than/ þat was of dauid/ þat was of Jesse/ þat was of obeth/
þat was of booz/ þat was of salmon/ þat was of naason/ þat
was of amynadab/ þat was of aram/ þat was of esrom/ þat
was of phares/ þat was of Judas/ þat was of Iacob/ þat was
of ysaac/ þat was of abraham/ þat was of thare/ þat was of
nachor/ þat was of seruth/ þat was of ragan/ þat was of pha-
leth/ þat was of heber/ þat was of sale/ þat was of caynan/
þat was of arfarat/ þat was of sem/ þat was of noe/ þat
was of lameth/ þat was of matusale/ þat was of enok/ þat
was of iareth/ þat was of malaliel/ þat was of caynan/ þat
was

Luke

was of enos/ þat was of seth/ þat was of adam/ þat was of
god//

C^m 4^m



Forsoþe ih̄c ful of þe holy goost • turnyde azen fro ior-
dan/ and was led by þe spirit into deserte fourty
dayes/ and was temptyde by þe deupl/ and ete no
þing in þo dayes/ and þo dayes endide/ he hungride/
forsoþe þe deupl seyde to hym/ zif þou art goddis sone/ sepe to
his stoon • þat it be made breed/ and ih̄c answeyrnge to hym
seip/ it is writen/ for a man lyueþ not in oneliche breed/ but
in euery worde of god/ and þe deupl ledde hym into an hize
hil • and schewide to hym al þe rewmes of þe roundnesse of
erþe • in moment of a tyme/ and seip to hym/ I schāl zyue to
þee al þis power • & þe glorie of hem/ for to me þei ben zouen •
& to whom I wole I zyue hem/ þerfore zif þou schalt worschip
bifore me/ alle þingis schulen be þin/ and ih̄c answeyrnge/
seip to hym/ þou schalt worschip þe lorde þi god/ and to hym
al one þou schalt serue/ and he ledde hym into ierl̄m • & sette
hym on þe pynacle of þe temple/ and seyde to hym/ zif þou art
goddis sone/ sende þi self hens doune/ for it is writen/ for he
hāþ comaundide to his aungels of þee • þat þei kepe þee in alle
þi weyes/ and for in handis þei schulen take þee lest þou parauen-
ture þou herte þi foot at a stoon/ and ih̄c answeyrnge/ seip to
hym/ it is seyde/ þou schalt not tempte þe lorde þi god/ and
euery temptacōn endide/ þe sende wente aweye fro hym til to
a tyme// ¶ And ih̄c turnede azen in vertue of þe spirit • into
galilee/ and þe same wente forþe of hym/ þourgh al þe cuntre/
and he tauzt in þe synagogis of hem/ and was magnyfyede of
alle men/ and he came into nazereth where he was norischide/
and he entride astir his custum in þe saboth day into þe syna-
goge/ and roos for to reed/ and þe booc of ysaye þe prophete
is taken to hym/ and as he turnyde þe booc • he fonde a place
where it was writen/ þe spirit of þe lorde on me/ for whiche
þing he enoyntide me/ he sente me for to euangelize to pore
men/

Luke

men: for to heele contrite men in herte * & for to preche remysſioun to captyues * & ſiſte to blynde men/ and for to leeu (or delyuer) broken men into remysſion/ for to preche þe zeer of þe lorde acceptide (or pleaſant) * & þe day of retribucon (or zildynge azen)/ & whanne he hadde foldide (or cloſide) þe booc: he zawe it to þe myniſtre & ſatte/ and þe pzen of alle men in þe ſynagoge: weren biholdynge into hym/ ſohely he bigan for to ſeye to hem/ for in þis dape þe ſcripture is fulſilde in zoure eris/ and alle men zauen witneſſynge to hym * & won- driden in þe wordis of grace: þat comen forþ of his moup/ and þei ſeyden/ wher þis is not þe ſone of Joſeph? and he ſeiþ to hem/ ſohely zee ſchulen ſeye to me þis likenefſe/ leeche heele þi ſelf/ þei ſeyden/ how greet þingis hane we herde done in capharnaum: make þou & here in þi cuntre/ ſohely he ſeiþ/ trewely I ſeye to zou for no man a prophete is acceptide (or recepyuede): in his owne cuntre/ in treuþe I ſeye to zow * for manye widowis weren in þe dapes of helpe þe prophet in iſrl * whanne heuene was cloſide þre zeer * & ſire moneþes * whanne greet hungre was made in al erþe/ and to none of hem was helpe ſente * no but into ſarepta of ſydon to a womman wi- dowe/ and manye meſels weren in iſrl vnder heliſe þe pro- phete: and none of hem was clenſide no but naaman of ſirie/ and alle in þe ſynagoge herynge þes þingis: ben fulſilde wiþ wrapþe/ and þei riſen bp & caſtiden hym oute wiþouten þe cy- tee * & ledden hym to þe toppe of þe hil on þe whiche here cytee is founden * þat þei ſchulen ſende hym doune/ ſohely ihc paſſ- ynge: wente by þe mydel of hem// ¶ And he came doune into capharnaum a cytee of galilee: and þer he tauzte hem in ſabo- this/ and þei weren aſtonpede in his techynge: for his worde was in power/ and in þe ſynagoge was a man hauynge an vn- clene ſende: and he criede wiþ greet voyce ſeyinge/ ſuffre * what to vs & to þee ihu of nazareth * haſt þou comen for to leeſe vs? I woot þee þat þou art þe hooly of god/ and ihc blamyde hym ſeyinge/ ware dounbe: and go oute fro hym/ and

Luke

and whanne he sende had caste hym forþe into þe mydel
wente aweye fro hym/ and no þing noyzed hym/ and dred
made in alle men: and þei spaken to gedir seyinge/ & in ver
he comaundiþ to vnclene spiritis: and þei gone oute/ and
same was puplischide of hym * into eche place of þe cunt
fforsoþe ih̄c rþsunge of þe synagoge: entride into þe hous
symount/ soþely þe modir of symountis wise: was holden t
grete feueris/ and þei preyeden hym for hire/ and ih̄c sto
ynge vpon hir * comaundide to þe feuer * & it leste hir/ a
anone sche risynge: mynþstride to hem/ forsoþe whanne
sunne wente doune * alle þat hadde sijk men * wiþ diuer
langewischynges (or achis): ledde hem to hym/ and he pi
tyng handis to eche by hym: helide hym/ soþely sendes went
oute fro manye crynges & seyinges: for þou art þe sone of go
and he blamyng suffride hem not for to speke: for þei wiþ
hym for to be crist/ soþely þe day made * he gone oute * wen
into deserte place: and þe cumpanyes of puplis souzten hym
& þei camen til to hym: and þei helden hym þat he schulde
not go awey fro hem/ to whom he seyde/ for & to oþer cytes
it bihoueh me for to euangelize þe kyngdom of god * for þe
fore I am sente/ and he was prechyng in þe synagogis i
galilee//

C^m 5^m



Soþely it is done whanne cumpanyes of puple came
faste (or selden in) * into Ihu * þat þei schulden her
þe worde of god: and he stode biþidis þe stondyng
water of genazareth * & lize two bootis stondyng
biþidis þe stondyng water/ soþely þe fischers hadden gon
doune: and watshiden nettis soþely he steyzinge into a boo
þat was symountis: preyede hym for to leede azen a litil fro
þe lande/ and he sittyng * tauzte þe cumpanyes fro þe boot
soþely as he ceesþde for to speek: he seyde to symount/ leed
þou into an hize/ aslake zee zoure nettis into takynge/ and
Symount answeynges: seyde to hym/ comaundour we tra
ueylyng

Luke

ueplynge by al nyzt · token no þyng; but in þi worde · I schal
 leye oute þe nette/ and whanne þei hadden done þis þing;
 þei clofiden to gedir a plenteuous multitude of fischis/ for-
 soþe here nette was broken/ and þei bekenyden to felowis
 þat weren in anoter boot; þat þei schulden come & helpe
 hem/ and þei camen & fulfilden boþe þe litil bootis; so þat
 þei weren almost drenchide/ þe whiche þing whanne symount
 petre sate; he felde doune · to þe knees of ihū · seyinge/ lorde
 go oute fro me; for I am a man synner/ soþely greet wonder
 had bigon hym aboute; and alle þat weren wif hym in þe
 takyng of fischis · whiche þei token/ soþely on þe like maner ·
 James & Ioon þe sones of Zebedee · þat weren felowis of
 Symount petre/ and ihc seip to Symount/ nyl þou drede ·
 now fro þis tyme þou schalt be takynge men/ and þe bootis
 ledde vp to þe lande · alle þingis leste (or forsaken); þei sueden
 hym// ¶ And it is done whanne he was in one of þe cytees ·
 & lo a man ful of lepre · & seinge ihū & fallynge doune in to
 his face; preyede hym seying/ lorde zif þou wolte; þou myzte
 make me clene/ and ihc holdynge forþ þe hande; touchide
 hym seyinge/ I wole · be þou made clene/ and anone þe lepre
 passide aweye fro hym/ and ihc comaundide to hym þat he
 schulde seye to no man; but go · schewe þou þee to a prist · &
 offer for þi clentyng as moyses bad; into witnessynge to hem/
 soþely þe worde walkide aboute þe more of hym; and many
 cumpanyes camen togedir þat þei schulden heere; and be bi-
 hilde of here sekenesses/ forsoþe he wente into deserte & prey-
 ede// ¶ And it is done in one of dayes; and he sittynge tauzte/
 and þere weren pharisees sittynge & doctours of lawe · þat
 came of eche castel of galilee & Judee & ierlm; and þe vertue
 of þe lorde was · for to heel seeke men/ and lo men beryng
 in a bed a man þat was sijk in palestie; and þei souzte for to
 bere hym in · & putte bifore hym/ and þei myzte not fynde
 in what parte þei schulden bere hym in · for þe cumpanye of
 puple · steyzeden on þe roof · & by sclatis þei senten hym
 D doune

Luke

boune wiþ þe bed into þe mydil bifore ihū/ þe seiþ of whor
 as Ihu siþe: he seyde/ man þi synnes ben forzouen to þee/ an
 scribis & pharisees bigunnen for to þenke: seyinge/ who i
 þis þat spekiþ blasfempes/ who may forzyue synnes: no bu
 god al one/ forsoþe as ihc knewe þe pouztis of hem: he an
 swerynge · seyde to hem/ what þenken zee euyl þingis in zour
 hertis/ what is lister for to seye synnes ben forzouen to þee
 or for to seye rise vp & walke/ soþely þat zee witen for manne
 fonehah power in erþe to forzyue synnes: he seiþ to þe sijk man
 in palestie/ to þee I seye rise vp bifore hem: took þe bed in
 whiche he laye · & wente into his hous: magnyfyng god
 and greet wondre took alle: and þei magnyfyeden god/ and
 þei ben fulfildes wiþ greet drede: seyinge/ for we haue seer
 merueylous þingis to day// ¶ And aftir þes þingis ihc wente
 oute & siþe a puplican · leuy by name · sittynge at þe tolboþe:
 and he seiþ to hym/ sue þou me/ and alle þingis forsaken: he
 risynge suede hym/ and leuy made to hym a greet feest in his
 hous/ and þer was a greet cumpange of puplicans · & of oþer
 þat weren with hem: sittynge at þe mete/ and pharisees &
 scribis of hem grucchiden seyinge to his disciplis/ whi eten zee
 & dryncken wiþ puplicans & synful men/ and ihc answer-
 ynge: seiþ to hem/ þei þat ben hool haue no nede to a lecher:
 but þei þat haue euyl/ soþely I came not for to clepe iuste men:
 but synful men to penaunce/ and þei seyden to hym/ whi þe
 disciplis of Ioon fasten ofte & maken bisechynge: also & þe
 pharisees: but þi (disciplis) eten & drynken/ to whom he seiþ/
 wher zee moun make sones of þe spouse for to faste · þe while
 þe spouse is wiþ hem/ soþely dayes schulen come · whanne þe
 spouse schal be taken aweye fro hem: þanne þei schulen faste
 in þo dayes/ forsoþe he seyde to hem & a likenesse/ for no man
 sendiþ a medelynge of newe clooth: into an olde clooth/ ellis
 & he brekis þe netwe: and þe mendynge of þe newe acordiþ
 not to þe olde/ and no man sendiþ newe wyn: into olde wyn
 vessels/ ellis þe newe wyn schal breke þe wyn vessels · & þe
 wyn

Luke

wyn schal be schedde oute • & the vessels schulen perische/ but newe wyn is to be sente into newe wijn vessels/ and bothe ben kepte/ and no man drynkyng olde wijn/ wole anone newe/ soþely he seip þe olde is þe better//



Orsoþe it is done in þe secounde saboth • firste C^m 6^m
whanne he passide bi cornes/ his disciplis pluck-
iden eris • & þei frotynge wiþ handis • eten/ soþe-
ly summe of þe pharisees/ seyden to hem/ what
done zee þat • þat is not leueful in sabothis/ and ihc answer-
ynge seyde to hem/ hane zee not redde þat • þat dauyd dide
whanne he hungride • & þei þat weren wiþ hym/ how he en-
tride into þe hous of god & took looues of proposicion & ete •
& zaue to hem þat weren wiþ hym/ whiche looues it was not
leueful for to eete/ no but onely to pristin al one/ and he seyde
to hem/ for mannes sone is lord/ zhe of þe saboth// ¶ Soþely
it is done and in anoþer saboth • þat he entride into þe syna-
goge/ & tauzt/ and a man was here/ & his rízt hande was
drie/ forsoþe scribis & pharisees aspieden hym zif he schulde
hee­le hym in þe saboth/ þat þei schulden fynde cause wherof for
to accuse hym/ soþely he wiste þe houztes of hem/ and he seip
to þe man/ þat hadde a drie hande/ rise vp into þe mydel &
stonde/ and he rysynge/ stood/ soþely ihc seip to hem/ I are of
zou zif it is leueful for to do wel in þe saboth/ or euyl/ for to
make a soule saaf/ or for to leese/ and alle men lokeden aboute/
he seyde to þe man/ holde forþ þin hande/ and he helde forþ &
his hande is restoryde to helpe/ soþely þei ben fulfild wiþ vn-
wisdom • & spac to gedir what þei schulden do of Jhū// forsoþe
it is done in þo dayes/ he wente oute into an hil for to preye/ and
he was al nyzt dwellynge/ in þe prayer of god/ and whanne
day was made/ he clepide his disciplis & chees twelue of hem •
whom & apostlis ben nempnyde/ Symount whom he clepide
Petre/ & Andrew his broþer/ James and Joon • Philip &
Bartholomeu • Mathew & Thomas • James alpheí/ and Sy-
mount

Luke

man bildynge an hous: & diggih deep: & putte he foundemer
on a stoon/ sohely greet slowynge made: flood is hurlide to þa
hous: & it myzte not moue it/ for it was foundide on a sa
ston/ sohely he þat hereþ & doih not: is liche to a man bild
ynge his hous vpon erþe wiþ outen foundement: into which
þe flood is hurlide to: and anone it fel doune/ and þe fallynge
doune of þat hous: is made grete//

C^m 7^m



Forsoþe whanne he had fulfild alle his wordis into
þe eris of þe puple: he entride into capharnaum
sohely a seruaunt of summan centurio: þat had an
hundride men vnder hym: haupnge euyl: was to
die: þe whiche was precious to hym/ and whanne he hadde
herde of ihū: he sente to hym þe eldre men of iewis: preying
hym þat he come & heele his seruaunt/ and whanne þei camen
to ihū: preyeden bisily seyinge to hym/ for he is worþi þat þou
zyue to hym þis þing/ for he loueþ oure folc: and he bilde to
us a synagoge/ sohely ihc wente wiþ hem/ and whanne now
he was not fer fro þe hous: centurio sente to hym frendis
seyinge/ lorde nyl þou be traueylide/ for I am not worþi þat
þou entre vnder my roof/ for whiche þing & I demyde not my
self worþi: þat I schulde come to þee/ but seye þou by worde:
and my childe schal be heelide/ for whi & I am a man ordeyn
yde vnder power: haupnge vnder me knyztis/ and I seye to
þis go: & he goþ/ & to anoper come & he comen/ and to my
seruaunt do þis þing: & he doþ it/ þe whiche þing herde: Ihc
wondride/ and he turnyde: seyde to þe cumpanyes supnge hym/
treuely I seye to zou: ne in isrl I sonde so greet feiþ/ and þei
þat weren sente turneden azen hoom: founden þe seruaunt
hool þat was sijk// ¶ And it is done aftirwarde ihc wente
into a cytee þat is clepide naym: and his disciplis wenten
wiþ hym: & a ful greet cumpanye of puple/ sohely whanne
he came nyz to þe zate of þe cytee: lo an onelepy sone of his
modir was borne oute deade/ and þis was a widowe: and
myche

Luke

myche cumpanye of þe cytee (came) wiþ hir/ whom whanne
 þe lorde ihū had seen: he mouede by mercy vpon hir • seyde to
 hir/ nyl þou weep/ and he came to: and touchide þe beer/ for-
 soþe þei þat baren: stoden/ and he seiþ zonge man: I seye
 to þee rise vp/ and he þat was deade: sate azen: and bigan
 for to speek/ and he zawe hym to his modir/ soþely dreede
 took alle men: and þei magnyfieden god seyinge/ for a greet
 prophete haþ risen amonge vs: for a god haþ visitide his pore
 puple/ and þis worde wente oute of hym into al Iudee: and
 into al þe cuntre aboute// And þe disciplis of Ioon tolden to
 hym: seyinge of alle þes þingis/ and Ioon clepide togedir two
 of his disciplis: and sente to Ihū seyinge/ art þou þat art to
 come: or abide we anoper? soþely whanne men hadden comen
 to hym: þei seyden Ioon baptist sente vs to zee: seyinge/ art
 þou þat art to come: or abide we anoper? forsoþe in þat houre
 he helide many men of here langwischis and woundis & puel
 spiritis: & he zawe sizte to manye blynde men/ and Ihc an-
 werynge seyde to hem/ zee goinge telle azen to Ioon þo þingis
 þat zee haue herde & seen/ for blynde men seen • crokide men
 gone: mesels ben made cleen/ deaf men heren • deade men
 risen azen: pore men ben take to preche þe gospel • (or made
 keepers of þe gospel)/ and who euer schal not be sclaunderide
 in me: is blestide/ and whanne þe messangers of ioon hadden
 gone aweye: he bigan for to seye of Ioon to þe cumpanyes/
 what wenten zee oute into deserte for to se: a rede watwide
 wiþ wynde? but what wenten zee oute for to se: a man clo-
 þide wiþ softe clothes? lo þei þat ben in precious clooth & in
 delices: ben in kyngis housis/ but what þing wenten zee oute
 for to se: a prophete? soþely I seye to zou • and more þan a
 prophete/ þis is of whom it is writen/ lo I sende myn aungel
 bifore þi face: þat schal make þi weye redie bifore þee • soþely
 I seye to zou amonge children of wymmen: no man is more
 prophete þan Ioon baptist/ soþely he þat is lesse in þe kyng-
 dom of heuenes: is more þan he/ and al þe puple herynge &
 puplicans

Luke

puplicans • baptiside wiþ þe baptym of Jon: iustifieden ge
 forsoþe pharisees & wisemen of þe lawe: not baptiside of hy
 dispiseden þe counseyl of god into hem self/ and þe lorde seyð
 þerfore to whom schal I seye men of þi generacōn liche: al
 to whom ben þei liche: þei ben liche to children sittynge in
 chepynges: and spekynges togedir & seyinge/ we haue songen
 zou wiþ pipis: and zee haue not lippide (or daunside)/ & u
 haue made lamentacōn (or mournynge): and zee haue n
 wepte/ forsoþe ioon baptist came neþer etynge breed ne dryn
 ynge wyn: and zee seyn he haþ a fende/ mannes sone can
 etynge & dryngynge: and zee seyn/ lo a man vourer (or gli
 toune) • & drynkyng wyn • frende of puplicans & of synful men
 and wysdom is iustifiede of alle tones/ forsoþe summe one o
 þe pharisees preyeden ihū: þat he schulde ete wiþ hym/ an
 he entrynge into þe hous of þe pharisee: sate at þe mete/ and
 lo a womman synner þat was in þe cytee • as sche knewe þa
 ihc hadde seten at þe mete in þe hous of a pharisee: brouzt
 an alabastrē bore of oynement/ and sche stondynge bihynde
 bihidis his feet: bigan to moyst his feet wiþ teeris • & wipide
 hem wiþ heeris of hire heed • & kiste his feet: anoyntide wiþ
 oynement/ soþely þe pharisee seinge þat clepide hym: seif
 wiþinne hym self seyinge/ zif þis were a prophet • soþely he
 schulde wite • who & what maner womman it were þat touch
 ih hym: for sche is a synner/ and ihū answerynge: seyde to
 hym/ Symount I haue sum þing for to seye to þee/ and he
 seif/ mayster seye þou/ and he answeride/ two dettours weren
 to sum one lener (or vsurer)/ one auzte syue hundride pens:
 and anoper fifty/ soþely hem not hauynge wher of þei schulden
 zilde: he forzaue frely to boþe/ who (of hem) þerfore loueþ hym
 more? symount answerynge: seyde/ I gesse for he to whom he
 forzaue more/ & he answeride to hym/ þou hast demede rizztly/
 and he turnyde to þe womman: seyde to symount/ seest þou
 þis womman? I entride into þin hous: þou hast not zouen
 water to my feet/ forsoþe þis haþ moystide my feet wiþ teeris:
and

Luke

and wipte wiþ hir heeres/ þou haſt not zouen to me a coſſe/ forſoþe þis liþ I entride ceefide not for to kiſſe my feet/ þou anoyntidiſt not myn heede wiþ oyle/ forſoþe þis anoyntide my feet wiþ oynement/ for whiche þing I ſeye to þee many ſynnes ben forzouen to hir/ for ſche haþ louede myche/ ſopely to whom is leſſe forzouen/ loueþ leſſe/ Sopely ih̄c ſeyde to hire/ ſynnes ben forzouen to þee/ and þei þat ſaten to gedir at þe mete/ bygynnen for to ſeye wiþinne hem ſelf/ who is þis þat alſo forzyueþ ſynnes/ forſoþe he ſeyde to þe womman/ þi ſeiþ haþ made þee ſaaf/ go þou in pees//



And it is done aſtirwarde & Ih̄c made iourney by C^m 8^m
cytees & caſtels/ prechynge & euangelizynge þe reſurreiſſion of god & twelue wiþ hym/ and ſumme wymmenn þat weren heeliſſe of wickide ſpiritis & ſekenefſis/ mary þat is clepide maudeleyn & of whom ſeuene deuſelis wenten oute/ and Joone þe wiſe of chuſe procuratour of heroude/ and ſuſanne & many oþer þat mynyſtred to hym of here facultees (or richeſſis)/ forſoþe whanne ful myche cumpanye came to gedir & fro cytees haſtiden to hym/ he ſeyde by a likenefſe (or enſauple) he þat ſowþ/ goiþ oute for to ſowe his ſeed/ and þe while he ſowþ ſum felde biſidis þe weye & is defoulide & briddis of þe eyre eten it/ and an oþer felde doune on a ſtoon & it ſprungen vp driede for it had not moyſture/ and an oþer felde doune amonge þornes & þe þornes ſprungen vp to gedir/ ſtraungeliden it/ and an oþer felde doune into good erþe & is ſprungen vp/ made an hundred fold fruyte/ he ſeyinge þes þingis criede/ he þat haþ eris of heryng here he/ ſopely his diſciplis axiden hym/ what þis parable was/ to whom he ſeyde/ to zou it is zouen to knowe þe myſterie of þe kyngdom of god/ forſoþe to oþer men in parablis/ þat þei ſeiunge ſeen not & þei herynge vnderſtonde not/ ſopely þis is þe parable/ þe ſeed is goddis worde/ ſopely þo þat ſellen biſidis þe weye/ ben þes þat heren/ aſtir-

Luke

warde þe sende comen & takin away þe worde fro here herte:
lest þei bileuynge be made saaf/ for whi þei þat sellen vpon a
stoon: ben þes þat whanne þei haue herde: receyuen þe worde
wiþ ioye/ & þes haue not rootis/ for at a tyme þei bileuen:
and in tyme of temptacōn · þei gone aweye/ forsoþe þat þat
felde doune in hornes: ben þes þat herden & of þe bisynes
& richessis & voluptees of liif þei goinge ben strangelide · &
bryngen not azen fruyte/ forsoþe þat þat felde into good erþe ·
ben þes þat in good herte & beste · helynge þe worde holden:
and bryngen forþ fruyte in patience// ¶ Forsoþe no man
liztynge a lanterne · hiliþ it wiþ a vessel · or puttiþ vnder a
bed: but vpon a candilsticke · þat men entrynge se lizte/ for
þere is not pryue þing · whiche schal not be openyde/ neþer
hid þing whiche schal not be knowen · & come to aperte/ þer-
fore se zee how zee heren/ forsoþe it schal be zouen to hym
þat haþ/ & who euer haþ not · also þat þat he weneth hym for
to haue: schal be taken aweye fro hym// ¶ Forsoþe his modir
& breþeren camen nyȝ to hym: and þei myȝten not go fully
to hym for þe cumpanye of puple/ and it is tolde to hym/ þi
modir & þi breþeren stonden wiþ oute forþ: willynge for to see
þee/ þe whiche answerynge: seyde to hem/ my moder & my
breþeren ben þes: þat heren þe worde of god & done(aftir it)//
¶ Forsoþe it is done in one of þe dayes · & he steyzede into a
boot & his disciplis/ and he seiþ to hem/ passe we ouer þe stond-
ynge water/ and þei steyzeden vp/ toþely hem rowynge: he
slepte/ and a tempest of wynde came doune into þe water: and
þei weren dryuen hidir & þidir wiþ watwis · & weren in perel/
forsoþe þei comynge nyȝ: reysiden hym seyinge/ comaundour ·
we perischen/ and he risynge blamyde þe wynde & þe tempest
of water · & it ceeside/ and peesiblenes is made/ forsoþe he
seyde to hem/ where is zoure seiþ/ þe whiche dredynge: won-
driden to gedir · seyinge/ who gessit þou is þis · for he com-
aundiþ to wyndis & to see: & þei obeyen to hym/ and þei row-
iden to þe cuntre of genazareth: þat is azenes galilee/ and
whanne

Luke

whanne he wente oute to þe lande: summan ran to hym/ þe
whiche had a deuyl nowe myche tyme & was not cloþide wiþ
cloþe · neþer dwellide in hous: but in sepulchris/ þis as he sizen
ihū: felde doune bifore hym and crynge wiþ greet voyce:
seyde/ what to me & to þee ihū: þe sone of þe hizest god/ I be-
seche þee þat þou turmente not me/ soþely he comaundide to
þe vnclene spirit: þat he schulde go oute fro þe man/ forsoþe
he took hym myche tymes · & he kepte in stockis · was bound-
en wiþ cheynes: and þe bondis broken he was ledde of deuelis
in deserte/ soþely ihc axide hym: seyinge/ what name is to
þee/ and he seyde/ a legioun/ for many deuelis hadden entride
into hym/ and þei preyeden hym · þat he schulde not comaunde
to hem · þat þei wenten not into þe depnesse/ forsoþe þer was
a floc of many hoggis · lesowynge in an hil/ and þei preyeden
hym · þat he schulde suffre hem for to entre into hem/ and he
suffride hem/ þerfore þe deuelis wenten oute fro þe man: and
entriden into hoggis/ and wiþ birre þe floc wenten hedelynge
into þe lake of water: & is strangeliðe/ þe whiche þing as þei
þat lesowiden (or kepten in lesowis) sizen done: fledden &
tolden into þe cytee & in tounes/ soþely þei camen oute for
to se þat þing þat is done: and þei founden þe man sittynge
cloþide · fro whom þe fendis wente oute · & in hool mynde at
his feet · & þei dreedden/ soþely & þei þat sizen tolden to hem
how he was made hool of þe legioun/ and al þe multitude of
þe cuntre of genazareth · preyede hym þat he schulde go fro
hem · for þei weren holden wiþ greet drede/ soþely he stepzing
into a boot: turnyde azen/ and þe man of whom deuelis
wenten oute preyeden hym: þat he schulde be wiþ hym/ soþely
ihc leste hym seyinge/ go azen into þin hous · & telle how
many þingis god haþ done to þee/ and he wente þourgh al þe
cytee · prechyng how many þingis Ihū had done to hym//
A forsoþe it is done whanne ihū hadde gone azen: þe cum-
panye of puple receyuede hym/ forsoþe alle weren abidyng
hym/ and lo a man to whom þe name Jayrus: and he was
pryncē

Luke

prynce of þe synagoge/ and he fel doune at þe feet of ihū: prey-
 inge hym · þat he schulde entre into his hous/ for an onelepy
 douzter was to hym almost of twelue zeer: and þis diede/ & it
 bifel þat while he wente he was prongen (or pressed) of þe
 cumpanyes of puple/ and sum womman was in flure of blood
 fro twelue zeer · þe whiche had spendide al hire substaunce into
 leechis · neþer sche myzte be curide of any/ sche came nyȝ bi-
 hynde: and touchide þe hemme of his clooth/ and anone þe
 flure of hir blood stode/ and ihc seih/ who is it þat touchide
 me? soþely alle men denyng: petre seyde & þei þat weren
 wif hym/ comaundour · cumpanyes of puple · þryngen & tur-
 menten þee · & þou seist · who touchide me? and Jhc seyde/
 summan touchide me/ for whi & I haue knowen vertue to
 haue gone oute of me/ soþely þe womman seinge for it was
 not pryueþ: sche came tremblyng & fel doune bifore his feet/
 and for what cause sche had touchide hym: sche schewide bifore
 alle þe puple · & how anone sche is heelide/ and c̃t seyde to
 hire · douzter þi seih haþ made þee saaf: go þou in pees/ zit
 hym spekynge · summan came to þe prynce of þe synagoge:
 seyng to hym/ for þi douzter is deade nyl þou traueyle þe
 mayster/ þis worde herde: Jhc answeride to þe fadir of þe
 wenche/ nyl þou drede but bileue þou onely: and sche schal
 be saaf/ and whanne he came to þe hous he suffride not any
 man for to entre wif hym · but petre & Joon & James: & þe
 fadir & modir of þe wenche/ soþely alle wepten & weyliden
 hire/ and he seyde nyl ȝee wepe/ soþely þe wenche is not deade:
 but slepiþ/ and þei scorniden hym: witynge þat sche was deade/
 forsoþe he holdynge hire hande: criede seyng/ wenche rise
 þou vp/ and hire spirit turnede aȝen: and sche roos anone/
 and he comaundide to ȝyue to hire for to ete/ and hire fadir &
 modir wondreden gretely/ to whiche he comaundide · þat þei
 schulden not seye to any: þat þat was done//

Forsoþe

Luke

¶ Or so þe twelue þe apostlis clepide togedir: Ihu zaue C^m 9^m
to hem vertue & power vpon alle deuellis: & þat þei
schulden heele langewischyngis/ and he sente hem
to preche þe kyngdom of god: & for to heele seeke
men/ and he seih to hem/ no þing take zee in þe weye: neþer
zerde ne scrippe: neþer breed ne money: & ne haue zee two
cootis/ & into whateuer hous zee schulen entre: dwelle zee
þere: & go zee not oute þens/ & who euer schal not receyue
zou: zee goinge oute of þat cytee: schake of also þe poudre of
zoure feet into witnessyng vpon hem/ soþely þei gone oute
enuyrunden by castels euangelizyng & helyng eueery
where// **¶** For soþe heroude prynce of þe fourþe parte: herde
alle þes þingis þat weren done of hym: & he doutide for þat it
was seyde of summen: for Joon roos fro deade: for soþe of
summen: for helie apperide soþely of oþer: for one of þe olde
prophetis roos/ and heroude seih/ I haue behedide Joon/
soþely who is þis of whom I here suche þingis/ and he souzte
for to se hym/ and þe apostlis turnyde azen: tolden to hym
what euer þingis þei diden// **¶** And hem taken to: he wente
on anoþer halfe into deserte place: þe whiche bethsayda/ þe
whiche þing whanne þe cumpanyes of puple hadden knowen:
þei folowiden hym/ and he receyuyde hem: & spac to hem of
þe kyngdom of god: & heeliðe hem þat hadden nede of cure/
soþely þe daye bigan for to bowe downe/ & þe twelue comynge
nyȝt: seyden to hym/ leue þe cumpanyes of puple: þat þei
goinge turne into castels & tounes þat ben aboute: þat þei
finde metis: for we ben here in deserte place/ []
zyue zee to hem for to ete/ and þei seyden/ þer ben not to vs
more þan fyue looues & two fischis: no but parauenture & we
gone & bie metis into al þis cumpanye/ soþely þe men weren
almost fyue housande/ for he seih to his disciplis/ make zee hem
for to sitte to mete: by seestis fifties/ and þei diden so/ and þei
maden alle men sitte at þe mete/ for soþe þe fyue looues & two
fischis

Luke

fischis taken: he bihelde into heuene & bleside hem & bral
& delide to his disciplis: pat he schulden putte it bifore he cum
panyes/ and alle men eten: and ben fulfild/ and pat pat lef
to hem of broken metis: is taken vp: twelue cofyns// ¶ An
it is done whanne he was alone preyinge: & his disciplis were
wih hym/ and he axide hem seyinge/ whom he cumpanyes sey
me for to be? and hei answeredn & seyden/ Ioon baptist/ for
sohe oher seyn helie/ but oher: for one prophete of he forme
hah risen/ sohely he seyde to hem/ but whom seye zee me fo
to be? Symount petre answeride seyde/ he cñ of god/ and he
blamyng hem pat hei schulden seye to no man seyinge he
pingis/ for it bihoueh mannes sone for to suffre many pingis
& for to be reprove of he eldre men & of prynces of prists &
of scribis: & for to be slayne: and he pridde day for to rise
azen/ forsohe he seyde to alle men: zif any wole come aftir
me denye he hym self & take his crosse euery dape: and sue he
me/ and he pat schal wole make his soule (pat is lijf) saaf:
schal leese it/ for whi he pat schal leese his soule (pat is lijf)
for me: schal make it saaf/ sohely what profiteh it to a man
zif he winne al he worlde: leese forsohe hymself: & do pey
ryng of hym self? for why who pat schal schame me & my
werdis: and mannes sone schal schame hym: whanne he schal
come in his majeste: & of he faderis & of he holy aungels/
¶ Forsohe I seye to zou verreyly: her ben summe stondynge
heer he which schulen not taste deþ till hei seen he retome/
sohely it is done aftir hes wordis: almost eyzte dapes: & he
took petre & James & ioon: & he slepyede into an hil: pat he
schulde preye/ and he while he preyde: he lickenesse of his cheer
is made oher maner: & his clopyng white schynynge/ and lo
two men spaken wih hym/ forsohe moyse & helpe weren seen
in majeste: & hei seyden his goinge oute: he whiche he was to
fulfille in irim/ forsohe petre & hei pat weren wih hym: weren
greuede wih sleep/ and hei wakynge sizen his majeste: and
two men pat stoden wih hym/ and it is done whanne hei de
partiden

Luke

partiden fro hym: petre seiþ to ihū/ comaundour · it is gode
to vs for to ben here & make we here þre tabernaclis · one to
þee & one to moyses · & one to helie: not wptynge what he
schulde seye/ soþely hym spekyng þes þingis: a cloude is
made & schadowide hem/ and hem entrynge into þe cloude: þei
dredde/ and a voyce is made of þe cloude: seyinge/ þis is my
derworþ sone: here see hym/ and lo while þe voyce was
made: Ihū is founden al one/ and þei helden pees · & to no
man seyden in þo dayes ouzte of þo þingis þat þei hadden seen/
¶ forsoþe it is done in þe dayes tynge · hem comynge doune
of þe hil: myche cumpanyes of þe puple rennep to hem/ and
lo a man of þe cumpanye: criede seyinge/ mayster I biseche
þee biholde into my sone: for he is onelepy to me/ and lo a
spirit takith hym · & sodenly he crieth & hurtith hym doune · & dis-
parpliþ (or to drawiþ) hym wiþ froþe · & vnnep he goiþ away
to drawynge hym/ and I preyede þi disciplis þat þei schulden
caste hym oute: and þei myzten not/ soþely ihc answerynge:
seyde to hem/ an vnseifful generacō & waywarde: how longe
schal I be at zou · & suffre zou? leede hidir þi sone/ and whanne
he came nyȝ: þe deuyl hurlide hym doune · & disparplide/ and
ihc blamyde þe vnclene spirit · & helide þe childe: & zelde
hym to hys fadir/ soþely alle men wondriden gretely in þe
greteneſſe of god/ and alle men wondrynge in alle þingis þat
he dide: he seyde to his disciplis/ putte see in zoure hertis þes
wordis/ soþely it is to come þat mannes sone be bitrayede ·
into þe handis of men/ and þei knewen not þis worde · & it
was hidde bifore hem: þat þei feliden it not/ and þei dredde
for to axe hym of þis worde// ¶ forsoþe þouzte entride into
hem: who of hem schulde be more/ and Ihū seinge þe þouztis
of þe herte of hem · takynge a childe sette hym bisides hym:
and seiþ to hem: who euer schal receyue þis childe in my name:
receyueþ me/ and who euer schal receyue me: receyueþ hym
þat sente hym/ for whi he þat lasse amonge zou alle: þis is
more/ forsoþe ion answeride seyinge/ comaundour we siȝen
summan

Luke

summan cassynge oute sendis in þi name ⁊ we haue forbede hym: for he sueþ not þee wiþ vs/ and Ihc seip to hym/ nyl 3e forbede/ forsoþe he þat is not azenes vs: is for vs/ ¶ Soþe it is done whanne þe dayes of his takynge vp weren fulfild ⁊ he sette faste his face: þat he schulde go into irlm ⁊ sente me sangers bifore his sizte/ and þei goinge hidir entreden into cytee of samaritans: þat þei schulden make reedy to hym/ and þei receyueden not hym: for þe face of hym was goinge in to irlm/ forsoþe whanne James ⁊ Jon his disciplis hadde seen: þei sedden/ lorde wolte þou we seyn þat sijt come down fro heuene ⁊ waste hem: as helie dide/ and he turnyde: blamyde hem seyinge/ zee witen not whos spirit zee ben/ forsoþe mannes sone come not to leese mennes soulis: but for to saue and þei wenten into anoter castel// ¶ Forsoþe it is done hen walkynge in þe weye: summan seyde to hym/ I schal sue þee whider euer þou schalt go/ and ihc seip to hym/ foris haue dichis (or dennes): and briddis of þe eyre nestis/ but mannes son haþ not wher he reste his hede/ forsoþe he seyde to anoter/ sue þou me/ soþely he seyde/ lorde suffre þou me firste for to go ⁊ birie my fadir/ and ihc seyde to hym/ suffre þat þe deade men birie here deade: but go þou ⁊ telle þe kyngdome of god/ and anoter seyde/ lorde I schal sue þee: but firste suffre me to telle azen to hem þat ben at home/ forsoþe ihc seip to hym/ no man sendynge his hande to þe plowe ⁊ biholdynge azen: is able to þe rewme of god//

C^m 10^m



Forsoþe astir þes þingis þe lorde ihu ordeynede ⁊ oþer seuenty ⁊ two: and sente hem by two ⁊ two bifore his face into euery cytee ⁊ place: whider he was to come/ and he seyde to hem/ soþely myche ripe corne: but fewe werkemen/ þerfore preye zee þe lorde of þe ripe corne: þat he sende werkemen into his ripe corne/ go zee/ lo I sende zou as lambren amonge wolues/ nyl zee bere a sachel ⁊ ne scrippe ⁊ neþer schoon: and grete zee no man by þe

Luke

he wepe/ into what euer hous zee schulen entre: firste seye zee/
pees to his hous/ and zif a sone of pees schal be here zoure pees
schal reste on hym/ zif noon: it schal turne azen to zou/ forsoþe
in þe same hous dwelle zee etynge & drynkyng þo þingis þat
ben at hem/ forsoþe a werkeman is worþi his hire/ nyl zee
passe fro hous into hous/ and into what euer cytee zee schulen
entree • & þei schulen receyue zou: ete zee þo þingis þat ben
putte to zou • & heel zee þe seek men þat ben in þat (cytee) •
& seye zee to hem/ þe kyngdom of god schal neze into zou/ into
what euer cytee zee schulen entre • & þei schul not receyue
zou: zee goinge oute into þe streetis of it • seih/ also we wipen
of into zou • þe poudre þat cleuede to vs of zoure cytee/ ne-
peles wite zee þis þing: for þe rewme of god schal come nyz/
forsoþe I seye to zou • for to sodom it schal be esier (or lesse
peyne): in þat cytee in þat daye// ¶ **¶** ¶ To þee corozaym •
two to þee bethsayda/ for zif in tyre & sydon hadden þe vertues
ben done • þe whiche ben done in zou: sumtyme þei sittynge
in heyre & asche • schul haue do penaunce/ nepeles to tyre &
sydon it schal be esier in þe doom: þan to zou/ and þou cha-
pharnaum art enhaunsid til to heuene: þou schalt be dren-
chid til into helle/ he þat hereþ zou: hereþ me/ and he þat
dispisþ zou: dispisþ me/ forsoþe he þat dispisþ me: dispisþ
hym þat sente me// ¶ **¶** ¶ Forsoþe þe two & seuenti disciplis turn-
eden azen wiþ ioye: seyinge/ lorde also deuelis ben sujet to vs
in þi name/ and he seih to hem/ I siþe sathanas • fallynge
doun fro heuene as leyte/ and lo I haue zouen to zou power
of defoulyng vpon serpentis & scoriouns • & vpon al þe vertue
of þe enemye: and no þing schal neuze zou/ nepeles nyl zee
enioye in þis þing: for spiritis ben sujet to zou/ but ioye zee
þat zoure names ben writen in heuenes/ ¶ **¶** ¶ In þe ilke houre
he gladide in þe holy gost: and seyde/ I knowleche to þee fadir •
lorde of heuene & erþe • þe whiche hast hid þes þingis fro wise-
men & prudent: and hast schewide hem to litil/ zhe fadir for so
it plesþ bifore þee/ alle þingis ben taken to me of my fadir/

Luke

and no man woot who is he sone: no but he sadir: and who is
 he sadir no but he sone: & to whom he sone wole schewe/ ¶ An
 he turnyde to his disciplis: seyde/ blesside he yzen hat seen þ
 þingis hat zee seen/ soþely I seye to zou hat many propheti
 & kyngis wolden se þo þingis hat zee seen: & þei seen not.
 here þo þingis hat zee heren: & þei herden not/ and lo a wið
 man of þe lawe roose temptynge hym & seyinge/ mayster wha
 þing doinge: schal I welde euerlastynge lijf/ and he seyde to
 hym/ what is writen in þe lawe? how redist þou? he answer
 ynge seyde/ þou schalt loue þe lorde þi god of al þin herte: & of
 al þi soule or lijf: & of al þi strengþes: & of al þi mynde: and þ
 neyzebor as þi self/ and ih̄c seyde to hym/ þou hast answeride rīg
 ly/ do þis þing & þou schalt lyue/ forsoþe he willynge for to iusti
 fie hymself: seyde to Ih̄u/ and who is my neyzebore? soþely ih̄c
 biholdynge vp seyde/ summan came doune fro irlm̄ in Jericho:
 and felde into þeeßes/ þe whiche also robbiden hym: & woundis
 putte in: wenten aweye: þe man leste halfe quicke/ forsoþe it
 bifel þat sum priest came doune in þe same weye: and hym seen:
 passiðe forþ/ also forsoþe & a deken whanne he was bißidis þe
 place & siðe hym: passiðe forþ/ forsoþe sum samaritan makynge
 iourney: came bißidis þe weye/ and he seinge hym: is strīde
 by mercy/ and he comynge nyz: bonde togedir his woundis:
 heldynge in oyle & wijn/ and he puttynge into his iument (or
 hors): ledde into a stable: & dide þe cure of hym/ and anoter
 day he brouzte forþ two pens: & ȝaue to þe keper of þe stable/
 and seiþ/ haue þou cure of hym/ and what euer þou schalt ȝyue
 ouer: I schal ȝilde to þee whanne I schal come azen/ who of
 þes þre semeth to þee to haue be neyzebore to hym hat fel into
 þeeßes/ and he seyde he þat dide mercy into hym/ and ih̄c seiþ
 to hym/ go þou & do þou on like maner/ ¶ Forsoþe it is done
 þe while þei wenten: & he entride into sum castel: and summe
 womman martha by name receyuede hym into hir hous/ and
 to þis was a suster: mary by name: þe whiche also sittynge bi
 ðidis þe feet of þe lorde: herde þe worde of hym/ soþely martha
 bißiede

Luke

bisiede aboute þe ofte seruyce/ þe whiche stode & seiþ/lorde it is not of charge to þee þat my suster leste me al one for to myn-
ystrē/ þerfore seye þou to hir/ þat sche helpe me/ and þe lorde
answerynge/ seyde to hire/ martha martha þou art bisie/ and
art distourblide azenes ful manye þingis/ forsoþe one þing is
necessarie/ mary haþ chosen the beste parte/ þe whiche schal
not be taken aweye fro hir//



And it is done whanne he was preyinge in sum place. C^m 11^m
as he ceefide one of his disciplis seyde to hym/lorde
teche vs for to preye/ as & Ioon tauzte his disciplis/
and he seiþ to hem/ whanne zee prepen/ seye zee/
fadir · halowide be þi name/ þi kyngdom come to/ [

] zþue to vs to day/ oure eche day
breed/ and forzþue to vs oure synnes/ as & we forzþuen to eche
owynge to vs/ and leede vs not into temptacō/ and he seiþ
to hem/ who of zou schal haue a frende · & schal go to hym at
mydnyzt/ and schal seye to hym/ frende leene to me þrelooues/
for my frende comen to me of þe weye/ & I haue not what I
schal putte bifore hym/ and he wiþin forþ answering seiþ/ nyl
þou be heuy to me · þe dore is now shutte · & my children ben
wiþ me in my couche/ I may not rise & zþue to þee/ and zif he
schal dwelle stille knockynge · I seye to zou · & zif he schal not
zþue to hym risynge for þat he is his frende/ neþeles for his
inprobite (or contynuel aringe) · he schal rise & zþue to hym/
how many he haþ nedeful/ and I seye to zou/ are zee/ and it
schal be zouen to zou/ secke zee & zee schulen synde/ knocke
zee/ & it schal be openyde to zou/ forsoþe eche þat axiþ/ takþ/
and he þat seekiþ/ synðiþ/ and to a man knockynge it schal be
openyde/ þerfore who of zou axiþ his fadir breed · wher he schal
zþue to hym a stoon/ or zif he are a fische/ wher he schal zþue
to hym a serpente for þe fische/ or zif he schal are an eye/ wher
he schal dresse to hym a scorioun/ þerfore zif zee whan zee ben
euyt · haue knowen for to zþue goode þingis zouen to zoure chil-
dren.

Luke

dren: how myche more zoure sadir of heuene schal zyeue a good
 spirit to men aryngge hym/ and he was castynge oute a fende:
 and he was doumbe/ and whanne he hadde caste oute þe fende:
 þe doumbe man spac • & þe cumpanyes of puple wondriden/
 forsoþe summe of hem seyde/ in belzebug pryncce of deuellis: he
 castiþ oute deuellis/ and oþer temptynge axiden of hym a token
 fro heuene/ forsoþe as he sise þe pouztis of hem: seyde to hem/
 euery rewme departide in it self: schal be desolate (or discoun-
 fortede) • & an hous schal not falle vpon an hous/ forsoþe & zif
 sathanas be departide azenes hym self: how schal his rewme
 stande • for zee seyn me for to caste oute fendis in belzebug/
 forsoþe zif I in belzebug caste oute fendis: in whom zoure sones
 casten oute: þerfore þei schulen be zoure domesmen/ forsoþe
 zif I caste oute fendis in þe fynger (or futel wirchyng) of god:
 soþely þe rewme of god is comen into zou/ ¶ whanne a stronge
 armyde man kepiþ his hous: alle þingis þat he weldiþ ben in
 pees/ soþely zif a strengier þan he comynge aboue ouercome
 hym: he schal take away alle his armes in whiche he tristiþe •
 & schal dele abroad his spouylis (or robberies)/ he þat is not
 wiþ me: is azenes me/ and he þat geditiþ not to gedit wiþ me:
 scateriþ abroad/ whanne an vnclene spirit schal gone oute of
 a man: he wandriþ by drie places seekynge reste • & he fyndiþ
 not • seiþ/ I schal turne azen into myn hous: wher of I came
 oute/ and whanne he schal come: he findiþ it clenstide wiþ
 besemes & ournyde/ þanne he goiþ & takiþ wiþ hym seuene
 oþer spiritis worse þan hym self: and þei dwellen here/ and
 þe laste þingis of þat man: ben made worse þan þe former//
 ¶ forsoþe it is done whanne he spac þes þingis: summe wom-
 man of þe cumpanye reryng vp hir voyce: seyde to hym/ bles-
 side be þe wombe þat bare þee: & blesside be þe tetis þat þou
 hast token/ & he seyde/ raper blesside ben þei þat heren þe
 worde of god & kepen it/ forsoþe þe cumpanyes of puples
 rennyngge to gedit: he bigan for to seye/ þis generacō is a wey-
 warde generacō/ it seekiþ a token: and a token schal not be
 zouen

Luke

zouen to it • no but he token of Jonas he prophete/ for whi as
Jonas was a token to men of nynyue: so mannes sone schal
be to his generacōn:/ ¶ he queen of he south schal rise in dome
wih men of his generacōn • & schal condempne hem: for sche
come fro he endis of peerpe: for to here he wisdom of salamon/
and lo here more han salamon/ men of nynyue schulen rise in
doom. wih his generacōn: & schulen condempne it: for hei
diden penaunce • at he prechyng of Jonas/ and lo here more
han Jonas/ ¶ No man tendiþ a lanterne & puttþ it in hidels •
neþer vndir a buschel: but vpon a candilstake: þat hei þat gone
in • se lizte/ þe lanterne of þi body is þin yze/ zif þin yze schal
be symple: al þin body schal be lizty/ forsoþe zif þin yze schal
be weywarde: also þe body schal be dirkeful/ þerfore se þou:
lest þe lizte þat is in þee ben dirkeness/ þerfore zif al þi body
schal be lizt • (or schynynge) • not haupnge any parte of dirke-
ness: it schal ben al lizty/ and as a lanterne of briztnesse (or
schynynge): it schal zyue schynynge to þee/ ¶ and whanne
he spac sum pharise preyede þat he schulde ete at hym/ forsoþe
he gon in: restide/ toþely þe pharisee gessynge wihinne hymself:
seyde/ whi he was not waschen bifore he mete/ and þe lorde
seyþ to hym/ now zee pharisees clensen þat is wih oute forþ of
þe cuppe & plater: but þat þing þat is wihinne forþ of zou: is
ful of raueyne & wickidnesse/ foolis wheþer he þat made þat is
wihouten forþ • made not & þat þat is wihinne forþ: neþeles
þat þat is ouer (or superflu) • zyue zee almes: and lo alle þingis
ben clene to zou// ¶ But [] to zou pharisees þat tyþen mynt &
rue & al worde (or erbe): and passen dome & þe charite of god/
forsoþe it bihoueþ for to do þes þingis: and not to leue hem//
¶ ¶ No to zou pharisees þat louen þe firste chayers in synago-
gis: and salutacōns in chepyng// ¶ ¶ No to zou þat ben as se-
pulcris þat apperen not: and men walkyng aboue witen not/
forsoþe one of þe wisemen of lawe answerynge: seiþ to hym/
mayster þou seyinge þes þingis: also to vs þou doist dispite (or
wronge)/ and he seiþ/ and wo to zou wisemen of lawe for zee
chargen

Luke

chargen men wiþ birþens: þe whiche þei mowne not bere/ and
zee zoute self wiþ zoute one synger · touchen not þe heuy-
nessis// ¶ Mo to zou þat bidden biriels (or toumbis) of pro-
phetis: forsoþe zoute saderis slowen hem/ treuely zee witnes-
sen · þat zee consenten to þe werkis of zoute saderis/ for soþely
þei slowen hem: but zee bidden her sepulcris/ þerfore & þe wis-
dom of god seyde/ I schal sende to hem prophetis & apostlis &
of hem þei schulen flee & pursue · þat þe blood of alle prophetis
þat is helde oute fro þe makynge of þe worlde: be souzte of þis
generacōn · fro þe blood of abel · vnto þe blode of zacharie · þat
perischide bitwene þe auter & þe hous/ so I seye to zou: so it
schal be souzte · of þis generacōn// ¶ Mo to zou wisemen of
lawe: for zee hane taken away þe keye of kunnyng/ zee zou
self entren not in: and zee hane forbeden hem þat entreden/
soþely whanne he spak þes þinges to hem · pharisees & wisemen
of lawe · bigunnen greuouusly to azenstonde (hym) · & opresse
his moup: aspynginge hym of manye þingis · sekynge for to
take sum þing of his moup: þat þei schulden accuse hym//

C^m 12^m



Soþely manye cumpanyes of puplis stondynge a-
bout · so þat þei defouliden (or troden) eche oþer:
he bigan for to seye to his disciplis/ be zee war &
flee fro þe fourdowe of pharisees: þat is ypocrisie/
forsoþe no þing is hidde: þat schal not be schetwede/ neþer hid:
þat schal not be wisse/ for whi þo þingis þat zee haue seyde in
dirkenessis: schulen be seyde in lizte/ þat þat zee hane spoken
in ere in couchis: schal be prechide in roofes/ forsoþe I seye to
zou my frendis: ben not aferde of hem þat sleen þe body · &
astir þes þingis hane no more what þei schul do/ soþely I schal
schewe to zou whom zee schulen dreede/ drede zee hym þat
astir he haþ slayne: haþ power for to sende into helle/ so I seye
to zou · drede zee hym/ wher fyue sparowis ben not solde for
two halpens: and one of hem is not in forzetynge bifore god:
but & þe heeris of zoute heed: ben nowmbride/ þerfore nyl zee
drede:

Luke

drede: zee ben of more prise pan manye sparowis/ trewely I
 seye to zou · who euer schal knoweleche me bifore men: and
 mannes sone schal knoweleche hym bifore he aungels of god/
 forsoþe he þat schal denye me bifore men: schal be denyede
 bifore he aungels of þe lorde/ and eche þat seiþ a worde azenes
 þe sone of man: it schal be forzouen to hym: soþely it schal not
 be forzouen to hym þat schal blasseme into þe holy goß//
¶ Forsoþe whanne þei schulen leede zou into synagogis · &
 magistratis & potestatis (or powers): nyl zee be bisie how or
 what zee schulen answeere · or what zee schulen seye/ forsoþe
 þe holy goß schal teche zou in þat houre: what it bihoueh zou
 for to seye/ soþely summan of þe cumpanye seiþ to hym/ may-
 ster seye þou to my broþer: þat he departe wiþ me þe heretage/
 and he seyde to hym/ man who ordeynede me domestman or
 departer vpon zou: and he seyde to hem/ se zee & be war fro
 al coueytise/ for not in þe aboundaunce of any man is his lijf ·
 of þo þingis þat he weldiþ/ soþely he seyde to hem a lickenesse
 seyinge/ þe feelde of sum riche man brouzte forþ plenteuouse
 fruytis: and he þouzte wiþinne hym self seyinge/ what schal
 I do · þat I haue not whidir I schal gedir my fruytis? and he
 seiþ/ þis þing I schal do/ I schal distruye my bernes and I
 schal make more: & þidir I schal gedir alle þingis þat ben borne
 to me and my godis/ and I schal seye to my soule/ soule þou
 hast many goodis putte vp or kepte into ful manye yeeris/ reße
 þou · ete · drynke · & plenteuoußly ete/ soþely god seyde to hym/
 fool in þis nyzt: þei schulen are of þee þi soule/ forsoþe whos
 schulen þo þingis ben þat þou hast made reedy? so is he þat
 trefouriß to hym self: and is not riche into god/ and he seyde
 to his disciplis/ þerfore I seye to zou · nyl zee be bisie to zoure
 soule (or lijf) · what zee schulen ete: neþer to zoure body · wiþ
 what zee schulen be cloþide/ þe soule (or lijf) is more þan mete:
 and þe body more þan cloþynge/ biholde þe crowis for þei sowen
 not neþer repen · to whom is no seler neþer berners and god
 feediþ hem/ how myche more ben zee of more prise pan þei:
forsoþe

Luke

forsoþe who of zou by þenkynge may putte one cubite to his stature; þerfore zif zee mowne not (do) þat þat is leste: what ben zee bisie of oþer þingis; biholde zee þe lilies of þe felde: how þei wahren/þei traueylen not neþer spynnen/I seye to zou for neþer salamon in al his glorie was cloþide as one of þes/ forsoþe zif god cloþis þus þe hay þat to day is in þe feelde & to morne is sente into a furneyns: how myche more zou of litil seiþ; and nyl zee seek what zee schulen ete or what zee schulen dryncke: & nyl zee be taken vp into an hize/ forsoþe folkis of þe worlde seeken alle þes þingis/ soþely zoure fadir wote for zee neden þes þingis/ neþeles seeken zee firste þe kyngdom of god: and alle þes þingis schulen be caste to zou// ¶ Nyl zee litil flocc drede: for it pleside to zoure fadir for to ȝyue to zou a kyngdom/ selle zee þo þingis þat zee haue in possession: and ȝyue zee almes/ make zee to zou sachelis þat wahren not olde/ trefour not saylynge in heuenes: whidir a þeef neyȝer not: neþer mouzte distruyþ/ forsoþe wher is þi trefour: here & þin herte schal be// ¶ We zoure leendis girde bifore: & lanternes brennyng in zoure handis/ and be zee lijk to men abidyng here lorde: whanne he schal turne fro weddyngis/ þat whanne he schal come & knoke: anone þei open to hym/ bleffide þo seruauntis: whom whanne þe lorde schal come: he schal fynde wakynge/ trewely I seye to zou: þat he schal bifore girde hym: & make hem for to sitte at þe mete/ and he passynge schal mynystre to hem/ and zif he schal come in þe secounde wakynge: & zif he schal come in þe þridde wakynge & schal fynde so: þo seruauntis ben bleffide/ forsoþe wite zee þis þing: for zif an housbonde man wiste in what houre þe þeef schulde come: soþely he schulde wake: and not suffre his hous to be mynyde/ and be zee reedy: for in what houre zee gessen not: mannes sone schal come/ forsoþe petre seyde to hym/ lorde seyst þou þis parable to vs or to alle; soþely þe lorde seyde/ who gessist þou is a feiþful dispender and prudent: whom þe lorde ordeynede vpon his meyne þat he ȝyue to hem in tyme: measure

Luke

measure of wheat: blessed that seruaunt whom whanne þe
 lord schal come: he schal fynde so doinge/ verreyly I seye to
 you for vpon alle þingis þat he weldeþ · he schal ordeyne hym/
 þat ȝif þat seruaunt schal seye in his herte · my lord makeþ
 dwellyng for to come · & begynne for to smyte children & hande
 maydens · & ete & drynke · & be fillide ouer mesure: þe lord
 of þat seruaunt schal come in þe day þat he hopiþ not · & houre
 þat he woot not · & schal departe hym & putte his parte wiþ
 vnfeisful men// ¶ Forsoþe þe ilke seruaunt þat knewe þe
 wille of his lord · & made not hym reedy · & dide not astir
 his wille: schal be beten wiþ manye plagis (or woundis) /
 soþely he þat knewe not · & dide worþi þingis of woundis:
 schal be beten wiþ fewe / forsoþe to eche man to whom myche
 is ȝouen: myche schal be souzte of hym / & þei schulen are more
 of hym: to whom þei lenten myche / I came for to sende sijr
 into þe erþe · & what wole I · but þat it be kyndelide: soþely
 I haue for to be baptiside wiþ baptysm: and how am I con-
 streynede til þat it be parfiteþ done / ȝee gessen for I came
 for to ȝyue pees into þe erþe: nay I seye to you · but depart-
 ynge / forsoþe fro þis tyme · þer schulen ȝyue be departide in
 one hous / þre schulen be departide in two (or azenes two) /
 and two into þre schulen be departide / þe fadir into þe sone:
 and þe sone into þe fadir / þe modir azenes þe douzter: and þe
 douzter azenes þe modir / þe housbonde modir azenes þe sones
 wife: and þe sones wife azenes þe housbondes modir // For-
 soþe he seyde & to þe cumpanyes / whanne ȝee schulen se a
 cloude risynge fro þe sunne goinge doune: anone ȝee seyn
 reyne comen · & so it is done / and whanne þe souþe blowynge:
 ȝee seyn for heet schal be / and it is made / ypocritis ȝee hane
 knowe for to profe þe face of heuene & erþe: soþely how prouen
 ȝee not þis tyme: soþely what & of ȝou self · deme ȝee not þat
 þat is iuste / forsoþe whanne þou gost wiþ þin aduersarie to þe
 prynce in þe weye: ȝyue þou bisynesse to be delpueride from
 hym · lest þe parauenture · he drawe þee to þe domesman · & þe

C

domesman

Luke

domesman bitake þee to þe wrongeful arer · & þe wrongeful
arer sende þee into prisoun/ I seye to þee þou schal not go
þens: til þou zilde also þe laste scrpynges//

C^m 13^m



Forsoþe summen camen to in þat tyme · tellynge to
hym of galilees: whos blood pilate mengide wip
þe sacrifices of hem/ and he answerynge seyde to
hem/ wenen zee þat þes men of galilee weren syn-
ners bifore alle galilees · for þei suffreden suche þingis? naye
I seye to zou/ but alle zee schulen perische in like maner: but
zif zee schulen haue penaunce/ and as þe ten & eyzte · vpon
whom þe toure in siloa felde doune & slowe hem: gessen zee
for & þei weren dettours · more þan alle men dwellynge in
irke? nay I seye to zou/ but also zee alle schulen perische:
zif zee schulen not do penaunce/ ¶ Forsoþe he seyde þis like-
nesse/ summan had a fige tree plauntide into his vynezerde:
and he came seekyng fruyte in it · & fonde not/ soþely he seyde
to þe tilier of þe vynezerde/ lo þre zeeris ben sif I came seek-
ynge fruyte in þis litil syge tree: and I fonde not/ þerfore
kitte it doune/ wherto ocupieh it zhe þe erþe? and he answer-
ynge seyde to hym/ lorde suffre it & þis zeer · til þe while I
delue aboute it: and sende tordis/ and zif it schal make fruyte:
zif none: or ellis in tyme comynge þou schalt kutte it doune/
forsoþe he was techynge in þe synagoge of hem: in sabotis/
and lo a womman þat had a spirit of likenesse ten & eyzte
zeeris & was bowide doune · neþer any þing myzte loken vp-
wardis/ whom whanne ihū had seen: he clepide to hym & seih
to hire/ womman þou art leste of likenesse/ and he putte to
hire þe handis: and anone sche is reride · and glorifiede god/
soþely þe prynce of þe synagoge answerynge · haupng dedeyn
(or wrapþe) · for ihc had helide in þe saboth: seyde to þe cum-
pange of puple/ þer ben sire dages · in whiche it bihoueh for
to worche/ þerfore come zee in þes · & be zee heelide · & not in
þe day of saboth/ forsoþe þe lorde answerynge to hym seyde/
ppocrite

Luke

ypocrite wher eche of zou in þe saboth vntieþ not his ore or
 asse fro þe cracche (or stalle) * & leediþ for to water/ bihouede
 it not þis douzter of abraham whom sathanas haþ bounden
 lo ten & eyzte zeeris for to be vnbounden of þis bonde in þe
 day of saboth/ and whanne he seyde þes þingis * alle hys ad-
 uersaries weren ashamyde & al þe puple ioyede in alle þingis
 þat weren gloriously done of hym/ ¶ herfore to what þing is
 þe kyngdom of god liche/ it is liche to a corne of seneney *
 þe whiche taken/ a man sente into his zerde * & it were & is
 made into a greet tree * & foules of þe eyre residen in
 braunchis þer of/ & eftesone he seyde/ to what þing schal I
 gesse þe kyngdom of heuene liche/ it is liche to sourdowe * þe
 whiche taken/ a womman hidith in þre mesures of mele * til
 al were sourdowide/ and he wente by cytees & castels tech-
 ynge & makynge iourney into irtm/ soþely summan seyde
 to hym/ lorde zif þer ben fewe * þat ben sauede/ soþely he
 seyde to hem/ sryue zee for to entre by þe sreyte zate * for
 I seye to zou manye seeken for to entre * & þei myzten not/
 forsoþe whanne þe houbondeman haþ entride & closide þe
 dore/ zee schulen bygynne for to stonde wiþ oute forþ * &
 ryngge þe dore seyinge/ lorde open to vs/ & he antwerynge
 schal seye to zou/ I knowe zou not of whens zee ben/ þanne
 zee schulen bigynne to seye/ we haue eten bifore zee & drunken/
 & in oure sretis þou hast tauzte/ and he schal seye to zou/ I
 knowe zou not of whens zee ben/ go aweye fro me alle wirkers
 of wickidnesse/ þere schal be wepyngge & beetyngge to gedir of
 teep * whanne zee schulen se abraham & ysaac & iacob & alle
 prophetis in þe kyngdom of god/ soþely zou for to be putte
 oute/ and þei schulen come fro þe este & weste & norþe & souþe/
 & sitte at þe mete in þe rewme of god/ and lo þei þat weren
 þe firste/ ben þe laste * & þei þat weren þe laste ben þe firste//
 ¶ In þat day summe of pharisees camen nyz/ seyinge to hym/
 go oute & go hens/ for heroude wole slee þee/ and he seiþ to
 hem/ go zee & seye zee to þat fore/ lo I caste oute sendis * &
 I make

Luke

I make partitely helper to day & to morowe: & þe pride day
 I am endide/ nepeles it bihouey me to day & to morowe: &
 þe sunge day for to walke · for it falliþ not a prophete for to
 perische oute of irīm/ Irīm irīm þat fleest prophetis & stonest
 hem þat ben sente to þee/ how ofte wolde I gadir to gedir þi
 sonex · as a bridde his neste vndir pennex (or twengis) & þou
 woldist not: lo zoure hous schal be leste to zou deserte/ toþely
 I seye to zou · for zee schulen not se me: til it come whanne
 zee schulen seye/ bleffide is he þat comeþ in name of þe
 lorde//

C^m 14^m



And it is done whanne he hadde entride into þe hous
 of summe prynce of pharisees in þe saboth for to
 ete breed: and þei kepten (or aspieden) hym/ and
 lo summan sisk in droppes: was bifore hym/ and
 ihc answerynge seyde to þe wiseman of lawe · & to pharisees:
 seyinge/ zif it is leueful for to heel in sabotis/ and þei hilden
 pees/ forsoþe ihc heelide hym taken to: & liste/ and he answer-
 ynge to hem: seyde/ whos of zou alle or ore schal falle into a
 pitte: and not anone schal he drawe oute hym · in þe day of
 saboth/ and þei myzten not answer to hym to þes þingis/
 forsoþe he seyde & a parable to men beden to a feest · bihold-
 ynge how þei cheseden þe firste sittyng places: seyinge to
 hem/ whanne þou schalt be beden to weddyngis: sitte not
 at þe mete in þe firste place · lest parauenture · a worp-
 þan þou be beden of hym · & he comynge þat clepide þee &
 hym: seye to þee/ zif place to þis/ and þanne þou schalt by-
 gynne wiþ schame for to holde þe laste place/ but whanne þou
 schalt be beden to a feste: go & sitte doune in þe laste place/
 þat whanne he comeþ þat bad þee to feest: seye to þee/ stende
 steppe vp heyzet/ þanne glorie schal be to þee: bifore men
 sittyng to gedir at þe mete/ for eche þat enhauncip hym: schal
 be lowide/ and he þat mekip hym schal be hizede/ forsoþe
 he seyde & to hym þat had beden hym to feest/ whanne þou
 makist

Luke

makist a mete (or soper) nyl þou clepe þi frendis · neþer þi breheren · neþer cosyns · neþer neyzebors · neþer riche men · leste paraventure & þei bidde þee azen to feest · & retribuciōn (or zildynge azen) be made to þee/ but whanne þou makist a feest · clepe pore men · feble · crokide · blynde · and þou schalt be blestide · for þei haue not wherof to zilde azen to þee/ forsoþe it schal be quytte azen to þee · in þe risynge azen of iuste men/ whanne summan of þe sittynge at mete had herde þes þingis · he seyde to hym/ blestide he þat schal ete breede in þe rewme of god/ and he seyde hym/ summan made a greet soper · and clepide manye/ & he sente his seruauntis in þe houre of soper for to seye to men beden to feest · þat þei schulden come/ for nowe alle þingis ben redy/ and alle bygynnen to gedir · for to excuse/ he firste seyde/ I haue bouzte a toun · and I haue neede for to go oute & se it/ I preye þee · haue me excuside/ & he oþer seyde/ I haue bouzte spue zokis of oren · & I go for to proue hem/ I preye þee · haue me excuside/ and anoter seyde I haue weddide a wife · and þerfore I may not come/ and þe seruaunt turnyde azen · tolde þes þingis to his lorde/ þanne þe housbondeman wroþe · seyde to his seruaunt/ go oute sone into greet stretis & smale stretis of þe cytee · and pore men & feble · blynde & crokide · brynge þou hidir/ and his seruaunt seith/ lorde it is done as þou hast comaundide · and zit þere is place/ and þe lorde seih to þe seruaunt/ go oute in weyes & heggis · & constreyne for to entre · þat myn hous be fulfild/ forsoþe I seye to zou · for no man of þe men þat ben clepide · schal taste my soper//

¶ Soþely many cumpanyes wenten wih hym/ & he turnyde · seyde to hem/ zif any come to me · & hatih not his fadir & modir & wiif & sones & breheren & douztris · zit forsoþe & his soule (or lijf) may not be my disciple/ & he bereþ not his crosse & comen not aftir me · may not be my disciple/ forsoþe who of zou willynge for to bilde a toure · where þe firste sittynge acountis not þe spensis þat ben nedeful zif he haue to parfourme?

Lūke

sourme/ leste astir þat he haþ putte þe foundement & myzte not parfourme: alle þat seen hym bigynne to scorne hym seyinge/ for þis man bigan for to bilde & myzte not ende/ or what kyng to go for to sende (or make) batayle azenes another kyng: wher he sittyng firste byþenke not zif he may wiþ ten housande goo azenes hym þat cometh to hym wiþ twenty housande/ ellis zit doinge afer: he sendyng a messenger · preceþ þo þingis þat ben of pees/ so þefore eche of zou þat renounsiþ not (or forsakiþ not) alle þingis þat he weldiþ: may not be my disciple// Salte is good þinge/ forsoþe zif salte vanysche: in what þing schal it be saueride: neþer in dungehil is it profitable: but it schal be sente oute/ he þat haþ eris of heyrng: here//

C^m 15^m



Orsoþe puplicans & synful men weren neyzinge to hym: þat þei schulden here hym/ and pharisees & scribis grucchiden seyinge/ for þis receyueþ synful men: and etih wiþ hem/ and he seiþ to hem þis parable · seyinge/ what man of zou þat haþ an hundride scheep · & zif he schal leese one of hem · wher he leueþ not nynty & nyne in deserte & goiþ to it þat perischide · til he fynde it: he ioyng puttih into his schuldres/ and comyng home: clepiþ to gedir his frendis & neyzhors seyinge to hem/ þanke zee to me · for I haue founden þe scheepe þat I had losse/ soþely I seye to zou · so ioye schal be in heuene on one synful man doinge penaunce: þan vpon nynty & nyne iuste þat hane no nede to penaunce/ or what womman haupnge ten dragmes (or besauntis) · & zif sche schal leese one dragme: wher sche tendis not a lanterne · & turneþ vpsodoune þe hous · & seekih diligently til sche fynde/ and whanne sche haþ founden: sche clepiþ to gedir frendis & neyzehors seyinge/ to gedir þanke zee me · for I haue founden þe dragme þat I had losse/ so I seye to zou · ioye schal be to aungels of god · vpon one synful man doinge penaunce// ¶ Orsoþe he seis/ summan had two sones:

Luke

fones: & he zonger seyde to his fadir/ fadir zyeue to me þe por-
 cioune of substaunce (or catel) þat bifallih me/ and he depart-
 ide to hem substaunce/ and not aftir manye dayes alle þingis
 gederide to gedir: þe zonger sone wente fer on pilgrymage
 into afer cuntre · & here wastide his substaunce (or goodis)
 in lyuyng lecheroufly/ and aftir þat he had endide alle þingis:
 a stronge hunger is made in þat cuntre · & he bigan for to
 haue nede/ and he wente & cleuede to one of þe burgeyfis of
 þat cuntre: and he sente hym into his toune · þat he schulde
 feede hoggis/ and he coueytide for to fulfille his wombe of þe
 coddis þat þe hoggis eten: and no man zawe to hym/ soþely
 he turnede azen into hym self: seyde/ how manye hiride men
 in my fadir hous abounden in looues: I forsoþe perische heere
 in hunger/ I schal risen vp & go to my fadir: and I schal seye
 to hym/ fadir I haue synnede into heuene & bifore þee: nowe
 I am not worþi for to be clepide þi sone · make me as one
 of þin hiride men/ and he risynge came to his fadir/ soþely
 whanne he was zit fer: his fadir siȝe hym · & is styrede by
 mercy/ & he rennyng to · felde vpon his necke: and kistide
 hym/ and þe sone seyde to hym/ fadir I haue synnede into
 heuene & bifore þee: and nowe I am not worþi for to be cle-
 pide þi sone/ forsoþe þe fadir seyde to his seruauntis/ soone
 brynge zee forþe þe firste stool & cloþide hym · & zyeue zee a
 ryng in his hande: & schoon into feet/ and brynge zee to · a
 calue made fatter: and slee zee & ete we & glade we in plenteu-
 ouse etynge · for þis my sone is deade & hap lyuede azen: he
 perischide & is founde/ and alle men bigunnen for to ete glad-
 dely/ forsoþe his elder sone was in þe feelde/ and whanne he
 came & neyzede to þe hous: he herde a symphonye & carole (or
 croude)/ and he clepide one of þe seruauntis: and axide what
 þes þingis weren/ & he seyde to hym/ þi broþer is comen · & þi
 fadir slewe a fattide calue · for he receyuede hym saaf/ forsoþe
 he was wroþe: and wolde not entre/ þerfore his fadir gon
 oute bigan to preye hym/ & he answerynge to his fadir: seyde/

Luke

lo so many zeeris I serue to pee · and I neuer passide ou
(or brake) pi comaundement: & pou neuer haste zouen to
a kide pat I schulde wih my frendes be fulfildide/ but astir p
his pi sone pat haf deuouride his substaunce wih hooris cam
pou hast slayne to hym a sattide calue/ and he seyde to hyr
sone pou art euermore wih me: and alle my pingis ben pi
forsope it bihouede for to ete plenteuoufely & to ioye for p
pi broper was deade: & lyuede azen/ he perischide & is foun
den//

C^m 16^m



Forsope he seyde & to his disciplis/ per was sum rych
man pat had a fermour (or bayly): and his is de
famyde at hym · as he had wastide his goodis/
he clepide hym · & seih to hym/ what here I pi
ping of pee? zilde resoune of pi ferme/ for now pou schal
not mowe hold pe ferme/ forsope pe fermour seyde wihinn
hym self/ what schal I do · for my lorde takih aweye fro m
pe ferme/ delue may I not: I schame for to begge/ I woo
what I schal do: pat whanne I schal be mouede fro pe ferme.
pei recepue me into here housis/ and so alle pe dettours o
his lorde clepide to gedir: he seyde to pe firste: how myche
owist pou to my lorde/ & he seyde to hym/ an hundride barels
of oyle/ and he seyde to hym/ take pe caucion (or obligacion)
& sitte soone · & write fifty/ astirwarde he seyde to anoper/
sophely how myche owest pou? he whiche seih/ an hundride
mesuris of wheet/ and he seyde to hym/ take pi lettris & write
foure score/ & pe lorde preyside pe fermour of wickidnesse ·
for he had done prudently/ for pe sones of pis worlde ben
more prudent (or war) in here generacon: han pe sones of
lizte/ & I seye to zou/ make to zou frendis of pe richesse of
wickidnesse · pat whanne zee schulen fayle: pei recepue zou
into euerlastynge tabernaclis/ he pat is trewe in pe leste ping:
& in pe more is trewe/ & he pat in a litil ping is wickide: & in
pe more is wickide/ perfore zif in pe wickide richessis zee
weren

Luke

weren not trewe: þat þat is soþe who schal bileue (or bitake)
to zou/ and 3if in oþer mennes þing zee weren not trewe:
þat þat is zoure who schal 3yue to zou? no man seruaunt may
serue to two lordis/ forsoþe oþer he schal hate þe toon & loue
þe toþer: oþer cleue to þe toon & dispise þe toþer/ zee mowne
not serue to god & to richesse/ forsoþe pharisees þat weren
coueytous herden alle þes þingis: & þei scorneden hym/ & he
seip to hem/ zee it ben þat iustifien zou bifore men/ soþely god
haþ knowen zoure hertis/ for þat is hize to men: is abhomy-
nacoñ to god/ þe lawe & prophetis til to 3oon fro þat tyme
þe rewme of god is euangelizide • & eche man doiþ strengþe
(or violence) into it/ forsoþe it is lizter heuene & erþe for to
passe ouer: þan one tittle falle of þe lawe// ¶ Euery man þat
forsakip his wiif • & weddiþ an oþer: doiþ auoutrie/ and he þat
weddiþ þe forsaken of þe housbonde: doiþ auoutrie// ¶ Sum-
man was riche & was cloþide in purpur & bijs (or white silke) •
& ete euery day schynnyngly/ & þer was sum begger lazar by
name • þat laye at his zate • ful of bijslis • coueytynge to be
fulfillide of þe crommes þat sellen doune fro þe riche mannes
borde: & no man zaue to hym/ but & houndis camen: & lick-
iden his bijslis/ forsoþe it is done þat þe begger diede: and
was borne of aungels into abrahams bosum/ forsoþe & þe riche
man is deade: and is biriede in helle/ soþely he castynge vp
his eyzen • whanne he was in turmentis: siþe abraham afer •
& lazar in his bosum/ & he crynge seyde/ fadir abraham haue
mercy on me: and sende lazar þat he dippe þe laste parte of his
fynger in water þat he kele my tunge • for I am turmentide
in þis flawme/ and abraham seyde to hym/ sone haue mynde •
for þou hast receyuede good þingis in þi lijf: and lazar also euyl
þingis/ soþely he is nowwe comfortide: but þou art turmentide/
& in alle þes þingis bitwixe vs & zou • a greet dirke place is
stablide • þat þei þat wolen fro hens passe to zou: mowne not
neþer passe ouer hidit/ and he seip/ þerfore I preye þee fadir
abraham: þat þou sende hym into þe hous of my fadir/ soþely

¶

I haue

Luke

I haue syue bretheren · pat he witnesse to hem · lesse & hei comen into his place of turmentis/ and abraham seih to hym/ he hane moysen & he prophetis: here hei hem/ and he seyde/ nay fadir abraham · but zif any of deade men schal go to hem: he schulen do penaunce/ forsohe he seih to hym/ zif hei heren no moyses & prophetis: neher zif any of deade men schal rise azen. hei schulen bileue to hym/ and he seih to his disciplis/ it is impossible pat sclaunderis comen not/ forsohe wo to pat man by whom hei comen/ it is more profitable to hym zif a mylnestoon be putte aboute his necke & he caste into þe see: þan pat he sclaundre one of þes litil/persepueþ (or takih heede) to zouself/ zif þi broþer schal synne in þee: blame hym/ & zif he schal do penaunce · forzyue to hym/ & zif seuene times in þe day · he schal synne in þee · & seuene times in þe day he schal be conuertide to þee: seyinge/ it forþinkih me: forzyue to hym//

C^m 17^m



And þe apostilis seyde to þe lord/ encrese to vs seih/ forsohe þe lord seyde/ zif zee hadden seih/ as þe corne of seneuey: zee schulen seye to his tree more · be þou drawen vp by þe root · & be ouer plauntide into þe see: and it schal obeie to zou/ forsohe who of zou hauinge a seruaunt · erynge or lesowynge þe oris · þe whiche turnyde azen fro feelde · he seih anone to hym · go sitte at þe mete · & not seih to hym make reedy þat I soupe · & girde þee bifore · and mynysstre to me til þat I ete or drynke · & astir þes þingis þou schalt ete & drynke/ wher he haf grace to þat seruaunt · for he dide þat þat he comaundide to hym/ nay I gesse/ so & zee whanne zee hane done alle þingis þat ben comaundide to zou: seye/ we ben vnprofitable seruauntis/ þat þat we ouzten for to do: we haue done// ¶ And it is done þe while Ihs̄ wente into iherlm̄: he passide þourgh þe myddil of samarie & galilee /and whanne he entride into sum castel · ten leprous men camen azenes hym/ þe whiche stoden aser & listiden vp a voyce: seyinge/ Ihs̄ comaundour: haue mercy on vs/ whom
as

Luke

as he ſize: he ſeyde/ go zee ſchewe zee zou to priſtis/ it is done
 þe while þei wenten: þei ben clenſide/ forſoþe one of hem as he
 ſize for he is clenſide: wente azen wiþ greet voyce magnyfy-
 inge god/ and he ſelle doune into þe face biſore his feet: doinge
 graces (or þankyngis)/ and þis was a ſamaritan/ forſoþe ihc
 anſwerynge ſeyde/ wher ten ben not clenſide: and where ben
 þe nyne: þer ben none ſounden þat turnyde azen & zaue glorie
 to god: no but þis alien (or ſtraunger)/ and he ſeiþ to hym riſe
 vp go hou: for þi ſeiþ haþ made þee ſaaf/ forſoþe he aride of
 phariſees whan þe rewme of god cometh: anſweride to hem &
 ſeyde/ þe rewme of god cometh not wiþ aſpiynges: neþer þei
 ſchulen ſeye/ lo here: or lo here/ forſoþe lo þe rewme of god is
 wiþinne zou/ & he ſeiþ to his diſciplis/ dayes ſchulen come:
 whanne zee ſchulen deſire for to ſe one day of mannes ſone:
 and zee ſchulen not ſe/ & þei ſchulen ſeye to zou/ lo here & lo
 here/ nyl zee go: neþer ſue þee/ forwhi as leyte ſchynynge from
 vnder heuene: ſchyneth into þo þinges þat ben vndre heuene:
 ſo ſchal mannes ſone be in his day/ forſoþe firſte it bihoueth hym
 for to ſuffre manye þingis: & for to be reſprouede of þis genera-
 con/ & as it was done in þe dayes of noe: ſo it ſchal be in þe dayes
 of mannes ſone/ þei eten & drunken: weddiden wiſes & weren
 zouen to weddyngis til into þe day: in þe whiche noe entride
 into þe ſchippe: & þe greet flode came & loſte alle/ alſo it was
 done in þe dayes of loth: þei eten & drunken: bouzten & ſolden:
 plauntiden & bildiden/ ſohely in what day loth wente oute of
 ſodom: þe lorde reynyde ſiſt & brinnſton fro heuene: & loſte
 alle/ aſtir þis þing it ſchal be in what day mannes ſone ſchal be
 ſchewide/ in þat day he ſchal ben in þe roof: & his veſſels in þe
 hous: come he not doune for to take hem aweye/ and he þat is
 in þe ſeelde: alſo turne not azen byhynde/ be zee myndeful of þe
 wiſe of loth/ who euer ſchal ſeek for to make his ſoule (þat is
 his liſt) ſaaf: ſchal leeſe it/ & who euer ſchal leeſe it: ſchal quyen
 it/ I ſeye to zou in þat nyzt two ſchulen be in one bed: one
 ſchal be taken to: & þe toþer forſaken/ two wymmen ſchulen be
 gryndynge

Luke

gryndynge to gedir · þe one schal be taken to · & þe toþer for
taken/ þei answerynge seyn to hym/ where lorde/ þe whiche
seyde to hem/ wher euer þe body schal be: þidir schulen be ge
deride to gidir & þe eglis//

C^o 18^m



Forsoþe he seyde to hem & a parable/ for it bihoueh
for to prepe euermore: & not fayle seyinge/ þer was
sum iuge in sum cytee: þat dredde not god · neþer
schamyde men/ forsoþe sum widowe was in þat
cytee: and came to hym seyinge/ venge me of myn aduersa
rie/ and he wolde not by myche tyme/ soþely astir þes þingis
he seyde wiþinne hym self/ and zif I drede not god · & schame
not man: neþeles for þis widowe is heuy to me: I schal venge
hire/ lestte at þe laste sche comynge strangle me/ soþely þe lorde
seiþ/ here zee what þe domesman of wickidnesse seiþ/ forsoþe
wher god schal not do vengeaunce of his chosen · crynge to
hym nyzt & day · & schal haue pacience in hem/ soþely I seye to
zou for sone he schal do vengeaunce of hem/ neþeles gessit þou
mannes sone comynge schal synde seiþ in erþe/ forsoþe he seyde
& to summen þat tristiden in hym self as ryztful · dispiseden
oþer · þis parable seyinge/ two men steyzeden vp into þe temple
for to prepe · þe one a pharisee · & þe oþer a puplican/ forsoþe þe
pharisee stondynge: preyede anentis hym self þes þingis sey
inge/ god I do þankyngis to þee · for I am not as oþer of
men · rauenours · vniust · auouters · as also þis puplican/ I
faste twyes in þe wike · I zpyue tyþes of alle þingis þat I haue
in possession/ and þe puplican stondynge afer · wolde not neþer
liste vp þe pzen to heuene: but smote his breste seyinge/ god
be helpesful (or mercysful) to me synner/ trewely I seye to zou ·
þis discendide iustificide into his hous from hym/ for eche þat
enhauncis hym: schal be made lowe/ and he þat mekis hym:
schal be enhauncide/ ¶ Forsoþe þei brouzten to hym zonge
children þat he schulde touche hem/ þe whiche whanne disci
plis sizen: þei blameden hem/ soþely ihc clepyngeto gedir hem:
seyde/

Luke

besides he wepe beggyng/ and whanne he herde þe cumpa-
nye of puple passyng/ aride what þis þing was/ soþely þe
seyden to hym/ þat ih̄c of nazareth passide/ and he criede sey-
inge/ Jhū þe sone of dauid/ haue mercy on me/ and þei þat
wenten bifore/ blameden hym þat he schulde be stille/ soþely
hem yche more cryinge/ þou sone of dauid/ haue mercy on me/
forsoþe Jh̄c stondynge/ comaundide hym for to be brouzte forþ
to hym/ and whanne he came nyȝ/ he aride hym seyinge/ what
wolte þou I schal do to þee/ and he seyde/ lord þat I se/ and
ih̄c seyde to hym/ biholde/ þi seiþ haþ made þee saaf/ and
anone he sizer/ and suede hym • magnifynge god/ and al þe pu-
ple as it sizer/ ȝaue heryinge to god//

C^m 19^m



AND Jh̄c goinge in/ walkide to Jericho/ and lo a man
zache by name • & þis was pryncce of puplicans/ &
he riche/ and he souzte for to se Jhū who he was/
& he myȝte not for þe cumpanye of puple • for he
was litil in stature/ and he rennyng bifore/ stepede vp into
a sicomore tree • þat he schulde se hym/ for he was to passe
þens/ and ih̄c biholdynge vp • whan he came to þe place/ sizer
hym & seyde to hym/ zache hizinge come doune/ for to daye
I must dwelle in þin hous/ & he hizinge came doune/ and
ioyinge receyuede hym/ & whanne alle men sizen/ þei grucchi-
den seyinge/ for he had turnyde to a synful man/ forsoþe zache
stondynge/ seyde to þe lord/ lo lord þe halfe of my godis/ I
ȝyue to pore men/ and ȝif I haue any þing defraudide any
man/ I ȝilde þe foure folde/ Jh̄c seiþ to hym/ for in þis day
helpe is made to þis hous/ for þat he is abrahams sone/ for-
soþe mannes sone came for to seek & for to make saaf þat þing
þat perischide// ¶ Hem herynge þes þingis • he puttyng to •
seyde a parable • for þat he was nyȝ ierlm̄ • & for þei gesside þat
anone þe kyngdom of god schulde be shewide/ þerfore he seyde/
Sum noble man wente into a fer cuntre • for to take to hym
a kyngdom • & for to turne aȝen/ soþely his ten seruauntis
clepide/

Luke

clepide: he zaue to hem ten besauntis • & seih to hem/ Mar-
 chaundise zee he while I come/ forsoþe his cyteseyns hatiden
 hym • & senten a messenger astit hym: seyinge/ we wolen not
 hym for to regne vpon vs/ and it is done þat he turnede azen
 þe kyngdom taken: he comaundide his seruauntis to be cle-
 pide to whom he zaue þe money • þat he schulde wite how
 myche eche had wonnen by chaffarynge/ forsoþe þe firste came
 seyinge/ lorde þi besaunt haþ wonnen ten besauntis/ he seih
 to hym/ wel be þou goode seruaunt in litil þing þou haþ ben
 trewe: þou schalt be hauyng power vpon ten cytees/ and þe
 toþer came seyinge/ lorde þi besaunt haþ made fyue besauntis/
 and to þis he seih/ and be þou vpon fyue cytees/ and þe þridde
 came seyinge/ lorde lo þi besaunt þat I had putte vp in a suda-
 rie (or swetyng clooth)/ forsoþe I dredde þee for þou art auf-
 terne man • þat takist awey þat þat þou settist not • & þou re-
 pist þat þat þou haþ not souden/ he seih to hym/ weywarde ser-
 uaunt: of þi mouþe I deme þee/ wistist þou þat I am an auf-
 terne man takyng aweye þat þing þat I sette not • & repynge
 þat þing þat I setwe not: and whi haþ þou not zouen my money
 to þe boorde • & I comynge schulde haue receyuede it • soþely
 wiþ vsures/ and he seyde to men stondynge nyz/ take zee aweye
 fro hym þe besaunt: and zyue zee it to hym þat haþ ten be-
 sauntis/ and þei seyden to hym/ lorde he haþ ten besauntis/
 soþely I seye to zou • for to eche hauynge it schal bezouen: and
 he schal abounde (or be plenteuouse)/ but fro hym þat haþ
 not & þat þing þat he haþ: schal be taken of hym/ neþeles
 brynge zee hidir þo myn enemyes • þat wolen not me regne
 vpon hem: and flee bifore me/ and þes þingis seyde: he wente
 bifore slepyng to iherlm/ and it is done whanne he came nyz to
 bethfage & bethanye at þe mounte þat is clepide of olyuete: he
 sente his two disciplis seyinge/ go zee into þe castel þat is azenes
 zou • into whiche zee entrynge schulen fynde a colte of a sche-
 asse tizede: to whom none of men euer satte/ vnbynde zee hym:
 and brynge zee to me/ and zif any man are whi zee vnbynden:

þus

Luke

hus ȝee schulen sepe to hym/ for he lorde desireþ his werke/ for-
soþe þei þat weren sente wenten forþ · & founden as he seyde to
hem: a colte stondyng: soþely hem unbryndyng he colte: he
lordis of hem seyden to hem/ what vntizen ȝee he colte: and
þei seyden/ for he lorde haþ hym nedeful/ and þei ledde to ihū/
and þei castyng here cloyes vpon he colte: puttiden ihū (on
hym)/ forsoþe hym goyng: þei vndre strewidde here cloyes in
he weye/ and whanne now he came nyȝ to he comyng doune
of he mounte of olyuete: alle he cumpanyes of men comyng
doune: bygunnen ioyzinge for to herie god wif greet voyce
on alle he vertues þat þei sizen seyng/ blesside is he kyng
þat cometh in he name of he lorde: pees in heuene & glorie
þingis// ¶ And summe of pharisees of he cumpanyes: seyden
to hym/ mayster blame þi disciplis/ to whom he seih/ I seye
to ȝou · for ȝif þes schulen be stille: stonys schulen crie/ and
whanne he neyȝede · he seinge he cytee: wepte on it seyng/
for ȝif þou haddest knowen: & þou/ & soþely in þis þi day: he
whiche to pees to þee/ but now þei ben hid fro þin eyȝen/ for
dayes schulen come in þee · & þin enemyes schulen enuyroune
þee wif a paale · & þei schulen enuyroune þee & make þee streyte
on alle sidis: & caste þee doune to he erþe · & þi sonys þat ben
in þee/ and þei schulen not leue in þee a stonys vpon a stonys ·
for þat þat þou hast not knowen þe tyme of þi visitaciō//
¶ And he gone into he temple: bigan for to caste oute men sell-
yng þer inne & byyng · seyng to hem/ it is writen þat myn
hous: is an hous of preyer/ forsoþe ȝee hane made it a denne
of preefes/ and he was techyng euery day in he temple/ forsoþe
þe prynces of pristis & þe scribis & þe prynces of he puple:
sonȝten for to leete hym/ and þei founden not what þei schul-
den do to hym/ soþely alle he puple was hangide vp · or al oc-
cupiede heryng hym//

And

Luke



And it is done in one of þe dayes • hym techyng þe C^m 20^m
 puple in þe temple & euangelizyng: þe prynces of
 pristis & scribis camen to gedir • wiþ þe eldre men •
 & seyn to hym seyng: seye to vs in what power
 þou doist þis þing or who ȝaue to þee þis power? forsoþe ihū
 answeyng: seyde to hem/ and I schal axe zou a worde: an-
 swere ȝee to me/ was þe baptysm of Ioon of heuene or of men?
 and þei þouzten wiþinne þemself seyng: for ȝif we schulen
 seye of heuene: he schal seye/ whi þirfore bileue ȝee not to
 hym? forsoþe ȝif we schulen seye of men: al þe comoune puple
 schal stonen vs/ for þei ben certeyn: Ioon for to be a pro-
 phete: & þei answeriden hem to not knowe (or wite) of whens
 it was/ and ihc seih to hem/ neþer I seye to zou: in what
 power I do þes þingis// ¶ forsoþe he bigan for to seye to þe
 comoune puple þis parable/ summan plauntide a vynezerde •
 & hiȝride it (or sette) to ferme to tiliers/ and he was in pil-
 grymage myche tymes/ and in tyme of gederyng of grapis:
 he sente a seruaunt to þe tiliers: þat þei schulden ȝyue to hym
 of þe fruyte of þe vynezerde/ þe whiche lesten hym beten:
 voyde (or wiþouten fruyte)/ and he putte to for to sende ano-
 þer seruaunt/ forsoþe & þei beetynge þis • and punyschyng
 wiþ conteckis (or wrongis): lesten voyde/ and he putte to for to
 sende þe þridde/ þe whiche & woundynge hym: castiden oute/
 sopely þe lorde of þe vynezerde seyde/ what schal I do? I
 schal sende my der worþe sone/ parauenture whanne þei schulen
 se hym: þei schulen schame/ whom whanne þe tiliers hadden
 seen: þei þouzten wiþinne hem self seyng: þis is þe eire/ slee
 we hym: þat þe heretage be made oure/ and þei slowen hym
 caste oute of þe vynezerde/ what þerfore schal þe lorde of þe
 vynezerde do to hem/ he schal come & leese þes tiliers • & ȝyue
 þe vynezerde to oþer/ whiche þing herde: þei seyden to hym/
 be it fer: (or god forbede)/ forsoþe he biholdynge hem • seyde/
 what þerfore is þis þing þat is writen/ þe soon whom men

Luke

bildynge reprobueden/ þis is made into þe heede of þe corner/
eche þat schal falle vpon þat stoon/ schal be schaken or broken/
forsoþe vpon whom it schal falle/ it schal breke hym to smaale
parties// ¶ And þe prynces of pristin & þe scribis/ souzte for
to leye on hym handis in þat houre/ and þei dredde þe puple/
forsoþe þei knewen/ þat to hem he had seyde þis likenesse/ and
þei keppnge/ senten aspriers þat seyneden hem iuste/ þat þei
schulden take hym in worde · & bitake hym (or bitraye) to þe
principate (or power of þe prynce) · & to þe power of þe mayre
(or iustice)/ and þei axiden hym seyinge/ mayster we witen
for riztly þou seyst & techist · & þou takist not þe persone of man/
but þou techist in trewe þe weye of god/ is it leueful to vs for
to ȝyue tribute to cesar or nay/ forsoþe he biholdynge þe de-
seyte of hem/ seyde to hem/ what tempten zee me/ schewe zee
to me a penye/ whos ymage & superscripcon (or writynge
aboute) haþ it/ þei answerynge seyden to hym/ cesars/ and
he seiþ to hem/ zilde zee herfore to cesar · þo þingis þat ben
cesars/ and þo þingis þat ben of god · to god/ and þei myzten
not reprove his worde/ bifore þe pore puple/ and þei wondre-
ynge in his answeris/ helden pees// ¶ Summe of þe sadu-
ceis · þat denyen azen risynge for to be/ camen to & axiden
seyinge/ mayster · moyses wrote to vs · zif þe broþer of any
man haupnge a wife be deade · & he was wiþ ouden fre chil-
dren/ þat his broþer take his wife & reyse seeðe to his broþer/
herfore seuene breþeren weren/ þe firste took a wife · & is
deade wiþ ouden fre children/ and þe supinge took hir/ and he
is deade wiþ ouden sone/ and þe þridde took hir/ also & alle
seuene/ & leften not seeðe · but ben deade/ þe laste of alle/ &
þe womman is deade/ herfore in þe rysynge azen/ whos wife
of hem schal sche be/ forsoþe seuene hadden hire wife/ and ihc
seiþ to hem/ sones of þis worlde wedden & ben zouen to wed-
dyngis/ forsoþe þei þat schulen be hadde worpi of þat worlde
& risynge azen fro deade men/ neþer ben weddide neþer wed-
den wifes/ neþer euer schulen motwe die · forsoþe þei ben euen
wiþ

L u k e

wiþ aungels · & ben þe sones of god: siþ þei ben sones of ris-
yngē azen/ forsoþe for deade men risen azen: and moyses
scheuwide besides þe busche as he seiþ/ þe lorde god of abra-
ham · & god of ysaac · & god of Iacob/ forsoþe god is not of
deade men: but of lyuyngē men/ forsoþe alle men lyuen to
hym/ soþely summe of þe scribis answerynge: seyden/ may-
ter þou hast wel seyde/ and þei dursten no more axe hym any
þing// ¶ forsoþe he seyde to hem/ how seyn men crist for to be
þe sone of dauid · & dauid hym self seiþ in þe booc of psalmes:
þe lorde seyde to my lorde · sitte þou on my rizthalse · til þat
I putte þei enemyes a stool of þi feet/ þerfore dauid clepiþ
hym lorde: and how is he his sone? soþely al þe puple her-
yngē: he seyde to his disciplis/ be zee war of scribis þat wolē
wandre in stooles & louen salutaciōs in þe chepyngē · & þe
firste chapers in sinagogis · & þe firste sittynge places in feestis/
þat deuouren þe hous of widowis: seynynge longe preyngē/
þei schulen take more dampnaciōn//

Forsoþe he biholdynge siȝe hem · þat senten here C^m 21^m
ziftis in to þe tresorie riche men/ forsoþe he siȝe &
sum litil pore widowe sendynge two mynutis (or
ferþingis): and he seyde/ treuely I seye to zou · for
þis pore widowe: sente more þan alle men/ for whi alle þes
of þe aboundaunce or plenteuouse to hem: senten into þe ziftis
of god/ forsoþe þis widowe · of þat þing þat sayliþ to hir:
sente al hir lyuelode þat sche hadde// ¶ And summan seinge
of þe temple þat it was ournyde wiþ good stoonēs & ziftis: he
seyde/ þo þingis þat zee seen · dayes schulen come in þe whiche
a stoon schal not be leste on a stoon: þe whiche schal not be
distruyede/ soþely þei ariden hym seyingē/ comaundour ·
whanne schulen þes þingis be: and what token whan þei
schulen bigynne for to be done/ þe whiche seyde/ se zee þat zee
be not deceyuēde/ soþely many schulen come in my name ·
seyingē for I am · & þe tyme schal neze/ þerfore nyl zee go
astir

Luke

after hem/ forsoþe whanne zee schulen here bataylis & sedu-
 coñs (or stryues) wiþinne forþ: nyl zee be aferde/ it bihoueh
 firste þes þingis for to be done: but not zit anone an ende/
 þanne he seyde to hem/ folc schal rise azenes folc & rewme
 azenes rewme & greet mouyngis of erþe schulen be bi places
 & pestilences & hungrys & dredis from heuene & grete tokenes
 schulen be/ but bifore alle þes þingis þei schulen putte here
 hondis to zou & schulen pursue bitakynge into synagogis &
 kepyngis & drawyng to kyngis & mayres (or iustices) for my
 name/ forsoþe it schal falle to zou into witnessyng/ þerfore
 putte zee in zoure hertes not to þenke bifore: how zee schulen
 answer/ forsoþe I schal zye to zou mowþ & wysdom: to
 whiche alle zoure aduersaries schulen not mowe azenstonde
 & azen seye/ soþely zee schulen be bitrayede (or taken) of fa-
 dir & modir & breþeren & cosyns & frendis: & by deþ þei schulen
 turmente of zou/ and zee schulen be in hate to alle men for
 my name/ and an heer of zoure heed: schal not perische/ in
 zoure pacience zee schulen welde (or haue in quyet) zoure
 soulis/ forsoþe whanne zee schulen se ierlm enuyrounyde of an
 ooste of batayle: þanne wite zee for þe desolacoñ (or discour-
 forþ) of it schal neyze/ þanne þei þat ben in Jude flee to þe
 mounteyns/ & þei þat in þe mydil of it: go aweye/ & þei þat
 in þe cuntrees: entre not into it/ for þes ben dayes of ven-
 geaunce: þat alle þingis þat ben writen: be fulfild/ forsoþe
 wo to (wymmen) wiþ childe & norischyng in þo dayes/ for-
 soþe a greet pressure (or ouerleyinge) schal be on þe erþe: &
 wrappe to þis puple/ and þei schulen falle in þe mowþ of swerde:
 & þei schulen be ledde captife (or prisoners) into alle folkis/ &
 ierlm schulen be defoulide (or to troden) of heþene men: til þe
 tyme of naciouns be fulfild// ¶ And tokenes schulen be in
 funne & mone & sterres: & in erþe ouerleyinge of folkis for con-
 fusioñ of soun of þe see & watwis: men waringe drie for drede
 & abidyng þat schulen come to al þe worlde/ for whi vertues
 of heuene schulen be mouede/ and þanne þei schulen se mannes
tone

Luke

sone comynge in a cloude: wif greet power & maieſte/ ſohely
 hes þingis bigynnynge for to be made: biholde zee & reple zee
 zoure hedis: for zoure redempcon (or bynge azen) neyzeþ/
 & he ſeyde to hem a lickenesse/ ſe zee þe fige tree & alle trees:
 whanne þei bryngen forth nowe of hem fruyte: zee witen for
 ſomet is nyz/ ſo & zee whanne zee ſchulen ſe hes þingis for to
 bedone: wite zee for ze kyngdom is nyz/ treuely I ſeye to zou
 for þis generacon ſchal not paſſe: til alle þingis ben done/
 heuene & erþe ſchulen paſſe: ſohely my wordis ſchulen not
 paſſe// ¶ Forſoþe perſeue zee (or take zee heede) to zou ſelf:
 leſte parauenture zoure hertis ben greuede wif glotonie &
 drunkenesse & by synnes of his liſt: & þe ilke day come ſodeyn-
 ly vpon zou/ forſoþe as a gnare (or snare) it ſchal come vpon
 þe face of al erþe/ and ſo walke zee in eche tyme: preyinge
 þat zee be hadde worþi for to flee alle hes þingis þat ben to
 come: & for to ſtonde bifore mannes ſone/ forſoþe in dayes
 he was techynge in þe temple: ſohely in nyztis he goinge oute
 dwelte in þe mounte þat is clepide of olyuete/ and al þe puple
 haſtide (or came erly) for to come to hym: in þe temple for
 to here hym//



Forsoþe þe haly day of þerfe looues: þat is ſeyde C^m 22^m
 paſk came nyz: and þe prynces of priſtis & þe ſcribis
 ſouzten hou þei ſchulden flee ihū/ forſoþe þei dred-
 den þe pore puple/ ſohely ſathanas entride into Ju-
 das þat was clepide of ſcarioth: one of þe twelue: & he wente
 & ſpac wif þe princes of priſtis & maieſtratis: how he ſchulde
 bitraye hym to hem/ and þei ioyzeden & maden couenaunt:
 for to ȝyue hym money: & bihiȝte/ & he ſouzte couenablete:
 þat he ſchulde bitraye hym wif oute cumpanyes/ ſohely þe
 day of þerfe looues came: in þe whiche it was nede paſk (þat
 is ſacrifice of paſk) for to be ſlayne/ and he ſente petre & Jon
 ſeyinge/ zee goinge make reedy to vs paſk: þat we ete/ and
 þei ſeyden/ wher wolte þou we make reedy? and he ſeyde to
 hem/

Luke

hem/ lo zou entrynge into þe cytee · summan berynge a ves-
sel of water schal come azenes zou/ sue zee hym into þe hous ·
into whiche he entriþ · and zee schulen sepe to þe housbonde
man of þe hous/ þe mayster seiþ to þee/ where is þe herber-
gerie · where I schal ete paske wiþ my disciplis/ and he schal
schewe to zou a greet souppnge place · strewide · & here make
zee reedy/ soþely þei goinge · founden as he seyde to hem · and
þei maden reedy paske/ and whanne þe houre was made · he
sate to þe mete · & twelue apostlis wiþ hym/ and he seiþ to
hem/ wiþ desire I haue desired · for to ete wiþ zou þis paske ·
bifore I suffre/ forsoþe I sepe to zou for fro þis tyme I schal
not ete it · til it be fulfild in þe retome of god/ and þe cuppe
taken · he diide graces & seyde/ take zee & departe zee amonge
zou/ soþely I sepe to zou · I schal not drynke of þe generacōn
of þis vyne · til þe retome of god come/ and þe breed taken he
diide graces (or þankynge) & brake & zawe to hem seyinge/
þis is my body þat for zou schal be zouen/ do zee þis þing into
my comemoracōn (or into mynde) of me/ also & þe chalice ·
astir þat he had soupyde · seyinge/ þis cuppe is þe newe testa-
ment in my blood · þat schal be schede for zou/ neþeles lo þe
hande of a man bitrayinge me · is wiþ me in þe boorde/ and
soþely mannes sone goiþ · astir þat is diffynede (or determyn-
yde)/ neþeles wo to þat man · by whom he schal be bitrayede/
& þei bigunnen for to seke amonge hem · who it was of hem ·
þat was to do þis þing// ¶ And strif is made amonge hem ·
whiche of hem schulde be seen for to be more/ soþely he seyde
to hem/ kyngis of folkis ben lordis (or lordeschipen) of hem/
& þei þat haue power upon hem · ben clepide gode doers (or
gode zyuers)/ forsoþe zee not so/ but he þat is more in zou ·
he made as zonger/ and he þat is bifore goer · as a seruaunt/
for whi who is more · he þat restiþ or he þat mynystriþ/ wher
not he þat restiþ/ forsoþe I am in þe mydle of zou · as he þat
minystriþ/ soþely zee ben þat haue dwelide wiþ me in my
temptacōns/ & I dispose to zou · as & my fadir hap disposide
to

Luke

to me a rewme: þat zee ete & drynke on my boorde in my
 rewme: & fitte on trones demynge þe twelue kynredis of isrl/
 forsoþe þe lorde seyde to Symount/Symount lo sathanas haþ
 aride zou þat he schulde redle as whete/ soþely I haue prepede
 for þee: þat þi seiþ fayle not/ and þou sumtyme conuertide:
 conferme þi breþeren/ þe whiche seyde to hym/ lorde I am
 reedy wiþ þee for to go into prisoune & into deþ/ and he seyde/
 I seye to þee petre: þe cocke schal not crowe to day: til þou
 þries forsake: for to haue knowen me/ and he seyde to hem/
 whanne I sente zou wiþ outhen sachel & scrippe & schoon: wher
 any þing saylide to zou? and þei seyden/ no þing/ þerfore he
 seyde to hem/ but now he þat haþ a sachel: take also & a
 scrippe/ & he þat haþ not: selle his coot & bie a swerde/ soþely
 I seye to zou/ for zit it bihoueh þat þat þing þat is witen:
 for to be fulfild in me/ and wiþ wickide men he is putte (or
 demyde)/ forsoþe þo þingis þat ben of me: haue ende/ & þei
 seyden/ lorde lo two swerdis heere/ & he seyde to hem/ it is
 ynowz/ and he gone oute: wente aftir custum into þe hil of
 olyues/ soþely & disciplis sueden hym/ and whanne he came
 to þe place: he seyde to hem/ preye zee: lest zee fallen into
 temptacioune/ and he is taken awei fro hem: how myche a
 stoness caste/ & þe knees putte: he prepede seyinge/ fadir zit
 þou wolte: turne ouer þis cuppe fro me/ neþeles not my wille
 be done: but þin/ forsoþe an aungel apperide to hym fro he-
 uene: confortynge hym/ and he made in agonye (or strif):
 prepede lenger/ and his swote is made as dropis of blode
 rennyng doune into þe erþe/ and whanne he hadde risen fro
 preyer: & had comen to his disciplis: he sonde hem slepyng
 for heuyneße/ and he seiþ to hem/ what slepen? rise zee: &
 preye zee: þat zee falle not into temptacon// ¶ zit hym spek-
 ynge: lo a cumpanye: & he þat was clepide Judas one of þe
 twelue: wente bifore hem/ and he came nyz to ihū: þat he
 schulde kyße hym/ soþely ihc seyde to hym/ Judas wiþ a cosse
 þou bitrayest mannes sone/ soþely þei þat weren aboute hym:
 seinge

Luke

seinge þat þat was to come/ seyden to hym/ lorde zif we
smynen in swerde/ and one of hem smote þe seruaunt of þe
prynce of prists/ and kitte of his litil ryzt ere/ forsoþe ihc
answerynge seih/ suffre zee til biðir/ and whanne he hadde
touchide his litil ere/ he helide hym/ forsoþe ihc seyde to hem
þat camen to hym · þe prynces of prists & magistratis (or
mayres) of þe temple & eldre men/ as to a þeef zee þane gon
oute wiþ swerdis & staues/ whanne I was eche day wiþ zou
in þe temple/ zee streizten not oute handis into me/ but þis is
zoure houre · & þe power of dirkeness/ soþely þei takynge
hym/ ledden to þe hous of þe prynce of prists/ petre forsoþe
suede hym afer/ soþely a sijr kyndelide in þe mydle floor (or
greet hous) and hem sittynge aboute/ petre was in þe mydle
of hem/ whom whanne sum hande mayden had seen sittynge
at þe lizte & had biholden hym/ sche seyde/ and þis was wiþ
hym/ and he denyede hym seyinge/ womman I knewe not
hym/ & aftir a litil anoper man seinge hym seyde/ and þou
art of hem/ petre forsoþe seih/ o man I am not/ and a space
made as of one houre · soþely anoper affermyde/ seyinge/
treuely & þis was wiþ hym/ for whi & he was of galilee/ and
petre seih/ man I noot what þou seist/ and anone zit hym spek-
ynge/ a cocke croupe/ and þe lorde turnede azen/ bihelde petre/
and petre hadde mynde on þe worde of ihu as he had seyde ·
for bifore þe cocke croue/ priex þou schalt denye me/ & petre
gon forþ/ wepte bittirly/ and þe men þat helden hym · scorne-
den hym smytynge (or beetynge) hym/ and þei weyliden (or
bidden) hym · & smyten his face · & ariden hym seyinge/ pro-
phecie þou · who is it þat smote þee/ also many oþer þingis
þei blasfemynge/ seyden azenes hym/ and as þe day was made/
þe eldre men of þe puple & prynces of prists & þe scribis camen
to gebir & ledden hym into þe counseyl seyinge/ zif þou art
crisť seye to us/ & he seih to hem/ zif I schal seye to zou/ zee
schulen not bileue to me/ soþely & zif I schal are/ zee schulen
not answeere to me · neþer zee schulen leeue/ forsoþe aftir þis
tyme/

Luke

tyme: mannes sone schal be sittynge on þe ryzt halfe of þe
vertue of god/ herfore alle seydē/ herfore þou art þe sone of
god/ þe whiche seih/ zee seyn: for I am/ and þei seydē what
zit desire we witnesynge/ forsoþe we oure self hane herde of
his mounh//



And al þe multitude of hem risynge: ledden hym to C^m 23^m
pilate/ forsoþe þei bigunnen for to accuse hym •
seyinge/ we haue founden þis turnynge vpsodoune
oure folc: and forbedynge tribute for to be zouen
to cesar • & seyinge hym self for to be cō kyngē/ forsoþe pilate
aride hym seyinge/ art þou kyng of iewis/ and he answerynge
seih/ þou seist/ forsoþe pilate seih to þe prynces of pristis: & to
þe cumpanyes of puple/ I fynde no þing of cause in þis man/
and þei weren strengre seyinge/ he moueh togedir þe puple
techyngē þoruȝ al Jude: bigynnyng fro galilee til hidir/ pilate
forsoþe herynge galilee: aride zif he were a man of galilee/ &
as he knewe þat he was of þe power of heroude: he sente hym
azen to heroude • þe whiche & he was at ierlm̄ þes dayes/ for-
soþe hym seen: heroude ioyede ful myche/ for he was of myche
tyme coueytynge for to here hym • for þat he herde manye
þingis of hym: and he hopide for to se sum tokēn for to be
made of hym/ soþely he aride hym in many wordis/ and he
no þing answeride to hym// ¶ Forsoþe þe prynces of pristis
& scribis stoden stidfastly accusyng hym/ soþely heroude for-
soke (or dispiside) hym wiþ his ooste • & scornede hym • cloþide
wiþ a white clooth • & sente azen to pilate/ and heroude & pi-
late ben made frendis in þe ilke day/ for whi bifore þei weren
enempes togedir/ pilate soþely þe prynces of pristis & magis-
tratis of þe puple clepide to gedir seyde to hem/ zee hane
offride to me þis man • as turnynge aweye þe puple: & lo I
aringe bifore zou • fynde no cause in þis man of þes þingis in
whiche zee accusen hym • but neþer heroude/ for whi I azen
sente zou to hym: & lo no þing worþi þe deþ is done in hym/

Luke

I ſchal leeſe hym amendide (or delyueride) hym chaſtiſide/
 forſoþe he hadde nede for to diſmytte (or delyuer) to hem one
 by þe ſeefſt day/ ſoþely al þe cumpanye criede to gedir: ſeyinge/
 do hym away: and delyuer to hym barrabas/ þe whiche was
 ſente into pryſoun for ſum ſeducōn (or diſtourblynge) made
 in þe cytee: & for manſleinge/ forſoþe eſteſone pilate ſpac to
 hem willynge for to delyuer ihū/ & þei vnder crieden ſeyinge/
 crucifie crucifie hym/ ſoþely þe þridde tyme he ſeyde to hem/
 ſoþely what of euyl þing haþ þis done? I fynde no cauſe of
 deþ in hym/ þerfore I ſchal chaſtiſe hym: & delyuer/ and þei
 conteyneden wiþ greet voyces aringe: þat he ſchulde be cru-
 cifiede/ and þe voyces of hem waren ſtronger/ and pilate de-
 myde here aringe for to be done/ Soþely he delyueride to hem
 hym þat for manſleinge & ſeducōn was ſente into priſoun:
 whom þei axiden: ſoþely he bitoke ihū to here wille/ and
 whanne þei ledden hym þei tooken ſumman Symount of
 citenen compynge fro þe toun: & þei puttiden to hym a croſſe
 for to bere after Ihū/ ſoþely þer ſuede hym myche cumpanye
 of puple: & of wymmen þat weyliden & mourneden hym/
 ſoþely ihc turnede to hem: ſeyde/ douztris of ierlām nyl zee
 wepe vpon me: but wepe zee on zou ſelf & on zoure ſones/ for
 lo dayes ſchulen come: in whiche it ſchal be ſeyde/ bleſſide be
 bareyne wymmen: & þe wombis þat haue not gendride: & þe
 tetis þat haue not zouen ſouke/ þanne þei ſchulen bygynne
 for to ſepe to mounteyns falle zee doune on vs: and to ſmale
 hilles couer zee vs/ for zif in a greene tree þei done þis þing:
 what ſchal be done in a drie? Soþely and oþer two wickide
 men weren ledde wiþ hym: þat þei ſchulden be ſlayne/ and
 aftir þat þei camen into a place: þat is clepide of caluarie:
 þere þei crucifieden hym/ and he þeeſes: one on þe riȝthalf:
 & þe toþer on þe liſtehalf/ forſoþe Ihc ſeyde/ ſadir forȝue
 to hem: for þei witen not what þei done/ forſoþe þei depart-
 ynge his cloyes: ſenten lottis/ & þe puple ſtood abidyng: & þe
 prynces ſcorneden hym wiþ hem ſeyinge/ oþer men he made
ſaaf:

Luke

saaf: make he hym self saaf/ zif his be crist he chosen of god/
forsope & knyztis scorneden hym comynge nyz * & offreden
vynegre to hym * seyinge/ zif hou art kyng of iewis: make
hee saaf/ forsope & he superscripcōn was writen on hym wiþ
grec lettris * of latyn & of ebreu/ his is ihc kyng of iewis/
forsope one of he heefes þat hangiden: blasfemyde hym sey-
inge/ zif hou art c̄st: make þi self saaf & vs/ soþely þe oþer
answerynge: blamyde hym seyinge/ neþer hou dredist god:
þat hou art in þe same dampnacōn/ and treuely we iustly/ for
whi we haue receyuēde worþi þingis to dedis: soþely he þis
no þing of euyl/ and he seyde to Jhū/ lorde haue mynde of
me: whan hou schalt come into þi kyngdom/ and Jhē seyde
to hym/ treuely I seye to hee: þis day hou schalt be wiþ me in
paradise/ soþely it was almost þe sirte houre (or vndrun)/ and
dirkeness ben made in al þe worlde: til þe nynþe houre (or
none)/ and þe sunne is made dirke: & þe veyle of þe temple is
kitte in þe mydle/ and ihc cryinge wiþ greet voyce: seih/ fadir
into þin handis: I bitake my spirit/ and he seyinge þes þingis:
fente oute þe spirit (or diede)/ and centurio seyinge þat þing
þat was done: glorifiede god seyinge/ verreyly þis man was
iuste/ and al þe cumpanye of hem þat weren þere to gedir at
þis spectacle * & sizen þo þingis þat weren done: smytyn here
brestis turneden azen/ forsope alle his knowe stoden afer: and
wymmen þat sueden hym fro galilee * seinge þes þingis/ and
lo a man Ioseph by name * þat was a decuriōne (or hauynge
ten vndre hym) * a good man & iuste/ and þis man consentide
not to þe counseyl & dedis of hem of armathie a cytee of Judee:
þe whiche & he abode þe kyngdom of god/ þis came nyze to
pilate: and axide þe body of Jhū/ and wlappide it done doune
in a linnen clooth * & puttide hym in a graue hewen * þe
whiche not zit any man was putte/ and þe day was para-
ceues * (þat is euen of þe holy day) * and þe saboth bigan to
schyne/ soþely þe wymmen saynge þat camen wiþ hym fro
galilee: sizen þe graue * & how his body was putte/ and þei
turnynge

Luke

turnynge azen: maden redy swete spices & oynementis/ and
sopely in þe saboth þei residen astir þe maundement//

8th 11th



Forsoþe in one of þe wijs ful erly þei camen to þe
graue · bryngynge swete spices · þat þei hadden
made reedy/ and þei founden þe stoon turnyde
away fro þe graue: and þei gon in founden not þe
body of Ihu/ and it is done þe while þei in þouzte weren
astongede of þis þing: lo two men stoden bisides hem in schyn-
nyng clooth/ sopely whanne þei dredde · & bowiden here sem-
blaunt into þe erþe: þei seyden to hem/ what seeken zee þe
lyuynge wijs deade? he is not here: but haf risen/ haue zee
mynde how he spak to zou · whan he was zit in galilee · sey-
inge/ for it bihoueh mannes sone to be bitaken into þe handis
of synful men & to be crucifiede · & þe þridde day for to rise
azen/ and þei biþouzten on his wordis/ and þei gone azen fro
þe graue: tolden alle þes þingis to þe elleuene & to alle oþer/
forsoþe þer was mary maudeleyn & Joon & mary of James &
oþer wymmen þat weren wijs hem · þat seyde to apostlis þes
þingis/ and þes wordis ben seen bifore hem as madnesis:
and þei bileueden not to hem// ¶ Forsoþe petre rysynge ran
to þe graue · & he bowynge doune sise þe lynnyn cloþes (or
schetis) putte al one: and he wente by hym self wondrynge
þat þat was done// ¶ And lo two of hem wenten in þat day
into a castel þat was fro ierlm in þe space of sixty furlongis ·
by name emaus · & þei spaken to gedir of alle þes þingis þat
hadden bifalle/ and it is done þe while þei talkeden (or fable-
den) & by hem self souzten/ & ihc hym self neyzinge wente wijs
hem/ sopely here pzen weren holde · lest þei knewen/ and he
seih to hem/ what ben þes wordis þat zee speken togedir wan-
drynge · & zee ben sorowful/ and one to whom þe name was
cleophas answerynge: seyde/ þou al one art a pilgrym in
ierlm · & hast þou not knowen what þingis ben done in it in
þes dayes? to whom he seyde what? and þei seyden to hym/
of

Luke

of Ihu of nazareth hat was a man prophet myzty in worde & werke · bifore god & al pe puple/ & how he hizest priftis & oure prynces bitoken hym into dampnacioune of deþ · and crucifieden hym/ forsoþe we hopeden he was to bie azen isrl/ and now vpon alle þes þingis þe þridde day is to day þat þes þingis ben done/ but & summe wymmen of oures maden vs aferde · þe whiche bifore þe lizte weren at þe graue/ and his body not founden: þei camen seyinge hem also for to haue seen a sizte of aungels · þe whiche seyn hym for to lyue/ and summen of oures wenten to þe graue · & so þei founden as þe wymmen seyden: but hym þei founden not/ & he seyde to hem/ o foolis & slowe of herte for to bileue in alle þingis þat þe prophetis haue spoken/ wheþer it bihoste not crist for to suffre · & so to entre into his glorie/ and he bygynnyng at moyse & alle þe prophetis/ interpretide (or declaride) to hem in alle scriptures þat weren of hym/ and þei camen nyȝt to þe castel whider þei wenten/ and he made countenaunce hym for to go forþir/ and þei constreyneden hym seyinge/ dwelle wiþ vs · for it drawiþ to nyȝt: & þe day is nowwe bowide doune/ & he entride in wiþ hem/ and it is done þe while he resside wiþ hem at mete: he took brede & bleſside & brake & dresseide to hem/ and þe pȝen of hem ben openyde: and þei knewen hym & he vāpȝchide fro here pȝen/ and þei seyden to gedir/ wher oure herte was not brennyng in vs · þe while he spae in þe weye · & openyde to vs scriptures/ and þei rȝlyng in þe same houre: wenten azen to ierlū & founden elleuene gederide to gedir · & hem þat weren wiþ hem seyinge/ for þe lorde rose verreyly & apperide to Symount/ and þei tolden what þingis weren done in þe weye · & how þei knewen hym in brekyng of brede/ forsoþe þe while þei spaken þes þingis · Ihu stood in þe mydle of hem: and seyde to hem/ pees to ȝou/ I am nyl ȝee drede/ soþely þei disourblide & agast: geſside hem for to se a spirit/ and he seyde to hem/ what ben ȝee turblide · & þouȝtis ſteȝzen vp into ȝoure hertis: se ȝee myn handis & my feet: for

Luke

for I my self am/ seele zee & se zee · for a spirit haþ not
fleysche & boones· as zee seen me for to haue/ and whanne he
had seyde þis þing· he schewide handis & feet/ forsoþe zit hem
not bileuyng · & wondryng for ioþe· he seyde/ haue zee here
any þing þat schal be eten· and þei offreden to hym a parte
of fische rostide· and a combe of honye/ and whanne he had
eten bifore hem· he takyng þe relyfes · zæue to hem/ and he
seyde to hem/ þes ben þe wordis þat I spak to zou whan I
was zit wiþ zou/ for it is nede alle þingis to be fulfild · þat
ben writen in þe lawe of moyse · & in prophetis & in psalmes
of me/ þanne he openyde to hem witte· þat þei schulden vn-
derstonde scriptures/ & he seyde to hem/ for þus it is writen · &
þus it bihoſte cō for to suffre · & rise azen fro deade þe þridde
day · & penaunce & remysſiō of synnes for to be prechide in
his name into alle folkis · men bigynnyng fro ierlm/ forsoþe
zee ben witneſſis of þes þingis/ and I schal sende þe biþizte
þing of my fadir into zou/ soþely sitte zee in þe cytee· til þat
zee be cloþide wiþ vertue from an hize/ forsoþe he ledde hem
forþe into bethanye · & his hondis lifte vp· he bleſſide hem/ and
it is done þe while he bleſſide hem· he departide fro hem &
was borne into heuene/ and þei worschippynge · wenten azen
into ierlm wiþ greet ioþe· and weren euermore in þe temple
berpyng & blessyng god//

ye euuangelie of Ioon



In he bygynnyng was he worde (hat is C^m 1^m
goddis sone)/ and he worde was at
god · & god was he worde/ his was in
he bigynnyng at god/ alle þingis ben
made by hym/ and wiþ outen hym is
made nouzt/ þat þing þat is made/ in
hym was liſt/ and he liſt was he liſte of
men/ and he liſte ſchyneth in dirkenessiſ
& dirkenessiſ comprehendē (or taken) not it/ a man was ſente
fro god/ to whom he name was ioon/ þis man came into wit-
nessynge · þat he schulde bere witnessynge of he liſt · þat alle
men schulde bileue by hym/ he was not he liſt/ but þat he
schulde bere witnessynge of he liſt · it was verrey liſte he
whiche liſteneth eche man comynge into þis worlde/ he was
in he worlde · & he worlde was made by hym/ and he worlde
knewe hym not/ he came into his owne þingis/ and hes re-
ceyueden hym not/ forsoþe how manye euer receyueden hym/
he ȝaue to hem power for to be made he sones of god/ to hem
þat bileueden in his name/ he whiche not of bloodis · neþer of
wille of fleysche · neþer of wille of man/ but ben borne of god/
and he worde (þat is goddis sone)/ is made fleysche (or man) ·
& haþ dwellide in vs/ and we hane ſeen he glorie of hym/ he
glorie as of he one bigoten of he fadir/ he sone ful of grace &
treuþe// ¶ Ioon berith witnessynge of hym/ and crieth seyinge/
þis it was of whom I seyde/ he þat is to come astir me · is
made bifore me/ for he was he former þan I/ and of he plenty
of hym/ we alle hane taken & grace for grace/ for he lawe is
ȝouen by moyses/ forsoþe grace & treuþe is made by ihū crist/
no man euer siȝe god · no but he one bigoten sone þat is in he
boſum of he fadir/ he haþ tolde oute/ and þis is he witnessynge
of

Joon

of Joon • whanne Jewis senten fro ierlām pristin & dekenes to hym: pat hei schulden are hym/ who art pou/ and he knowelechide & denyede not/ and he knowelechide: for I am not crist/ and hei axiden hym/ what herfore art pou helie? and he seyde I am not/ art pou a prophete? and he answeride/ nay/ herfore hei seyden to hym/ who art pou: pat we ȝyue answer to hes pat senten us/ what seist thou of þi self? he seith/ I (am) a voyce of (a man) cryinge in deserte: dresse zee þe weye of þe lorde • as ysaie þe prophete seyde/ and hei pat weren sente: weren of þe pharisees/ and hei axiden hym & seyden to hym/ what herfore baptisist thou • zif thou art not crist • neher helie • neher a prophete? Joon answeride to hem seyinge/ I baptise in water • soþely þe mydil (man) of ȝou stood whom zee knewen not/ he it is pat aftir me is to come • pat is made bifore me • of whom I am not worþi pat I unbynde þe þwonge of his schoo/ þes þingis ben done in bethanye ouer iordan: where Joon was baptisyng/ another day Joon sise ihū comynge to hym: and he seith/ lo þe lombe of god: lo þat doith away þe synnes of þe worlde/ þis is he of whom I seyde/ aftir me cometh a man þat is made bifore me • for he was þe former þan I/ I knewe hym not/ but þat he be schewide in isrl̄ herfore I came baptisyng in water/ and Joon bare witnessyng: seyinge/ for I sise þe spirit comynge as a culuer from heuene • & dwellynge vpon hym • & I knewe hym not/ but he þat sente me for to baptise in water: seyde to me/ vpon whom thou schalt se þe spirit comynge doune • & dwellynge vpon hym • þis is it þat baptisith in þe holy goost/ and I sise & bare witnessyng • for þis is þe sone of god// ¶ Another day Joon stode & two of his disciplis/ and he biholdynge ihū walkynge: seith/ lo þe lombe of god/ and two disciplis herden hym spekynge: and folowiden ihū/ soþely ih̄c conuertide (or turnyde aȝen) • & seinge hem supynge hym: seith to hem/ what seeken zee? þe whiche seyden to hym/ raby þat is interpretide mayster • where dwellest thou? he seith to hem/ come zee & se zee/ þei

Joon

hei camen & sizen where he dwellide: and dwelten at hym in
 hat day/ sohely he houre was at he tenpe/ forsope andreu
 broper of Symount petre was one of he two hat herden of
 Joon: and hadden suede hym/ his sonde firste his broper sy-
 mount: and he seih/ we haue founden messias * hat is inter-
 pretide crist/ and he ledde hym to Ihū/ sohely biholdynge hym:
 seyde/ pou art symount he sone of Johanna * pou schalt be cle-
 pide cephas * hat is interpretide petre/ forsope on he morowe
 he wolde gon oute into galilee: and he sonde philip/ and Ihc
 seih to hym sue pou me/ philip was of bethsayda he cytee of
 andrewe & petre/ Philip sonde nathanael: and he seih to hym/
 we haue founden Ihū he sone of Ioseph of nazareth * whom
 moyse wrote in he lawe & prophetis/ and nathanael seyde to
 hym/ of nazareth may sum þing of good be/ Philip seih to
 hym/ come & se/ and Ihc sise nathanael compnge to hym: and
 seih to hym/ lo verrepley a man of isrl * in whom is no gile/
 nathanael seih to hym/ wher of hast pou knowen me/ Ihc an-
 sweride & seih to hym/ bifore pat philip clepide hee * whanne
 pou were vndre he syge tree: I sise hee/ nathanael answeride
 to hym: & seih raby * pou art he sone of god: pou art kyng of
 isrl/ Ihc answeride & seyde to hym/ for I seyde to hee * I sise
 hee vndre he syge tree: pou bileuest/ pou schalt se more þan
 þes þingis/ and he seyde to hem/ treuely I seye to zou * zee
 schulen se heuene openyde * & he aungels of god stepzyngge vp
 & compnge doune vpon mannes sone//



And he þridde day weddyngis ben made in he chane C^m 2^m
 of cuntre of galilee: and he modir of ihū was here/
 sohely Ihc is clepide & his disciplis to he wed-
 dyngis/ and wijn saylynge: he modir of ihū seyde
 to hym/ hei haue not wijn/ and Ihc seih to hire/ what to me &
 to hee womman? myn houre came not zit/ he modir of hym
 seih to he mynystres/ what euer þing I schal seye to zou: do zee/
 forsope here weren putte sixe stonen pottis astir he clenking of

Joon

iewis: takyng eche two or pre mesures/ Jh̄c seih to hem/ fille
 zee he pottis wiþ water/ and hei filliden hem vnto he hizest
 parte/ & ih̄c seyde to hem/ draw zee now & berih to architric-
 lyn (þat is prynce of þe hous of þre stagis)/ and hei taken/
 and as architriclyn tastide þe water made wijn · & he wiste not
 wher of it was · soþely þe mynystres wisten þat drowen þe
 water: architriclyn clepiþ þe spouse & seih to hym/ eche man
 puttih firste good wijn · and whanne men schulen be fulfildes:
 þan þat þat is worste/ soþely þou hast kepte good wyn vnto
 nowe/ Jh̄c dide þis bigynnyng of signes in þe chane of gali-
 lee · & schetwide his glorie: & his disciplis bileueden into hym/
 aftir þes þingis he came doune to capharnaum · & his modir &
 his breheren & his disciplis: & hei dwelten here not manye
 dayes/ and þe paske of iewis was nyȝ: and ih̄c wente vp to
 ierl̄m/ & he fonde in þe temple men sellynge scheep & oren &
 culueris & money chaungers sittynge/ and whanne he hadde
 made of smale coordis as a scourge: he caste oute alle of þe
 temple · & scheep & oren/ and he schedde oute money of chaun-
 gers: and turnede vpsodoune þe boordis/ and he seyde to hem
 þat solden culuers/ takih away hens þes þingis · & nyl zee
 make þe hous of my fadir: an hous of marchaundise/ forsoþe
 his disciplis hadden mynde: for it is writen/ þe zeele (or fer-
 uoure of loue) of þin hous haþ eten me/ þerfore þe iewes an-
 sweriden & seyden to hym/ what signe (or token) schetwist þou
 to vs · for þou doist þis þingis/ Jh̄c answeride & seyde to hem/
 vndo zee þis temple · & in þre dayes I schal reyse it azen/ þer-
 fore þe iewis seyden/ in fourty & sixe zeer þis temple is bil-
 dide: and þou in þre dayes schalt azen / forsoþe
 he seyde of þe temple of his body · (þat wiþ outen compari-
 soune was more)/ þerfore whanne he had risen fro deade
 (men): his disciplis hadden mynde · for he seyde þis þing/ and
 hei bileueden to þe scripture: and to þe worde þat ih̄c seyde//
 ¶ Forsoþe whanne ih̄c was at ierl̄m in paske in þe feest day ·
 many bileueden in his name · seinge þe signes of hym þat he
dide/

Joon

dide/ sohely ihc hym self • bileefede not hym self to hem • for
 pat he knewe alle men • & for it was not neede to hym: pat
 any man schulde bere witnessynge of man/ sohely he wiste
 what was in man//

¶ Orsope her was a man of the pharisees nychodeme C^m 3^m
 by name: a pryncce of ietwis/ he came to Ihu in the
 nyzt: and seyde to hym/ raby we witen • for of god
 thou hast comen mayster/ Sohely no man may do
 thes signes that thou doist: but zif god were with hym/ Ihu an-
 sweride & seyde to hym/ treuly treuly I seye to thee • but zif a
 man schal be borne azen: he may not se the kyngdom of god/
 nychodeme seyde to hym/ how may a man be borne whanne
 he olde? wher he may entre azen into his modir wombe • & be
 borne azen? Ihu answeride/ treuly treuly I seye to thee • but
 zif a man schal be borne azen of water • & the holy gost: he may
 not entre into the kyngdom of god/ that that is borne of flesche:
 is flesche/ and that that is borne of the spirit: is spirit/ wondre
 thou not for I seyde to thee it bihoueh thou for to be borne azen/
 the spirit brekeh (or quaken) where it wole: and thou herest
 his voyce: but thou wiste not fro whens he cometh • or whidre
 it goeth/ so is eche man that is borne of the spirit/ nychodeme
 answeride: and seyde to hym/ how mowne thes thingis be
 done? Ihu answeride & seyde to hym/ art thou a mayster in
 isrl • & knowest not thes thingis? treuly treuly I seye to thee •
 for that that we witen we speken • & that that we haue seen • we
 witnessen: & zee taken not oure witnessynge/ zif I haue seyde
 to thou erhely thingis • & zee bileuen not: how zif I schal seye
 to thou heuenely thingis schulen zee bileue? & no man steyzeth
 vp into heuene: but he that came doune fro heuene • mannes
 sone that is in heuene/ and as moyses reide vp a serpent in
 deserte: so it bihoues mannes sone for to be reyside vp/ that
 eche man that bileueh into hym perische not: but haue euer-
 lastynge lyf// ¶ Forsope god louede so the worlde • that he gaue
 his

Joon

his one bigotten sone · pat eche man pat bileueþ into hym
perische not: but haue euerlastynge liif/ soþely god sente not
his sone into þe worlde pat he iuge þe worlde: but pat þe
worlde be sauede by hym/ he pat bileueþ into hym: is not
dempde (or dampnyde)/ forsoþe he pat bileueþ not · is now
dempde: for he bileueþ not in þe name of þe one bigotten sone
of god/ soþely þis is þe doom/ for lizte came into þe worlde:
and men loueden more dirkenessis þan lizte/ forsoþe here
werkis weren euyl/ soþely eche man pat doih euyl: hatih lizt/
and comeþ not to lizt: pat his werke be not reproude (or vn-
dirnomen)/ soþely he pat doih treuþe · comeþ to lizt · pat his
werkis be schewide: for þei ben in god/ aftir þes þingis Jh̄c
came & his disciplis into þe lande of Jude: and here he dwel-
lide wiþ hem & baptizide/ soþeli Joon was baptisynge in
ennon bisidris salym · for manye watris weren here: and þei
camen · & weren baptiside/ soþely Jon was not zit sente into
prisoune/ soþely a question (or aringe) is made of Jones dis-
ciplis wiþ þe iewis of þe purificacōn (or clensynge)/ and þei
camen to Joon: and seyden to hym/ raby (or mayster) · he pat
was wiþ þee ouer Jordan to whom þou hast borne wit-
nessynge: so he baptisih · and alle men comen to hym/ Jon
antweride & seyde/ a man may not take any þing: but zif it
be zouen to hym/ from heuene/ zee zoure self beren wit-
nessynge to me pat I seyde I am not c̄st: but for I am sente
bifore hym/ he pat hath a spouse (or wiif): is þe spouse (or
houfbonde)/ forsoþe a frende of þe spouse pat stondih & herih
hym ioep in ioþe · for þe voyce of þe spouse/ herfore in þis
þing: my ioþe is fulfildē/ it bihoueh hym for to ware: forsoþe
me for to be munyschide (or made lasse)/ he pat came from
aboue: is vpon alle/ he pat is of þe erþe: spekih of þe erþe/ he
pat comeþ fro heuene: is aboue alle/ and þis þing pat he siþe
& herde · he witnessih: & no man takih his witnessynge/ forsoþe
he pat hath taken his witnessynge: hath markide pat god is
soþefast/ forsoþe he whom god sente: spekih þe wordis of god/
forsoþe

Joon

forsope not to mesure · god zyueþ þe spirit/ þe sadir loueþ þe sone · & he haþ zouen alle þingis in his hande/ he þat bileueþ into þe sone · haþ euerlastyngē lijf/ forsope he þat is vnbeleueful to þe sone · schal not se euerlastyngē lijf · but þe wrappe of god dwelliþ on hym/



þerfore as Jhū knewe þat pharisees herden þat C^m 4^m
 Jhū makih mo disciplis & baptisih þan Jon: þouz
 ihc baptiside not but his disciplis: he leste Jude &
 wente azen into galilee/ soþely it bihouede hym to
 passe by samarie/ þerfore Jhc came by a cytee of samarie ·
 þat is seyde sicar · bisidis þe maner (or feelde) þat Jacob zaue
 to Joseph his sone/ forsope þe welle of Jacob was here/ soþely
 ihc made wery (or saynte) of þe iourney: satte þus at þe
 welle/ soþely þe houre was as þe sirte (or vndrun)/ a wom-
 man came of samarie for to drawe water/ Jhc seih to hire/
 zyue me for to drynke/ forsope his disciplis hadden gon into
 þe cytee: þat þei schulden bye metis/ þerfore þe ilke womman
 of samarie · seih to hym/ how þou whanne þou art a iewe arist
 of me for to drynke: þat am a womman of samarie/ forsope
 iewis vsen not to comoune wiþ samaritans/ Jhc answeride &
 seyde to hire/ zif þou wiltist þe zifte of god · & who it is þat
 seih to þee · zyue to me for to drynke: parauenture þou
 schuldist haue aride of hym · & he schulde haue zyue to þee
 quycke water/ þe womman seih to hym/ Sire neþer þou hast
 in what þing þou schalt drawe: & þe pitte is deep/ þerfore
 wher of hast þou quycke water? wher þou art more þan oure
 sadir Jacob þat zaue to vs þe pitte · & he dranke þerof · & his
 sones & his beestis/ Jhc answeride & seyde to hir/ eche man
 þat drynkiþ of þis water: schal þirste ettesones/ forsope he
 þat schal drynke of þe water þat I schal zyue to hym: schal
 not þirste into wiþ outhen ende/ but þe water þat I schal zyue to
 hym: schal be made to hym a welle of spryngyng by water:
 into euerlastyng lijf/ þe womman seih to hym/ sire zyue to me
 þis

Luke

for I my self am/ feele zee & se zee • for a spirit hath not
fleysche & boones: as zee seen me for to haue/ and whanne he
had seyde his þing: he schewide handis & feet/ forsoþe zit hem
not bileupnge • & wondrynge for ioye: he seyde/ haue zee here
any þing þat schal be eten/ and þei offreden to hym a parte
of fische rostide: and a combe of honye/ and whanne he had
eten bifore hem: he takynge þe relyphes • zawe to hem/ and he
seyde to hem/ þes ben þe wordis þat I spak to zou whan I
was zit wiþ zou/ for it is nede alle þingis to be fulfild • þat
ben writen in þe lawe of moyses • & in prophetis & in psalmes
of me/ þanne he openyde to hem witte: þat þei schulden vn-
dirstonde scriptures/ & he seyde to hem/ for þus it is writen • &
þus it bihoſte eñ for to suffer • & rise azen fro deade þe þridde
day • & penaunce & remysſion of synnes for to be prechide in
his name into alle folkis • men bigynnynge fro ierlm/ forsoþe
zee ben witneſſis of þes þingis/ and I schal sende þe bihiȝte
þing of my fadir into zou/ soþely sitte zee in þe cytee: til þat
zee be cloþide wiþ vertue from an hize/ forsoþe he ledde hem
forþe into bethanye • & his hondis lifte vp: he bleſſide hem/ and
it is done þe while he bleſſide hem: he departide fro hem &
was borne into heuene/ and þei worschippynge • wenten azen
into ierlm wiþ greet ioye: and weren euermore in þe temple
berypinge & bleſſynge god//

ye euuangelie of Ioon



In þe bygynnyng was þe worde (þat is C^m 1^m
goddis sone)/ and þe worde was at
god · & god was þe worde/ þis was in
þe bigynnyng at god/ alle þingis ben
made by hym/ and wiþ outen hym is
made nouzt/ þat þing þat is made/ in
hym was liif/ and þe liif was þe lizte of
men/ and þe lizte schyneþ in dirkenessis
& dirkenessis comprehendē (or taken) not it/ a man was sente
fro god/ to whom þe name was ioon/ þis man came into wit-
nessyng · þat he schulde bere witnessyng of þe lizt · þat alle
men schulde bileue by hym/ he was not þe lizt/ but þat he
schulde bere witnessyng of þe lizt · it was verrey lizte þe
whiche liztenē eche man comyng into þis worlde/ he was
in þe worlde · & þe worlde was made by hym/ and þe worlde
knewe hym not/ he came into his owne þingis/ and hes re-
ceyueden hym not/ forsoþe how manye euer receyueden hym/
he ȝaue to hem power for to be made þe sones of god/ to hem
þat bileueden in his name/ þe whiche not of bloodis · neþer of
wille of fleysche · neþer of wille of man/ but ben borne of god/
and þe worde (þat is goddis sone)/ is made fleysche (or man) ·
& haþ dwellide in vs/ and we hane seen þe glorie of hym/ þe
glorie as of þe one bigoten of þe fadir/ þe sone ful of grace &
treuþe// ¶ Ioon berith witnessyng of hym/ and crieth seyng/
þis it was of whom I seyde/ he þat is to come astir me · is
made bifore me · for he was þe former þan I/ and of þe plenty
of hym/ we alle hane taken & grace for grace/ for þe lawe is
ȝouen by moyses/ forsoþe grace & treuþe is made by ihū crist/
no man euer siȝe god · no but þe one bigoten sone þat is in þe
bosum of þe fadir/ he haþ tolde oute/ and þis is þe witnessyng
of

Joan

was in whiche Jhc̄ seyde to hym pi sone lyueþ/ and he bi-
leuede & al his hous/ Jhc̄ dide este his secounde token:
whanne he came fro Jude into galilee//

C^m 5^m



Aftir þis þing was a feest day of iewis: and ihc̄
wente into irlm̄/ forsoþe in irlm̄ is a stondynge
water of beestis • þat in ebrewe is namyde bethsay:
da • haupng syue litil zatis/ in þis lay a greet mul-
titude of langewischynge men • blynde & crokide • drie • aby-
dynge þe styrpge of þe water/ forsoþe þe aungel of þe lorde
aftir tyme came doune into þe stondynge water: and þe water
was mouede/ and he þat first came doune in þe cesterne • aftir
þe mouynge of þe water: was made hool • of what sekenesse
he was holden// ¶ Forsoþe summan was þere haupinge &
þritty zeeris in his sekenesse/whanne Jhc̄ hadde seen hym lig-
gynge • & had knowen • for nowe he hadde myche tyme: he
seip to hym/ wolte þou be made hool? þe siȝk man answeride
to hym/ lorde I haue not a man þat whanne þe water is
turblide • he sende me into þe cesterne/ forsoþe þe while I
come: anoper goiþ doune bifore me/ Jhc̄ seip to hym/ rise vp
take þi bed & wandre/ and anone þe man is made hool: &
took vp his bed & wandride/ and saboth was in þat day/ þer-
fore þe iewis seyden to hym þat was made hool/ it is saboth
it is not leueful to þee: for to take þi bed/ he answeride to
hem/ he þat made me saaf: seyde to me/ take þi bed & wan-
dre/ þerfore þei axiden hym/ who is þat man þat seyde to þee:
take þi bed & wandre/ soþely he þat was made hool: wiste
not who it was/ forsoþe Jhc̄ bomide fro þe cumpanye ordey-
nyde (or sette) in þe place/ aftirwarde Jhc̄ sonde hym in þe
temple: and seyde to hym/ lo þou art made hool • now nyl
þou synne • lestie any þing bifalle to þee/ þe ilke man wente
& tolde to þe iewis • for it was Jhū þat made hym hool/ þer-
fore þe iewis pursueden Jhū: for he dide þis þing in þe saboth/
forsoþe Jhc̄ answeride to hem/ my fadir worchþ til now:

¶

Joon

& I wirche/ herfore hanne he iewis souzten more to flee hym/ for not onely he brake he saboth · but & he seyde his fadir god · makynge hym euen to god/ and so Jhc̄ answerde & seyde to hem/ treuely treuely I seye to zou · he sone maye not of hym self do any ping: no but þat ping þat he schal se he fadir doyngē/ what euer pingis soþely he doih: þes pingis also & he sone doih/ forsoþe he fadir loueh he sone: & schewih to hym alle pingis þat he doih/ and he schal schewe to hym more werkis þan þes þat zee wondre/ forsoþe as he fadir reysiþ deade men & quykenih so & he sone quykenih whom he wole/ soþely neþer he fadir iugih any man: but haþ zyue al he dome to he sone · þat alle men honoure he sone · as þei honouren he fadir/ he þat honoureþ not he sone: honoureþ not he fadir þat sente hym/ treuely treuely I seye to zou · for he þat herih my worde · & bileueþ to hym þat sente me: haþ euerlastynge lijf · & comeþ not into doom: but passiþ fro deþ into lijf/ treuely treuely I seye to zou · for he houre comeþ & now it is · whanne deade men schulen here he voyce of goddis sone: & þei þat heren schulen lyue// ¶ Soþely as he fadir haþ lijf in hym self: so he zaue & to the sone · for to haue lijf in hym self/ and he zaue hym power for to make doom: for he is mannes sone/ nyl zee wondre his ping · for he houre comeþ in whiche alle men þat ben in biriels schulen here he voyce of goddis sone/ and þei þat haue done good pingis: schulen come forþ into rysynge azen of lijf/ forsoþe þei þat haue done euyl pingis into rysynge azen of doom/ I may not of my self do any ping: but as I here I iuge & my doom is iuste for I seek not my wille: but he wille of he fadir þat sente me/ zif I bere witnessynge of my self: my witnessynge is not trewe/ anoper is þat berih witnessynge of me: and I woot for his witnessynge is trewe þat he berih of me/ zee senten to Joon: and he bare witnessynge to he treue/ soþely I take not witnessynge of man: but I seye þes pingis þat zee be saaf/ he was a lanterne brennyngē · & schynnyngē (or zyuyngē) lizte/ forsoþe zee wol-

Joon

den glade at an houre in his lizte/ soþely I haue more lizt
 þan Joon/ forsoþe þe werkis þat my fadir ȝaue to me þat I
 parfoume hem: þe ilke werkis þat I do beren witnessynge of
 me: for þe fadir sente me/ and þe fadir þat sente me: he bare
 witnessynge of me/ neþer ȝee herden euer his voyce: neþer
 sizen his likenesse (or fourme)/ and ȝee hane not his worde
 dwellynge in ȝou: for ȝee bileuen not to hym whom he sente/
 seeke ȝee scriptures in whiche ȝee wenen for to haue euerlast-
 ynge lijf: & þo it ben þat beren witnessynge of me/ and ȝee
 wolen not come to me: þat ȝee haue lijf// ¶ I take not clere-
 nesse of men: but I haue knowen ȝou: for ȝee haue not þe
 loue of god in ȝou/ I came in þe name of my fadir: and ȝee
 taken not me/ ȝif an oþer schal come in his owne name: ȝee
 schulen receyue hym/ how mowne ȝee bileue þat receyuen
 glorie eche of oþer: & ȝee seeken not þe glorie þat is of god al
 one/ nyl ȝee gesse þat I came to accuse ȝou anentis þe fadir/
 it is moyses þat accusith ȝou in whom ȝee hopen/ forsoþe ȝif
 ȝee bileueden to moyses: parauenture ȝee schulden bileue & to
 me/ soþely he wrote of me/ soþely ȝif ȝee bileuen not to his
 lettris: how schulen ȝee bileue to my wordis?

Cm 6m



And þes þingis Jh̄c wente ouer þe see of galilee:
 þat is tiberiadis: & a greet multitude suede hym:
 for þei sizen þe tokenes þat he dide on hem þat
 weren siȝk/ þerfore Jh̄c wente into an hil: & satte
 þere wiþ his disciplis/ forsoþe pass was ful nyȝt: a feest day of
 þe iewis/ þerfore whanne Jh̄c hadde liste vp þe ȝzen & had
 seen for a greet multitude came to hym: he seiþ to philip/
 wherof schulen we bie loues: þat þes men ete? soþely he seiþ
 þis þing temptynge hym/ forsoþe he wiste what was to do/
 philip answeride to hym/ þe looues of two hundride pens suf-
 ficen not to hem: þat eche man take a litil what/ one of his
 disciplis andrew þe broþer of symount petre seiþ to hym/
 one childe is here þat hap fyue barley looues & two fischis: but
 what

Joan

what ben þes þingis amonge so many men/ þerfore Jh̄c seiþ/
make zee men for to sitte at þe mete/ for þere was myche hay
in þe place/ þerfore men saten at þe mete in nowmbre of fyue
þousandis/ þerfore Jh̄c took þe fyue looues/ & whanne he had
done þankyngis/ he departide to men sittynge at þe mete/
also & of þe fischis/ as myche as þei wolden/ forsoþe as þei
ben fulfildes/ he seyde to his disciplis/ gadir zee þe relifes þat
ben leste/ þat þei perische not/ þerfore þei gederiden & fillide
twelue cofyns of relifes/ of þe fyue barley loues & two fischis
þat lesten to hem þat hadden eten/ þerfore þo men whanne
þei hadden seen þe token (or myracle) þat he had done/ seyden/
for þis is verreypley a prophete þat is come into þe worlde/
forsoþe whanne Jh̄u had knowen þat þei weren to come þat
þei schulden raupte hym & make hym kyng/ he al one
steyze eyzt into an hyl/ soþely as euen was made/ his disciplis
wenten doune to þe see/ and whanne þei hadden steyzede vp
into þe boot/ þei camen ouer þe see into capharnaum/ and
dirkenessis weren now made/ and ih̄c had not now comen to
hem/ forsoþe a greet wynde blowynge/ þe see roos vp/ þer-
fore whanne þei hadden rowide as fyue & twenty furlongis or
þritty/ þei sizen Jh̄u walkynge on þe see & to be made nerte
to þe boot & þei dredden/ soþely he seyde to hem/ I am/ nyl
zee drede/ þerfore þei wolden take hym into þe boot/ & anone
þe boot was at þe lande to whiche þei wenten// ¶ On þe toþer
day þe cumpanye þat stode ouer þe see/ sizen for þer was none
oper boot þere/ no but one/ & for ih̄c entride not wif disciplis
into þe boot/ but his disciplis weren al one/ forsoþe oper
bootis camen fro tiberiadis/ bifidis þe place where þei eten
brede/ doinge þankyngis to god/ þerfore whanne þe cum-
panye had seen for Jh̄u was not þere neþer his disciplis/ þei
steyzeden into bootis/ & camen into capharnaum/ seekyng
Jh̄u/ and whanne þei hadden founden hym ouer þe see/ þei
seyden to hym/ raby how hast þou comen hidir/ Jh̄c answeride
to hem & seyde/ treuely treuely I seye to zou/ zee seeken me
not

Joon

not for zee sizen he tokenes (or myraclis): but for zee eten of looues & ben fulfildē/ wirche zee not mete hat perischē: but hat dwellē into euerlastyngē lijf. he whiche mete mannes sone zyueh to zou/ forsohe god he fadir bitokenyde (or markide) hym/ herfore hei seyden to hym/ what schulen we do. hat we wirche he werkis of god. Jhē answeride & seyde to hem/ his is he werke of god. hat zee bileue into hym. whom he sente/ herfore hei seyden to hym/ herfore what token dost pou. hat we se. & bileue to hee. what wirchist pou. oure faderis eten manna in deserte. as it is writen/ he zaue to hem brede fro heuene for to ete/ herfore Jhē seih to hem/ treuely treuely I seye to zou. not moyses zaue to zou verrey breed fro heuene. but my fadir zyueh to zou verrey breed fro heuene/ sohely it is verrey breed hat comē doune fro heuene. & zyueh lijf to he worlde/ herfore hei seyden/ lorde euermore zyue to vs his breed/ sohely Jhē seyde to hem/ I am breed of lijf/ he hat comē to me. schal not hungre/ & he hat bileueh in me. schal neuer hirste/ but I seye to zou. for & zee haue seen me. and zee bileueden not/ al ping hat he fadir zyueh to me. schal come to me/ & I schal not caste oute hym hat comē to me/ for I came doune fro heuene. not hat I do my wille. but he wille of hym hat sente me/ forsohe his is wille of hym hat sente me he fadir. hat alle ping hat he fadir zaue to me. I leese nouzt of it but azen reyse it in he laste dāye/ sohely his he wille of my fadir hat sente me. hat eche man hat seeh he sone & bileueh into hym. haue euerlastyngē lijf. & I schal azen reyse hym. in he laste dāy/ herfore iewis grucchiden of hym. for he had seyde. I am breed hat camen doune from heuene. & hei seyden/ wher his is not. Jhē he sone of Joseph. whos fadir & modir we haue knowen. herfore how seih he his. for I came doune from heuene/ herfore Jhē answeride & seyde to hem/ nyl zee grucche togedir/ no man may come to me. no but he fadir hat sente me schal drāwe hym/ and I schal azen reyse hym in he laste dāye/ it is writen in prophetis.

Joon

& alle men schulen be able for to be tauzte of god/ sche man
pat hab herde of þe fadir & lernyde/ comen to me/ not for
any man lize þe fadir · no but þis pat is of god/ þis lize
þe fadir/ soþely soþely I seye to zou · he pat bileueþ in me/
hab euerlastyng liff/ I am breed of liff/ zoure faderis eten
manna in deserte/ and ben deade/ þis is breed comyng doune
from heuene · pat zif any man schal ete þerof/ he dieþ not/ I
am quycke breed pat came doune fro heuene/ zif any man
schal ete of þis breed/ he schal lyue wipouten ende/ & þe breed
pat I schal zyue/ is my fleysche · for liff of þe worlde/ þerfore
þe iewis chidden togeder seyng/ how may he þis zyue to us
his fleysche for to ete/ þerfore Ihc seih to hem/ treuely treuely
I seye to zou · no but zee schulen ete þe fleysche of mannes
sone · & drynke his blood/ zee schulen not haue liff in zou/ he
pat etih my fleysche & drynkih my blood/ hab euerlastyng
lyfe/ & I schal azen reyse hym in þe laste day/ forsoþe my
fleysche is verreyly mete/ & my blood is verreyly drynke/ he
pat etih my fleysche & drynkih my blood/ dwellih in me & I in
hym/ as my fadir lyuyng hab sente me/ & I lyue for þe fadir/
and he pat etih me/ & he schal lyue for me/ þis is breede pat
came doune fro heuene/ not as zoure faderis eten manna &
ben deade/ he pat etih þis breed · schal lyue wipouten ende/
he seyde þes þingis in þe sinagoge/ techyng in capharnaum/
þerfore manye of his disciplis heryng/ seyden/ þis worde is
harde & who may here hym/ soþely Ihc wityng at hym self ·
for his disciplis grucchiden of þis þing/ seyde to hem/ þis þing
sclaunderih zou/ þerfore zif zee schulen se mannes sone fley-
zing vp where he was bifore/ it is þe spirit pat quykeneþ · þe
fleysche profiteþ no þing/ þe wordis pat I haue spoken to zou/
ben spirit & liff/ but þere ben summe of zou pat bileuen not/
soþely Ihc wiste at þe bigynnyng · whiche weren bileuynges/
& who was to bitraye hym/ and he seyde/ þerfore I seye to
zou · pat no man may come to me/ no but it were zouen to
hym of my fadir/ fro þis tyme manye of his disciplis wenten
abak/

Joon

abak. and nowe wenten not wiþ hym/ herfore Jh̄c seyde to þe
twelue/ wher & zee wolen go aweye/ herfore Symon petre
answeride to hym/ lorde to whom schulen we gon/ þou hast
wordis of euerlastynghe lijf/ and we hane bileuede & knowen/
for þou art crist þe sone of god/ herfore Jh̄c answeride to hem/
wher I chees not zou twelue. and one of zou is a sende/ for-
soþe he seyde of Judas of Symount scarioth/ forsoþe he þis
was to bitraye hym. whanne he was one of þe twelue//

C^m 7^m

Forsoþe aftir þes þingis Jh̄c walkide into galilee/
for he wolde not walke into Judee. for Jewis
souzten for to see hym/ soþely þer was in þe nexte
a feest day of Jewis senophogia. (þat is a feest of
tabernaclis) forsoþe his breþeren seyden to hym/ passe fro
hens & go into Jude. þat & þi disciplis se þe werkis þat þou
doist/ forsoþe no man doih any þing in hide place (or pryueþ).
& he seekih for to be into opyn/ zif þou doist þis þing. schewe
þi self to þe worlde/ forsoþe neþer his breþeren bileueden into
hym/ herfore Jh̄c seih to hem/ my tyme came not zit but
zoure tyme is euermore reedy/ þe worlde may not haue
hatide/ [] soþely it hatih me. for I here witnessynghe
þerof. for þe werkis of it ben euyl/ steyze zee vp at þis feest
day. but I schal not steyze vp at þis feest day. for my tyme is
not zit fulfilde/ whanne he had seyde þes þingis he dwelte
in galilee/ forsoþe as his breþeren steyzeden vp at þe feest
day. þanne & he steyzede vp. not opynly but as in pryueþ/
herfore þe iewis souzten hym in þe feest day & seyden/ where
is he/ and myche grucchynghe was of hym. in þe cumpanye
of puple/ forsoþe summe seyden for he is gode. forsoþe oþer
seyden naye. but he deceyueþ þe cumpanyes/ neþeles no
man spac opynly of hym. for dreede of Jewis/ forsoþe nowe
þe feest day medelynghe (or goinge bitwire). Jh̄c wente vp
into þe temple. & tauzte/ and þe iewis wondriden seyinge/
how can þis (man) lettris. siþen he haþ not lernede/ Jh̄c
answeride

Joon

antweride hem and seyde my doctryne is not myn: but
 his hat sente me/ zif any man wole do his wille: he schal
 knowe of þe techyng: wher he be of god: or I speke of myself/
 he hat spekiþ of hymself: seekiþ his owne glorie/ forsoþe þat
 seekiþ þe glorie of hym þat sente hym: þis is soþefast & vn-
 riztwelness is not in hym/ wher moyses saue not a lawe:
 and no man of zou doih þe lawe: what seeken zee for to flee
 me? þe cumpange antweride & seyde/ þou hast a deuyt/ who
 seekiþ for to flee þee? Ihc antweride & seyde to hem/ I haue
 done one werke: & alle zee wondren/ þerfore moyses saue to
 zou circumcisiõ: not for it is of moyses: but of faderis/ & in
 þe saboth zee circumciden a man/ zif a man take circumcisiõ
 in þe saboth: þat þe lawe of moyses be not broken: haue zee
 indignaciõ or wrappe to me: for I made al þe man hool in
 þe saboth: nyl zee deme after þe face but deme zee a riztful
 doom/ þerfore summen of ierlm seyden/ wher þis is not whom
 þe iewis seeken for to flee/ and lo he spekiþ openly: & þei seyn
 no þing to hym/ wher þe prynces knewen verreyly: for þis is
 crist: but we witen þis man of whens he is/ forsoþe whanne
 crist schal come: no man woot of whens he is/ þerfore Ihc
 criede in þe temple techyng & seyinge/ and zee witen me of
 whens I am/ and I came not of my self: but he is trewe þat
 sente me: whom zee knowen not/ I woot hym: & zif I schal
 seye for I woot hym not: I schal be lijk to zou a liet/ and I
 woot hym: for of hym I am: & he sente me/ þerfore þei
 souzten for to take hym: and no man sente into hym handis:
 for his houre came not zit/ soþely many of þe cumpange bi-
 leueden into hym: & seyden/ whanne crist schal come: wher he
 schal do mo tokenes þan þis doih? pharisees herden þe cum-
 pange of puple grucchyng of hym þes þingis/ and þe prynces
 of pharisees senten mynystris: þat þei schulden take hym/
 þerfore ihc seyde to hem/ zit a litil tyme I am wih zou: & I
 go þe fadir þat sente me/ zee schulen seeke me & zee schulen
 not fynde: & where I am: zee may not come/ þerfor iewis
seyden

Joon

seyden to hem self/ whidit is he þis to go: for we schulen not
 fynde hym/ wher he is to go into scaterynge (or distrupinge)
 of heþen men: and is to techynge heþen men/ what is þis
 worde þe whiche he seyde: zee schulen seeke me & zee schulen
 not fynde/ & where I am zee may not come// forsoþe in þe
 laste day of þe greet feste: Jh̄c stode & criede seyinge/ zif any
 man þristiþ: come he to me & drynke he/ he þat bileueþ into
 me as þe scripture seiþ: flodis of quicke water schulen flowe of
 his wombe/ soþely he seyde þis þing of þe holy goſt: whom
 men bileuynge into hym: weren to take/ forsoþe þe spirit was
 not zit zouen: for ih̄c was not zit glorifiede/ þerfore of þat
 cumpanye whan þei hadden herde þes wordis of hym þei sey-
 den/ þis is verreyly a prophete/ oþer seyden: þis is crist/ for-
 soþe summe seyden: wher crist comeþ fro galilee: wher þe
 scripture seiþ not þat of þe seed of dauid: & of þe castel of beth-
 lem where dauid was crist comeþ: and so discencon is made
 in þe cumpanye for hym/ forsoþe summe of hem wolden haue
 taken hym: but no man sente to handis vpon hym/ þerfore
 þe mynyſtris camen to þe biſchopes & to þe pharisees: and
 þei seyden to hem/ whi brouzten zee not hym: þe mynyſtris
 anſweriden/ neuer man ſpac ſo: as þis ſpekith/ þerfore þe
 pharisees anſweriden to hem/ wher & zee ben deceyuede:
 wher any of þe prynces bileueden into hym: or of þe phari-
 sees: but þis cumpanye of puple þat knewe not þe lawe: ben
 curſide/ nychodeme seiþ to hem: he þat came to hym by nyzt:
 þat was one of hem/ wher oure lawe demeþ a man: no but
 firſte it haue herde of hym: and knowe what he doiþ/ þei an-
 ſweriden & seyden to hym/ wher & þou art a man of galilee:
 ſeeke þou scriptures & ſe: for a prophete riſiþ not of galilee/
 and þei turneden azen eche into his owne hous//

Forsoþe

Joon

Ensope Jhesus wente into þe mounte of olyuete: and C^m 8^m
erly este he came into þe temple/ & al þe puple
came to hym: & he sittynge tauzte hem/ forsoþe
scribis & pharisees ledden to a womman taken in
auoutrie: & sette hire into þe mydel: and seyde to hym/ mayst-
ter þis womman is now taken in auoutrie/ forsoþe in þe
lawe moyses comaundide vs for to stoon suche/ þerfore what
seyst þou? soþely þei seyden þis þing temptynge hym: þat þei
myzte accuse hym/ forsoþe Jhesus bowyng doune hym self:
wrote wiþ þe synger in þe erþe/ soþely whanne þei lastiden
axinge hym: he reyside hym self: & seyde to hem/ he whom of
zou is wiþ outen synne: firste sende a stoon into hire/ and este
he bowyng hym self: wrote in þe erþe/ soþely þei herynge þes
þingis wenten aweye: one astir anoþer: þei bygynnyng at
þe eldre men/ and Jhesus dwelte al one: and þe womman stond-
ynge in þe mydil/ soþely Jhesus reysynge hym self: seyde to hire/
womman where ben þei þat accusen? no man dampnyde þee/
þe whiche seyde/ no man lorde/ Jhesus seyde to hire/ neþer I
shal dampne þee/ go þou: and nowe astirwarde nyl þou do
synne// ¶ Þerfore Jhesus este spak to hem seyinge/ I am þe lizte
of þe worlde/ he þat sueþ me: walkiþ not in dirkeness: but
he schal haue þe lizte of lijt/ þerfore þe pharisees seyden/ þou
berest witnessynge of þi self: þi witnessynge is not trewe/ Jhesus
answeride & seyde to hem/ and zif I bere witnessynge of my-
self: my witnessynge is trewe/ for I wote fro whens I came:
& whidir I go/ forsoþe zee witen not fro whens I came or
whidir I go/ forsoþe zee demen astir þe slepsche: I deme not
any man/ and zif I deme: my dome is trewe/ for I am not al
one: but I & þe fadir þat sente me/ & in zoure lawe it is wri-
ten: for þe witnessynge of two men is trewe/ I am þat bere
witnessynge of myself: and þe fadir þat sente me: beriþ wit-
nessynge of me/ þerfore þei seyden to hym: where is þi fadir?
Jhesus answeride neþer zee witen (or knowen) me: neþer zee

Joon

witen my fadir/ zif zee wisten me: parauenture & zee schul-
den wite my fadir/ Jh̄c spac hes wordis in he treforie: tech-
ynge in he temple/ and no man took hym: for his houre came
not zit// ¶ herfore eftē Jh̄c seyde to hem/ lo I go & zee schul-
en seeke me: and zee schulen die in zoure synne/ whidir I go:
zee moſwne not come/ herfore he iewis ſeyden/ wher he ſchal
ſlee hym ſelf: for he ſeiþ whidir I go zee moſwne not come/ &
he ſeyde to hem/ zee ben of byneþe: I am of aboue/ zee ben
of þis worlde: I am not of þis worlde/ herfore I ſeyde to zou:
for zee ſchulen die in zoure ſynnes/ forſoþe zif zee ſchulen not
bileue for I am: zee ſchulen dye in zoure ſynnes/ forſoþe þei
ſeyden to hym/ who art þou/ Jh̄c ſeyde to hem/ he bygynnyngē
(or he firſte of alle þing) · he whiche I ſpeke to zou/ I haue
many þingis for to ſpeke of to deme of zou: but he þat ſente
me is ſoþeſaſte/ & I ſpeke in he worlde hes þingis þat I herde
of hym/ and þei knewen not for he ſeyde his fadir god/ herfore
Jh̄c ſeiþ to hem/ whanne zee haue reþlīde mannes ſone:
þanne zee ſchulen knowe for I am/ and of my ſelf I do no
þing: but as my fadir tauzte me · I ſpeke hes þingis/ and he
þat ſente me is wiþ me · & leſte me not al one: for I do euer-
more þo þingis þat ben pleaſaunt to hym// ¶ Hym ſpekynge
þis þingis: manye bileueden into hym/ herfore Jh̄c ſeyde to
hem he iewis þat bileueden into hym/ zif zee ſchulen dwelle
in my worde: verreyly zee ſchulen be my diſciplis/ and zee
ſchulen knowe he trewþe: and treuþe ſchal delyuer zou/ her-
fore he Jewis anſweriden to hym/ we ben þe ſeed of abra-
ham: and to no man we euer ſerueden/ how ſeyſt þou · for
zee ſchulen be fre: Jh̄c anſweride to hem treuly treuly I ſeye
to zou: for eche man þat doiþ ſynne: is ſeruaunt of ſynne/
ſoþely þe ſeruaunt dwelliþ not in þe hous into wiþ outen ende/
herfore zif þe ſone ſchal delyuer zou: verreyly zee ſchulen be
free/ I wote for zee ben abrahams ſones · but zee ſeeken for
to ſlee me · for my worde takih not in zou/ and I ſpeek þo
þingis þat I ſize at my fadir: & zee done þo þingis þat zee
ſizen

Joon

fizen at zoure fadir/ hei antweriden & seyden to hym/ abra-
 ham is oure fadir/ Jh̄c seih to hem/ zif zee ben pe sonen of
 abraham/ do zee pe werkis of abraham/ sohely nowē zee
 seeken for to flee me · a man pat haue spoken to zou pe treuē
 pat I herde of god/ abraham dide not his ping/ zee done pe
 werkis of zoure fadir/ and so hei seyden to hym/ we ben not
 borne of fornicacōn/ we haue one fadir god/ herfore Jh̄c seyde
 to hem zif god were zoure fadir/ sohely zee schulden loue mee/
 forsope I procedide (or came forþ of god/ and came/ neper
 sohely I came of my self/ but he sente me/ whi knowen zee
 not my speche · for zee motwne not here my word/ zee ben of
 pe fadir pe deuyt/ and zee wolen do pe desires of zoure fadir/
 he was a man sleer fro pe bigynnyngē/ and in treuē he stood
 not · for treuē is not in hym/ whanne he spekē lesyngē/ he
 spekē of his owne pingis · for he is a lier · & fadir of it/ sohely
 zif I seye treuē/ zee bileuen not to me/ who of zou schal re-
 proue me of synne/ zif I seye treuē/ whi bileuen zee not to
 me/ he pat is of god herē pe wordis of god/ herfore zee heren
 not/ for zee ben not of god/ herfore pe iewis antweriden &
 seyden/ wher we seyn not wel · for þou art a samaritan · &
 hast a deuyt/ Jh̄c antweride & seyde/ I haue not a deuyt · but
 I honoure my fadir · & zee haue unhonouride me/ forsope I
 seek not my glorie/ þer is pat seekē & demē/ treuely treuely
 I seye to zou · zif any man schal kepe my worde/ he schal not
 se deþ into wiþ ouden ende/ herfore pe iewis seyden/ now we
 haue knowen · for þou hast a deuyt/ abraham is deade & pe
 prophetis · & þou seist zif any schal kepe þi worde · he schal not
 taste deþ into wiþ ouden ende/ wher þou art more þan oure
 fadir abraham pat is deade · & pe prophetis ben deade/ whom
 makist þou þi self/ Jh̄c antweride/ zif I glorifie my self/ my
 glorie is nouzte/ my fadir is þat glorifiē me · whom zee seyn
 for he is zoure god · & zee haue not knowen hym/ forsope I
 haue knowen hym/ & zif I seye for I woot hym not/ I schal
 be a lier lijk to zou/ but I woot hym/ and I kepe his worde/
abraham

Joon

abraham zoure fadir gladide (or ful oute ioyzede) · pat he schulde se my day · & he siȝe & ioyzede/ perfore þe iewis seyden to hym/ þou haþ not zit fifty zeer · & haþ þou seen abraham? perfore ih̄c seyde to hem/ treuely treuely I seye to zou · bifore þat abraham was made: I am/ perfore þei token stones · þat þei schulden caste into hym/ toþely Ih̄c hid him: and wente oute of þe temple//

C^m 9^m



And Ih̄c passynge siȝe a man blynde fro þe birþe/ and his disciplis ariden hym/ raby þat is mayster · who synnede · þis man or his fadir & modir · þat he schulde be borne blynde/ Ih̄c antweride/ neþer þis man synnede · neþer his fadir & modir: but þat þe werkis of god be schewide in hym/ it bihouep me for to wirche þe werkis of hym þat sente me · þe while day is/ þe nyzt schal come: whanne no man may wirche/ how longe I am in þe worlde: I am þe lizte of þe worlde/ whanne he had seyde þes þingis: he spitte into þe erþe · & made cleye of þe spotil: and layde (or bawmede) þe cley on his yzen · & seyde to hym/ go & be þou waschen in þe water of siloy: þat is interpretide sente/ perfore he wente & waschide: and came seyng: and so neyzeþors & þei þat hadden seen hym bifore · for he was a begger: seyden/ wher þis is not he þat satte & beggide? oþer men seyden: for þis it is/ oþer men seyden nay: but it is a liche of hym/ forsoþe he seyde for I am he/ perfore þei seyden to hym/ how ben þin yzen openyde to þee? he antweride/ þe ilke man þat is seyde Ih̄c: made cleye & anoyntide myn yzen: and seyde to me/ go þou to þe water of siloy: and wasche/ & I wente & waschide & siȝe/ and þei seyden to hym/ where is he/ he seiþ I woot not/ þei ledden hym þat was blynde to þe pharisees/ forsoþe it was saboth whanne Ih̄c made cleye & openyde his yzen/ este þe pharisees ariden hym: how he had seyn? and he seyde to hem/ he puttide to me cleye on þe eyzen: and I waschide & I siȝe/ perfore summe of pharisees seyden/ þis

Joon

his man is not of god: for he kepith not þe saboth/ oþer men
seyden/ how may a man synner do þes signes (or myraclis)?
and dyupsiōn was amonge hem/ þerfore þei seyn effesone to
þe blynde man/ what seyst þou of hym þat openyde þin yzen?
soþely he seyde: for he is a prophete/ þerfore iewis bileueden
not of him for he was blynde & had seen: til þei clepiden his
fadir & modir þat had seen/ and þei axiden hem: seinge/ þis
is zoure sone: whom zee seyn for he is borne blynde: how þer-
fore seest he now? his fadir & modir answereden to hem we
witen for þis is oure sone: & he is borne blynde/ soþely how
he seest now we witen not: or who openyde his yzen we witen
neuer/ are zee hym/ he haþ age: speke he of hym self/ his fadir
& modir seyden þes þingis: for þei dredden þe iewes/ forsoþe
nowe þe iewes hadden conspīrit: þat zif any man knowelech-
ide hym crist: he schulde be done oute of þe synagoge/ þerfore
his fadir & modir seyden/ for he haþ age: are zee hym/ þerfore
effesone þei clepiden þe man þat was blynde: and seyden to
hym/ zþue þou glorie to god/ we witen for þis man is a syn-
ner/ þerfore he seyde/ zif he is a synner I woot nere/ one þing
I woot: for whanne I was blynde nowe I se/ þerfore þei
seyden to hym/ what dide he to þee: howe openyde he þin
yzen? he answeride to hem/ I seyde to zou now: & zee herden:
what wolen zee effesone? wher & zee wolen be made his dis-
ciplis? þerfore þei cursiden hym & seyden/ be þou his disciple:
we ben þe disciplis of moyles/ we witen for god spak to moy-
ses: forsoþe we witen not þis of whens he is/ þe ilke man
answeride & seyde to hem/ forsoþe in þis þing is wondreful
þat zee witen not of whens he is: & he haþ openyde myn
yzen/ soþely we witen: for god hereþ not synners/ but zif any
man is worschiper of god & doith his wille: hym he herith/ fro
þe worlde it is not herde þat any man openith þe yzen of
blynde borne men/ no but þis were of god: he myzt not do
any þing/ þei answereden & seyden to hym/ þou art al borne
in synnes: & þou techist vs? and þei castiden hym oute/ Jhē
herde

Joon

herde for þei hadden caste hym oute/ and whanne he hadde founden hym: he seyde to hym/ bileuest þou into þe sone of god? he answeride & seyde/ lord who is he: þat I bileue in hym? and Jh̄c seyde to hym/ and þou hast seen hym: and he it is þat spekith wiþ zee/ and he seith lord I bileue/ and he fallynge doune: worschipide hym/ þerfore Jh̄c seyde to hym/ I came into þe worlde · into doom · þat þei þat seen not · se/ and þei þat seen · be made blynde/ and summe of þe pharisees herden þat weren wiþ hym: and þei seyden to hym/ wher & we ben blynde? Jh̄c seyde to hem/ zif zee weren blynde: zee schulen not haue synne/ but now zee seyn for we seen: zoure synne dwellith//

C^m 10^m



Reuly treuly I seye to zou · he þat cometh not in by þe dore · into þe foolde of scheep · but steyzeth by by anoper weye he is nyzt heef & day heef/ forsoþe he þat entriþ by þe dore: is þe scheperde of þe scheep/ to his þe porter openyþ: and þe scheep heren his voyce/ and he clepiþ his owne scheep by name: and leediþ hem oute/ whanne he haþ sente oute his owne scheep: he goiþ bifore hem · and þe scheep suen hym · for þei knowen his voyce/ toþely þei suen not an alien: but fleen fro hym · for þei hane not knowen þe voyce of aliens/ Jh̄c seyde to hem þis pro- uerbe/ forsoþe þei knowen not what he spač to hem/ þerfore Jh̄c seyde to hem eftesone/ treuely treuely I seye to zou · for I am þe dore of scheep/ alle how many euer camen: ben nyzt heefes & day heefes · but þe scheep herden not hem/ I am þe dore/ zif any man schal entre by me? he schal be sauede/ and he schal go in & schal go oute: & he schal fynde lesowis? a nyzt heef cometh not · but þat he stele & flee & leese/ I came þat þei haue lijf: and haue more plenteuoussly/ I am a gode scheperde/ a good scheperde zyueþ his soule (þat is lijf) for his scheep/ forsoþe a marchaunt (or hiride hyne) · & þat is not a scheperde: whos ben not þe scheep his owne: seeth a wolfe comynge · & he leueþ

Joon

leueh þe scheep & fleeh/ & þe wolfe rauyschij (or scaterij) þe
 scheep/ forsoþe þe marchaunt fleeh * for he is a marchaunt/ &
 and it parteyneh not to hym of þe scheep/ I am a gode herde *
 & I knowe my scheep/ (& my scheep) knowen me/ as þe fadir
 haþ knowen me/ & I knowe þe fadir/ & I putte my lijf for my
 scheep/ & I haue oþer scheep þat ben not of þis folde/ and
 bihoueh me for to leede hem to * & þei schulen here my voyce/
 and it schal be made one folde & one scheperde/ þerfore þe
 fadir loueh me/ for I putte my soule þat estesone I take it/
 no man takij it fro me/ but I putte it fro my self/ I haue
 power for to putte it/ and I haue power for to take it away/
 þis mandement haue I taken of my fadir/ and so discencion
 was made amonge þe ietwis/ for þes wordis/ forsoþe many of
 hem seyden/ he haþ a deuyl & maddij (or warij wood)/ what
 heren zee hym/ oþer men seyden/ þes wordis ben not of a
 man hauynge a fende/ wher a deuyl may open þe yzen of
 blynde men/ forsoþe newe seefis of halowynge of þe tem-
 ple ben made in ierlm/ and it was wynter/ and Jh̄c walkide
 in þe temple/ in þe porche of salomon/ þerfore ietwis enuy-
 rounden hym/ and seyden to hym/ how longe doist þou aweye
 oure soules? zif þou art c̄st/ seye to vs pleyndly (or openly)/
 Jh̄c antweride to hem/ I speke to zou/ and zee bileuen not/
 þe werkis þat I do in name of my fadir/ þes beren witness-
 ynge of me/ but & zee bileuen not/ for zee ben not of my
 scheep/ my scheep heren my voyce/ and I knowe hem * &
 þei suen me/ and I zyue to hem euerlastynge lijf/ & þei
 schulen not perische into wiþ outen ende/ and any man schal
 not rauysche hem of myne hande/ þat þing þat my fadir zaue
 to me is more þan alle/ þerfore no man may rauysche fro my
 faderis hande/ I & þe fadir ben one þing/ Jewes token vp
 stoness/ for to stoon hym to deþ/ Jh̄c antweride to hem/ I haue
 schewide to zou manye werkis of my fadir/ for whiche werkis
 of hem stonen zee me/ þe iewes antweriden to hym/ we
 stoonen þee not of good werke/ but of blasfemye/ & for þou
lijen

Joon

sihen hou art a man: makist hiself god/ Jhc antweride to hem/ wher it is not writen in zoure lawe . for I seye zee ben goddis/ zif he seyde hem goddis . to whom he worde of god is made . & he scripture whiche he fadir halowide & sente into he worlde may not be vndone . & zee seyn for I blasfeme . for I seyde I am goddis sone/ zif I do not he werkis of my fadir: nyl zee bileue to me/ sohely zif I do . hou zee wolen not bileue to me: bileue zee to he werkis/ pat zee knowe & bileue: for he fadir is in me . & I in he fadir/ perfore hei souzten for take hym: & he wente oute of here handis/ and he wente este: sone ouer iordan . into pat place where Joon was firste baptysynge: and he dwelte here/ and manye camen to hym & seyden: for sohely Jon dide no signe (or myracle)/ forsope alle pingis what euer Joon seyde of his: weren sope/ and many bileueden into hym//

C^m 11^m

Forsope her was sum sijk man lazarus of bethanye of he castel of mary & marthe his sistris/ forsope it was mary he whiche anoyntide he lorde wih oynement . & wepte his feet wih hire heres . whos brother lazarus was sijk/ perfore his sistris senten to hym seynge/ lorde lo he whom hou louest is sijk/ forsope Jhc herynge: seyde to hem/ hes seekeneste is not vnto he deþ: but for he glorie of god . pat mannes sone be glorifiede by it/ sohely Jhc louede martha & hire sister marie & lazarus/ perfore as ihc herde for he was sijk: panne sohely in he same place two dayes/ her of astir hes pingis . he seyde to his disciplis/ go we este into Jude/ he disciplis seyn to hym/ raby (or mayster) nowe he iewis souzten for to stoon hee . & este hou gost bidir/ Jhc antweride/ wher her ben not twelue houres of he day/ zif any man schal wandre in he day: he hurtih not . for he sech he lizte of he worlde/ sohely zif he schal wandre in he nyzt: he hurtih for lizte is not in hym/ hes pingis he seih/ and astir hes pingis: he seih to hem/ lazarus oute frende slep: ih:

Joon

ih̄: but I go for to reyse hym fro sleep/ perfore his disciplis
seyden/ lorde zif he slep̄: he schal be saaf/ forsope Ih̄c had
seyde of his deſ/ but hei geſſiden pat he seyde of ſlepyng of
sleep/ hanne perfore Ih̄c seyde oppnly/ lazarus is deade: and
I enioye for zou pat zee bileue for I was not here/ but go we
to hym/ perfore thomas pat is seyde didymus: seyde to euen
disciplis/ and go we: pat we die wiſ hym/ and so Ih̄c came &
ſonde hym hauynge nowē ſoure dayes in þe graue/ ſohely be-
thane was biſidis iſrl̄m as ſittene furlonges/ forsope many of
Jewis camen to mary & marthe * for to counforte hem of
here broþer/ perfore as martha herde for Ih̄u came: ſche ren-
neſ to hym/ mary forsope ſette at home/ perfore martha ſeyde
to Ih̄u/ lorde zif þou haddiſt ben here: my broþer had not ben
deade/ but & nowē I woot * pat whateuer þingis þou ſchalt
are of god: god ſchal zȳue to þee/ Ih̄c ſeiþ to hire/ þi broþer
ſchal riſe azen/ martha ſeiþ to hym/ I woot for he ſchal riſe
azen in þe azen rȳſyng in þe laſte day/ Ih̄c ſeiþ to hire/ I am
azen riſyng & liſf/ he þat bileueþ into me: zhe zif he ſchal
be deade: ſchal lyue/ and eche þat lyueþ & bileueþ into me:
ſchal not die into wiſ ouden ende/ bileueſt þou þis þing? ſche
ſeiþ to hym/ forsope (or zhe) lorde/ I haue bileuede for þou
art criſt * þe ſone of quȳcke * [] pat haſte comen into þis
worlde/ and whanne ſche had ſeyde þis þing: ſche wente & cle-
pide mary hire ſiſter in ſilence or (ſtillenēſſe) ſeyinge/ þe mayſ-
ter comeþ & clepiþ þee/ ſche as ſche herde roos anone: and
came to hym/ ſohely Ih̄c came not zit into þe caſtel: but he
was zit in þat place * where martha had comen azenes hym/
perfore þe ietwis þat weren wiſ hire in þe hous & comfortiden
hire * whanne þei ſizen mary * for ſoone ſche roos & wente
oute: ſueden hire ſeyinge/ for ſche goiþ to þe graue: for to
wepe here/ forsope mary whanne ſche hadde ſeyn where Ih̄c
was: ſeinge hym ſelde to his ſeet * & ſeyde to hym/ lorde zif
þou haddiſt ben: my broþer had not ben deade/ perfore as Ih̄c
ſize hire wepyng & þe ietwis þat weren wiſ hire wepyng: he

Joon

made noyse in spirit & trublidge hym self & seyde/ where haue
zee putte hym/ hei seyden to hym/ lorde come and se/ and Jh̄c
wep̄te/ herfore he Jewis seyden lo how he louede hym/ forsope
summe of hem seyden/ wher his man hat openyde he yzen of he
borne blynde • myzte not make • & his diede not/ herfore este
Jh̄c makynge noyse of hymself/ come to he graue/ forsope her
was a den/ and a stoon putte her on/ Jh̄c seih take zee away
he stoon/ martha he suster of hym hat was deade/ seih to hym/
lorde he synkiþ now • sohely he is of foure dayes/ Jh̄c seih to
hire/ haue I not seyde to pee/ for zif þou schalt bileue/ þou
schalt see glorie of god/ herfore hei token away he stoon/ for-
sope he yzen reyside vpwarde/ Jh̄c seyde/ fadir I do þankyn-
gis to pee/ for þou euermore herdyst me/ forsope I wiste þou
euermore herist me/ but for he puple hat stondiþ aboute I
seyde hat hei bileue • for þou haste sente me/ whanne he had
seyde þes þingis/ he criede wiþ greet voyce/ lazarus come þou
forþ/ and anone he hat was deade/ came forþ • bounden he
handis & he feet wiþ bondis/ and his face was bounden wiþ a
sudarie (or swetyng clooth/) Jh̄c seih to hem/ vnbynde zee
hym/ and suffre zee go away/ herfore many of he iewis hat
camen to mary & martha • & sizen what þingis he dide/ bile-
ueden in hym/ sohely summe of hem wenten to he pharisees •
& seyden to hem what þingis Jh̄c dide// ¶ herfore he bischopes
& he pharisees gederiden a counseyl azenes Jh̄u/ & seyden/
what done we • for his man doþ manye signes (or myracles/)
zif we leuen hym þus/ alle men schulen bileue into hym/ and
romayns schulen come/ and schulen take oure place & folc/
forsope one of hem caphas by name • whanne he was bischop
of þat zeer seyde to hem/ zee witen no þing • for it spedih to
zou hat one man die for he puple/ and hat al he folc perische
not/ forsope he seyde not his þing of hym self • but whanne he
was bischop of þat zeer • he propheciede for ih̄c was to dye for
he folc/ and not onely for he folc/ but hat he schulde gedir into
one he sones of god hat weren scateride/ herfore fro þat day/
pei

Joon

pei houzten for to flee hym// ¶ perfore Jh̄c walkide not nowwe
 oppnly at he iewes: but he wente into a region (or cuntre)
 bifidis deserte: into a cyte þat is seyde effraym · and here he
 dwellide wif his disciplis/ forsoþe he paske of Jewes was
 nerte: and many of þe cuntre slepyeden by to irlm̄: and þe
 day bifore pask · for to halowe hem self/ perfore þei souzten
 Jh̄u: and spaken to gedir · stondynge in þe temple/ what ges-
 ten zee for he cometh not to þe seest day/ forsoþe þe bischopis &
 pharisees hadden zouen a maundement · þat zif any man
 knewe where he is · he schewe · þat þei take hym//



¶ perfore Jh̄c bifore fire dayes of paske came to be- C^m 12^m
 thanye where lazarus was deade · whom Jh̄c rey-
 side/ forsoþe þei maden to hym a soper here: and
 martha mynystride to hym/ lazarus forsoþe was
 one of þe men sittynge at þe mete wif hym/ perfore mary toke
 a pounde of oynement precious spykenarde · & anoyntide þe
 feet of Jh̄u wif hire heris/ and þe hous is fulfild of þe sauour
 of þe oynement/ perfore Judas scarioth one of his disciplis þat
 was to bitraye hym: seyde/ why is þis oynement not solde for
 þre hundride pens & is zouen to nedý men? forsoþe he seyde
 þis þing · not for it parteynede to hym of nedý men: but for
 he was a þeef · & he haupnge purses · bare þo þingis þat weren
 sente/ perfore Jh̄u seyde/ suffre zee hire · þat into þe day of
 my bitynge sche kepe þat/ forsoþe zee schulen euermore haue
 pore men wif zou: soþely zee schulen not euermore haue me/
 perfore myche cumpanye of iewis knewen þat Jh̄c was here/
 and þei camen not oppnly for Jh̄u: but for to se lazarus whom
 he reyside fro deade/ ¶ forsoþe þe prynces of pristis houzten
 for to flee lazarus · for manye of þe iewis for hym wenten
 away & bileueden into Jh̄u/ forsoþe þe morow a myche cum-
 panýe þat came to gedir at þe seest day · whanne þei hadden
 herde whanne Jh̄u cometh to Irlm̄ · taken braunchis of
 palmes · & camen forþe azens hym & crieden/ osanna bleßide
is

Joon

is he þat cometh in þe name of þe lorde kyng of isrl/ and Jh̄c
 sonde a litil asse • & satte vpon hym: as it is writen/ þe douz-
 ter of sion nyl zou drede/ lo þi kyng cometh • sittynge on þe
 colte of a sche asse/ his disciplis knowen not firste þes þingis:
 but whanne ih̄c is glorifiede: þanne þei recordiden (or hadden
 mynde) for þes þingis weren writen of hym • & þes þingis þei
 diden to hym/ þe cumpanye bare witnessynge þat was wiþ
 hym • whanne he clepide lazarus fro þe graue • & reyside hym
 fro deade/ þerfore and þe cumpanye came metynge to hym:
 for þei herden hym to haue his signe/ þerfore þe pharisees sey-
 den to hem self/ zee seen for we profiten no þing/ lo al þe
 worlde wente astir hym// ¶ Forsoþe þere weren summe he-
 þen men of hem þat hadden steyzede vp for to worschip in þe
 feest day/ þerfore þes came to philip • þat was of bethsayda of
 galilee: and preyede hym seyinge/ sire we wolen se Jh̄u/ philip
 cometh & seih to andrewe/ este andrew & philip seyden to ih̄u/
 soþely ih̄c answeride to hem seyinge þe houre cometh þat
 mannes sone schal be clarifiede/ treuely treuely I seye to zou •
 no but þe corne of wheet fallynge into þe erþe schal be deade:
 it dwellih al one/ soþely zif it schal be deade: it bryngis
 myche fruyte/ he þat loues his soule (þat is lijf:) schal leese
 it/ and he þat hatih his soule (þat is lijf) in þis worlde:
 kepih it into euerlastynge lijf/ zif any man serue to me:
 sue he me/ and where I am þere & mynystre (or seruaunt)
 schal be/ zif any man schal mynystre to me: my fadir schal
 worschip hym// ¶ Now my soule is turblide/ and what schal
 I seye? fadir saue me fro þis houre/ but for þat þing I came
 into þis houre/ fadir clarifie þi name/ þerfore a voyce came
 fro heuene: seyinge/ and I haue clarifiede: and zit I schal
 clarifie/ þerfore þe cumpanye þat stood & herde: seyde þundre
 for to be made/ oþer men seyden an aungel spak to hym/ Jh̄u
 answeride & seyde/ þis voyce came not for me: but for zou/
 ¶ now is doom of þe worlde/ now þe prynce of þis worlde
 schal be caste oute/ and zif I schal be enhaunside fro þe erþe:
 I schal drawe alle þingis to my self/ soþely þis þing he seyde:
 signyfynge

Joon

signysfinge by what deþ he was to die/ þe cumpange answer-
 ide to hym/ we haue herde of þe lawe: for crist dwelliþ into
 wiþ outen ende/ how seist þou it bihoueþ mannes sone for to
 be areride/ who is þis mannes sone? þerfore Jh̄c seih to hem/
 zit a litil lizt is in zou/ walke zee þe while zee haue lizt: þat
 dirkeness cacche zou not/ and he wandriþ in dirkeness:
 woot nere whidir he goiþ/ þe while zee haue lizte: bileue zee
 into lizt · þat zee be þe sones of lizte/ Jh̄c spac þes þingis: and
 wente & hidde hym fro hem/ ¶ Soþely whanne he hadde done
 so manye signes bifore hem: þei bileueden not in hym/ þat
 þe worde of ysaie þe prophete schulde be fulfild · whiche he
 seyde/ lorde who bileuede to oure herynge · & to whom is þe
 arme of god schewide/ þerfore þei myzten not bileue · for este-
 sone ysaie seyde/ he haþ blyndide here yzen · & he haþ endur-
 ide (or made harde) þe herte of hem · þat þei se not wiþ yzen
 & vnderstande wiþ herte · & þat þei be conuertide (or al turn-
 yde) · & I hele hem/ ysaie seyde þes þingis · whanne he siþe þe
 glorie of hym · & spac of hym/ neþeles & of þe prynces ma-
 nye bileueden into hym/ but for þe pharisees þei knowele-
 chiden not · þat þei schulden not be caste oute of þe synagoge/
 forsoþe þei loueden þe glorie of men: more þan þe glorie of
 god/ forsoþe Jh̄c criede & seyde · he þat bileueþ into me · bile-
 ueth not into me: but into hym þat sente me/ he þat seþ me:
 seþ hym þat sente me/ I lizte came into þe worlde · þat eche
 man þat bileueþ into me · dwelle not in dirkenesses/ and any
 man schal here my wordis & schal not kepe · I deme hym not/
 forsoþe I came not þat I deme þe worlde: but þat I make þe
 worlde saaf/ he þat dispisiþ me & takiþ not my wordis: haþ
 hym þat schal iuge hym/ þe worde þat I haue spoken: þat
 schal deme hym in þe laste daye/ for I haue not spoken of my
 self · but þe fadir þat sente me · he zæue to me a maundement ·
 what I schal seye & what I schal speek/ and I woot for his
 maundement: is euerlastynge liif/ þerfore þo þingis þat I
 speek · as þe fadir seyde to me: so I speek//

Forsoþe



Forsope bifore he feest day of pass • Jhc witynge for
his houre comen • pat he passe of his worlde to he
fadir • whan he had louede his pat weren in he
worlde • into he ende he louede hem/ and he soper
made whanne he deuyll had sente nowe into he herte of Judas •
pat Judas of symount scarioth schulde bitraye hym • he wi-
tynge for he fadir zaue alle pingis to hym into his handis • &
pat he wente oute fro god • and goh to god • risih fro he soper
& puttih his clothes/ & whanne he had taken a linnen clooh •
he bifore girde hym/ astirwarde he sente water into a basyn •
and bigan for to wasche his disciplis feet • & to wiyh wih lyn-
nen clope • wih whiche he was bifore girde/ perfore he came
to Symount petre • & petre seih to hym/ lorde what pou wasch-
ist to me he feet • Jhc answeride & seyde to hym/ what pingis
I do pou woost not now • forsope pou schalt wite astirwarde/
petre seih to hym/ pou schalt not wasche to me he feet • into
wih outhen ende/ Jhc answeride to hym/ zif I schal not wasche
hee • pou schalt not haue parte wih me/ Symount petre seih
to hym/ lorde not onely my feet • but & he handis & he heede/
Jhc seyde to hym/ he pat is wasche hab no nede • no but pat
he wasche he feet • but he is clene al/ and zee ben clene • but
not alle/ for he wiste wel • who schulde bitraye hym/ perfore
he seyde • zee ben not clene alle/ perfore astir warde pat he
waschide he feet of hem • he toke his clothes/ and whanne he
had restide azen • este he seyde to hem/ zee witen what I haue
done to zou/ zee clepen me mayster & lorde • & zee seyn wel/
forsope I am/ perfore zif I lorde & mayster haue waschen
zoure feet • & zee schulen wasche anohet he tohers feet/ for I
haue zouen ensaumple to zou • pat as I haue done to zou • so
& zee do/ ¶ Crewely trewely I seye to zou • he seruauant is
not more pan his lorde/ neher apostle is more • pan he pat
sente hym/ zif zee witen hes pingis • zee schulen be blesside •
zif zee schulen do hem/ I seye not of zou alle/ I wote he whiche
I haue

Joon

I haue chosen/ but þat þe scripture be fulfildē · he þat etif my
 breede/ schal reyse heel azens me/ treuly treuly I seye to zou ·
 bifore it be done · þat whanne it schal be done/ zee bileuen for
 I am/ treuly treuly I seye to zou · he þat takif whom euer I
 schal sende/ receyueþ me/ for he þat receyueþ me/ receyueþ
 hym þat sente me/ whanne Ih̄c had seyde þes þingis/ he was
 turblide & seyde/ treuly treuly I seye to zou · for one of zou
 schal bitraye me/ þerfore þe disciplis lokeden to gedir/ dout-
 ynge of whom he seyde/ þerfore one of his disciplis was rest-
 ynge in þe bosum of Ih̄u/ whom Ih̄u louede/ þerfore symount
 petre bileuyde to hym/ and seif to hym/ who is it of þe whiche
 he seif/ and so whanne he had restide azen vpon þe breste of
 Ih̄u/ he seif to hym/ lorde who is it/ Ih̄c answeride/ he it is
 to whom I schal dresse breed indippide/ and whanne he had
 dippide in breed/ he zawe to Judas of Symount scarioth/ and
 astir þe mussel/ þanne sathanas entrede into hym/ and Ih̄c seif
 to hym/ what þingis þou doest/ do þou sunner/ forsoþe no man
 of sittynge at þe mete wisse þis þing/ to what þing he seyde to
 hym/ forsoþe summe gessiden for Judas has pursis/ þat Ih̄c
 had seyde to hym/ bie þou þo þingis þat ben nedeful to vs/ at
 þe feest day/ or þat he schulde zyue sum þing to nedyn men/
 þerfore whanne he had taken þe mussel/ he wente oute anone/
 forsoþe it was nyzt/ þerfore whanne he hadde gon oute/ Ih̄c
 seyde mannes sone is clarifiede & god is clarifiede in hym/ &
 god schal clarifie hym in hym self · & anone he schal clarifie
 hym/ litil sones · zit a litil I am wif zou/ zee schulen seek me ·
 & as I seyde to þe iewis/ whidir I go zee mowne not come/
 and to zou I seye now/ I zyue zou a newe maundement · þat
 zee louen to gedir as I louede zou/ þat & zee louen to gedir/
 in þis þing alle men schulen knowe · þat zee ben my disciplis/
 zif zee schulen haue loue to gedir/ Symount petre seif to hym/
 lorde whidir goste þou/ Ih̄c answeride/ whidir I go þou mayst
 not sue me nowe · but þou schalt sue astirwarde/ petre seif to
 hym/ whi may I not sue þee nowe/ I schal putte my soule
(þat

Joon

(pat is my lijf:) for hee/ Jh̄c answeride/ hou schalt putte pi soule (pat is pi lijf) for me/ treuly treuly I seye to hee · he cocke schal not crowe til hou schalt denye me pries/ & he seih to his discipulis//

C^m 14^m



SE not zoure herte discourblide: ne drede it/ zee bileuen into god: & bileue zee into me/ in he hous of my fadir: ben many dwellyngis/ zif any lesse: I schulde haue seyde to zou · for I go for to make redy to zou a place/ & zif I schal go aweye & schal make reedy to zou aplace: eftesone I come · & schal take zou to my self/ pat where I am: & zee be/ and whidir I go zee witen: & zee wite he weye/ thomas seih to hym/ lorde we witen not whidir hou goest/ and how mowne we wite he weye/ Jh̄c seih to hym/ I am weye treuþe & lijf/ no man cometh to he fadir: no but by me/ zif zee hadden knowe me: soþely zee hadden knowen & my fadir/ & astirwarde zee schulen knowe hym: and zee haue seen hym/ philip seih to hym/ lorde schewe to vs he fadir: and it sufficeþ to vs/ Jh̄c seih to hym/ so myche tyme I am wih zou · & haue zee not knowen me/ philip he þat seep me · seep & he fadir/ how seyste þou schewe to vs he fadir/ bileuest þou not · for I in he fadir & he fadir is in me/ I speke not of myself: he wordis þat I speke to zou/ soþely he fadir dwellynge in me: he doith he werkis/ bileue zee not for I in he fadir: & he fadir is in me/ ellis bileue zee for he ilke werkis/ treuly treuly I seye to zou · he þat bileueþ into me: and he schal do he werkis þat I do/ & he schal do more werkis þan þes · for I go to he fadir/ and what euer þing zee schulen are he fadir in my name: I schal do þis þing · þat he fadir be glorifiede in he sone/ zif zee schulen are any þing in my name: I schal do þis þing · þat he fadir be glorifiede in he sone/ zif zee schulen are any þing in my name: I schal do it/ zif zee louen me: kepe zee my comaundementis/ & I schal prepe he fadir: and he schal gife to zou anoper confortoure · þat he dwelle wih

Joon

wijf zou into wijf ouden ende · he spirit of treuþe/ whiche
 (spirit) he worlde may not take: for it seep not hym neþer
 woot hym/ forsoþe zee schulen knowe hym: for he schal dwelle
 at zou · & he schal be in zou/ I schal not leue zou fadirles: I
 schal come to zou/ zit a litil & he worlde seep not me now/
 forsoþe zee schulen se me: for I lyue: and zee schulen lyue/ in
 þat day zee schulen knowe: for I am in my fadir: & zee in me ·
 & I in zou/ he þat haþ my comaundementis & kepith hem: he
 it is þat loueþ me/ forsoþe he þat loueþ me schal be louede of
 my fadir/ & I schal loue hym: & I schal schewe to hym my self/
 Judas seiþ to hym · not he of scarioth/ lorde what is done: for
 þou art to schewe to vs þi self · & not to þe worlde/ Jh̄c an-
 sweride & seyde to hym/ zif any man loueþ me: he schal kepe
 my worde/ and my fadir schal loue hym · & we schulen come
 to hym · & we schulen make dwellynge at hym/ he þat loueþ
 not me: kepith not my wordis/ and þe worde whiche zee haue
 herde is not myn: but his þat sente me þe faderis/ þes þingis
 I haue spoken to zou: dwellynge at zou/ forsoþe þe holy goft
 comfortoure whom þe fadir schal sende in my name: he schal
 teche zou al þingis/ and schal schewe to zou all þingis: what
 euer I schal seye to zou/ pees I leue to zou: my pees I zyeue
 to zou/ not as þe worlde zyeueþ: I zyeue to zou: be not zoure
 herte distourblide: ne drede it/ zee haue herde for I seyde to
 zou: I go & come to zou: zif zee loueden me: forsoþe zee schu-
 len ioye · for I go to þe fadir · for þe fadir is more þan I/ and
 now I haue seyde to zou bifore it be done: þat whanne it
 schal be done: zee bileue/ now I schal not speke many þingis
 to zou/ forsoþe þe prynce of þis worlde comeþ: and he haþ not
 in me any þing/ but þat þe worlde knowe: for I loue þe fadir/
 and as þe fadir zaue to me comaundement: to I do/ rise zee:
 go we hens//



I am a verrey vyne: and my fadir is an erpe tiliet/
eche syon (or braunche) not berynge fruyte in me:
he schal do it aweye/ & eche pat berih fruyte: he
schal purge it: pat it more bere fruyte/ nowwe zee
ben clene: for þe worde þat I haue spoken to zou/ dwelle
zee in me: & I in zou/ as a sioune (or braunche) may not make
fruyte of it self: no but it schal dwelle in þe vyne tree: so
neþer zee no but zif zee schulen dwelle in me/ I am a vyn-
tree: zee þe siouns (or braunchis)/ who þat dwellih in me &
I in hym: þis berih myche fruyte/ for wiþ outen me: zee
moune no þing do/ zif any man schal not dwelle in me: lo he
schal be sente oute as a scioune: & schal ware drie/ and þei
schulen gedir hym: & þei schulen sende hym into þe fire: & he
brenneþ/ zif zee schulen dwelle in me: & my wordis dwelle in
zou: what euer þing zee schulen wille: zee schulen are: & it
schal be done to zou/ in þis þing my fadir is clarifiede: þat zee
brynge moste fruyte: & zee be made my disciplis/ as my fadir
louede me: & I louede zou/ dwelle zee in my loue/ zif zee schu-
len kepe my maundementis: zee schulen dwelle in my loue:
as I haue kepte þe maundementis of my fadir/ and I dwelle
in his loue/ þes þingis I spac to zou þat my ioye be in zou:
and zoure ioye be fulfilde// ¶ þis is þe comaundement: þat
zee loue togedir as I louede zou/ no man haþ more loue þan
þis: þat any putte his soule for his frendis/ zee ben my frendis:
zif zee schulen do þes þingis þat I comaunde zou/ nowwe I
schal not seye zou seruauntis: for þe seruaunt woot not what
his lorde schal do/ forsoþe I haue seyde zou frendis: for alle
þingis what euer I herde of my fadir: I haue made knowen
to zou/ zee haue not chofen me/ but I chees zou: & putte zou
þat zee go & brynge fruyte: and zoure fruyte dwelle/ þat what
euer þing zee schulen are þe fadir in my name: he ȝyue to
zou/ þes þingis I comaunde to zou þat zee loue togedir/ zif
þe worlde hate zou: wite zee for it hadde me in haate firste
þan

Joon

han zou/ zif zee hadden ben of he worlde: he worlde schulde
loue hat ping hat was his/ but for zee ben not of he worlde.
but I chees zou fro he worlde: perfore he worlde hatih zou:
haue zee mynde of my worde. he whiche I seyde to zou: he
seruaunt is not more han his lorde/ zif hei haue pursuede me:
& hei schulen pursue zou/ zif hei haue kepte my worde: and
hei schulen kepe zoure/ but hei schulen do to zou alle hes
pingis for my name: for hei witen not hym hat sente me/ zif
I had not comen & hadde not spoken to hem hei schulden not
haue synne/ forsope now hei haue not excusacō of here synne/
he hat hatih me: hatih & my fadir/ zif I hadde not done werkis
in hem: he whiche none oper man dide: hei schulden not haue
synne/ forsope now & hei haue seen & hatide me: & my fadir/
but hat he worde be fulfilde hat is writen in zoure lawe: for
hei hadden me in hate wih outen cause/ forsope whanne he
confortoure schal come. he whiche I schal sende to zou fro he
fadir. a spirit of treuþe. he whiche procedih (or cometh forþe)
of he fadir: he schal bere witnessynge of me/ and zee schulen
bere witnessynge: for zee ben wih me fro he bygynnyng//



hes pingis I haue spoken to zou: hat zee be not
sclaunderide/ hei schulen make zou wih outen
synagogis/ but he houre cometh. hat eche man hat
sleep zou: deme hym for to ȝyue seruyce to god/ and
hei schulen do to zou pingis: for hei haue not knowen he fadir
neþer me/ but hes pingis I spak to zou. hat whanne he houre
of hem schal come: zee haue mynde for I seyde to zou/ ¶ I
seyde not to zou hes pingis fro he bigynnyng: for I was wih
zou/ & now I go to hym hat sente me: & no man of zou arisþ
me whidir goþ þou/ but for I haue spoken to zou hes pingis.
sorowe or heuynesse haþ fulfilde zoure herte/ but I seye to zou
treuþe: it spedih to zou hat I go/ soþely zif I schal not go
awege: he confortoure schal not come to zou/ forsope zif I
schal go awege: I schal sende hym to zou/ and whanne he schal
come:

C^m 16^m

Joon

come: he schal reprove þe worlde of synne & of ríztwefnesse & of doom/ forsoþe of synne for zee haue not bileuede into me/ soþely of ríztwefnesse: for I go to þe fadir: & now zee schulen not se me/ forsoþe of doom: for þe prynce of þis worlde is now demyde// ¶ zit I haue many þingis for to seye to zou: but zee motwne not here now/ soþely whanne þe ilke spirit of treuþe schal come: he schal teche zou al treuþe/ soþely he schal not speke of hym self: but what euer þingis he schal here: he schal speke/ & he schal telle zou: þes þingis þat ben to come/ he schal clariessie me: for of myn he schal take: & schal telle to zou/ alle þingis what kyn þingis þe fadir haþ: ben myne/ þerfore I seyde to zou: for of myn he schal take & telle to zou/ ¶ A litil & now zee schulen not se me: & eftesone a litil: & zee schulen se me: for I go to þe fadir/ þerfore somme of his discipulis seyden to gedir/ what is þis þing þat he seip to vs: a litil & zee schulen not se me: for I go to þe fadir/ þerfore þei seyden what is þis þat he seip to vs a litil/ we witen not what he spekiþ/ forsoþe Ihc knewe for þei wolden axe: and he seyde to hem/ of þis þing zee seeken amonge zou: for I seyde/ a litil & zee schulen not se me: & eftesone a litil & zee schulen se me/ treuely treuely I seye to zou: for zee schulen mourne & wepe: forsoþe þe worlde schal enioye/ for zee schulen be sorowful: but zoure sorowe (or heuynesse): schal turne into ioie/ soþely a womman whanne sche bereþ childe: haþ sorowe for hire houre comeþ/ forsoþe whanne sche haþ borne a sone: now sche þenkiþ not of þe pressure (or peyne) for ioie: for a man is borne into þe worlde/ & þerfore zee haue now sorowe/ soþely eftesone I schal se zou: and zoure herte schal enioye/ and no man schal take fro zou zoure ioie/ & in þat day zee schulen not axeme any þing/ treuely treuely I seye to zou: zif zee schulen are þe fadir any þing in my name: he schal ȝpue it to zou/ til now zee axiden not any þing in my name/ are zee: and zee schulen take þat zoure ioie be ful/ I haue spoken to zou þes þingis in prouerbis (or dirke saumples)/ þe houre comeþ.

Joon

comeþ · whanne nowe I schal not speke to zou in prouerbis ·
but oppnly of my fadir I schal telle to zou/ in þat day zee
schul are in my name/ & nowe I seye to zou · for I schal prepe
þe fadir of zou/ forsoþe he þe fadir loueþ zou · for zee haue
louede me · & haue bileuede for I wente oute fro god/ I wente
oute fro þe fadir · and I came into þe worlde/ eftesone I leue
þe worlde · & I go to þe fadir/ his disciplis seyden/ lo nowe
hou spekest oppnly · and hou seist no prouerbe/ nowe we witen
for þou wost alle þingis · & it is no nede to þee · þat any man are
þee/ in þis þing we bileuen · for þou wentist oute fro god/ I hē
answerde to hem/ now zee bileuen/ lo þe houre comeþ · & nowe
it comeþ · þat zee be disparplide (or scateride) · eche into his
owne þingis · and leue me al one/ and I am not al one · for
þe fadir is wiþ me/ þes þingis I haue spoken to zou · þat zee
haue pees in me/ in þe worlde zee schulen haue prestynge (or
ouerleyngē) // but trisie zee I haue ouercomen þe worlde //



Thes þingis I hē spak · & þe yzen listē vp into heuene ·
he seyde/ fadir þe houre comeþ · clarifie þi sone ·
þat þi sone clarifie þee/ as þou hast zouen to hym
power of eche sleysche (or man) þat alle þing þat
þou hast zouen to hym · he zyeue to hem euerlastynge liif/ for-
soþe þis is euerlastynge liif · þat þei knowe þee al one verrey
god · & whom þou sentist I hū crist/ I haue clarifiede þee on
erþe · I haue endide þe werke þat þou hast zouen to me þat I
do/ and nowe fadir clarifie þou me at þi self · wiþ clerenesse
þat I had at þee · bifore þe worlde was made/ I haue schewide
þi name to þe men whom þou hast zouen to me of þe worlde/
þei weren þin · & þou hast zouen hem to me · & þei haue kepte
þi worde/ and nowe þei haue knowen · for alle þingis þat þou
hast zouen to me · ben of þee/ for þe wordis þat þou hast zouen
to me · I zaue to hem/ & þei haue taken & haue knowen ver-
rely · for I wente oute fro þee · & þei bileueden · for þou sent-
ist me/ I prepe for hem · not for þe worlde · but for hem þat
þou

C^m 17^m

Joon

hou hast zouen to me/ for hei ben pin & pi pingis ben myne
and I am clarifiede in hem/ and now I am not in he worlde
& hes ben in he worlde & I come to pee/ holy fadir kepe hen
in pi name/ whom pou zauest to me/ pat hei ben one as & we
whanne I was wip hem/ I kepte hem in pi name/ whom pou
zauest to me I kepte/ & no man of hem perischide/ no but pe
sone of perdicōn (or dampnacōn) pat he scripture be fulfilde/
forsope now I come to pee/ & hes pingis I speak in he worlde/
pat hei haue my ioye fulfilde in hem self/ I zaue to hem pi
worde/ & he worlde had hem in hate/ for hei ben not of he
worlde/ as I am not of he worlde/ I preye not pat pou take
hem aweye of he worlde/ but pat pou kepe hem fro euyl/ hei
ben not of he worlde/ as I am not of he worlde/ halowe pou hem
in treuþe/ pi worde is treuþe/ as pou sentist me into he worlde/
& I sente hem into he worlde/ & I halowe myself for hem/ pat
& hei ben halowide in treuþe/ soþely I preye not onely for hem/
but & for hem pat ben to bileue into me/ bi he worde of hem/
pat alle ben one/ as pou fadir in me/ & I in pee/ pat & hei in
us ben one/ pat he worlde bileue for pou hast sente me/ and
I haue zouen to hem he clerenesse pat pou hast zouen to me/
pat hei ben one/ as we ben one/ I in hem & pou in me/ pat
hei ben endide into one/ & pat he worlde knowe pat pou sent-
ist me & hast louede hem/ as & pou hast louede me/ fadir I wole
pat & hei whom pou zauest to me/ be wip me where I am/ pat
hei se my clerenesse whiche pou hast zouen to me/ for pou loued-
ist me bifore he makynge of he worlde/ fadir Just (or ryztful)/
he worlde knewe pee not/ forsope I knewe pee/ & hes knewen
for pou sentist me/ and I haue made pi name knowen to hem/
& schal make knowen/ pat he loue by whiche pou hast louede
me/ be in hem/ & I in hem//

Whanne

Joon



Wanne Ihc hadde seyde hes pingis: he wente oute
wih his disciplis ouer he strounde of cedron where
was a zerde · into whiche he entride & his disciplis/
sophely & Judas pat bitrayede hym · wiste he place:
for ofte ihc came to gedir hidir wih his disciplis/ perfore
whanne Judas hadde taken a cumpanye of knyztis & of bis-
chopis & pharisees mynystris: he came hidir wih lanternes &
brondis & armes/ and so ihc witynge alle pingis pat weren
to come vpon hym: wente forþ & seih to hem/ whom seeke
zee? þei answeriden to hym/ Ihu of nazareth/ Ihc seih to hem/
I am/ forsoþe & Judas pat bitrayede hym: stode wih hem/ per-
fore as he seyde to hem I am: þei wenten abac & felden doune
into þe erþe/ eftelone he aride hem/ whom seeke zee? forsoþe
þei seyden Ihu nazarene/ he answeride to hem/ I seyde to zou·
for I am/ perfore zif zee seeken me: sustre zee þes to go
awege/ þat þe worde whiche he seyde he fulfild: for he losse not
any of hem · þe whiche þou hast zouen to me/ perfore symount
petre hauynge a swerde drowe it oute & smote þe seruaunt of
þe bischop · & kitte of his litil ryzt ere/ forsoþe þe name to þe
seruaunt was malcus/ perfore Ihc seyde to petre/ sende þou
þe swerde into þe schepe/ wolte þou not þat I drynke þe ilke
cuppe · þat my fadir zaue to me? perfore þe cumpanye of
knyztis & þe tribune & þe mynystris of iewis tooken Ihu &
bounden hym · & ledde hym first to annas/ sophely he was þe
fadir of caphphas wise: þat was bischop of þat zeer/ sophely it
was caphphas þat zaue counseyl to þe Jewis · þat it spedih one
man for to die for þe puple/ forsoþe Symount petre suede
Ihu: and anoter disciple/ forsoþe þe ilke disciple was knowen
to þe bischop: and he entride in wih Ihu · into þe halle of þe
bischop/ forsoþe petre stode at þe dore wih oute forþ/ perfore
þe toher disciple þat was known to þe bischop wente oute: &
seyde to þe womman kepyng þe dore · & ledde in petre/ per-
for þe handemayden keper of þe dore: seyde to petre/ wher &
þou

C^m 18^m

Joon

thou art of þe disciplis of þis man? he seyde I am not/ forsoþ
 þe seruautis & þe mynystris stoden at þe coolis · for it wa
 colde: & þei warmeden hem/ soþely & petre was wiþ her
 stondynge & warmynge hym/ þerfore þe bischopis axide Ihu of
 his disciplis: and of his techynge/ Ihu answeride to hym/ I
 haue spoken opynly to þe worlde/ I tauzte euermore in syna
 goge & in temple · whider alle þe iewis camen to gedit · & in
 pryuate I spak no þing/ what axist þou me: are hem þat herd
 en · what I haue spoken to hem/ lo þei witen · what þingis I
 haue seyde/ whanne he had seyde · one of þe mynystris stonde
 ynge nyȝ: & aue a buffet to Ihu · seyinge/ answerest þou so to þe
 bischop? Ihu answeride to hym/ zif I haue spoken euyl: here
 þou witnessynge of euyl/ soþely zif wel: whi smyttest þou me:
 and annas sente hym bounden to caphphas þe bischop/ forsoþe
 Symount petre was stondynge & warmynge hym/ þerfore þei
 seyden to hym/ wher & þou art his disciple? he denyede & seyde/
 I am not/ one of þe bischopis seruautis cosyn of hym whos
 litil ere petre kitte of: seyde/ wher I sise þee not in þe ȝerde
 wiþ hym? þerfore petre estefone denyede/ and anone þe cocke
 crewe/ ¶ þerfore þei ledden hym into þe mote halle/ soþely it
 was morowynge/ and þei entride not into þe mote halle ·
 þat þei schulden not be defoulide: but þat þei schulden ete
 paske/ þerfore pilate wente oute wiþ outhen forþ to hem: and
 seyde/ what accusynge bryngen zee azenes þis man? þei an
 swereden to hym & seyden/ zif þis man were not a mysdoer:
 we hadden not bitaken hym to þee/ þerfore pilate seiþ to hem/
 take zee hym: & deme zee hym aftir ȝoure lawe/ þerfore þei
 seyden to hym/ it is not leueful to vs: for to flee any man/ þat
 þe worde of Ihu schulde be fulfild þe whiche he seyde/ signy
 fyinge by what deþ he was to die/ þerfore pilat estefone en
 tride into þe moot hall: and clepide Ihu & seyde to hym/ art
 þou kyng of Iewis/ Ihu answeride & seyde to hym/ seist þou
 þis þing of þi self: or oþer to þee seyden of me? pilate answer
 ide/ wher I am a iewe? þi folc & þi bischopis bitoken þee to
 me/

Joan

me/ what hast thou done? Jh̄c answeride/ my kyngdom is not of his worlde/ zif my kyngdom were of his worlde/ sohely my mynystris schulden stryue · pat I schulde not be bitaken to þe iewis/ nowe forsoþe my kyngdom is not of hens (or of his place/) and so pilate seyde to hym/ þerfore thou art kyng? Jh̄c answeride/ thou seist for I am a kyng/ I in þis þing am borne · & to þis I came into þe worlde/ þat I here witnessynge to treuþe/ eche man þat is of treuþe/ herih my voyce/ pilate seih to hym/ what is treuþe/ and whanne he had seyde þis þing/ estefone he wente oute to þe iewis/ & seyde to hem/ I fynde no cause azenes hym/ forsoþe it is a custum to zou · þat I leeue (or delyuer) one to zou in pask/ þerfore wole zee I schal dismaynte to zou þe kyng of iewes/ þerfore þei crieden estefone alle seyinge/ not þis/ but barrabas/ forsoþe barrabas was a þeeff//



Therefore pilate took Jh̄u & scourgide/ & knyztis foldynge a crowne of þornes/ puttiden to his heede/ & diden aboute hym a cloþe of purpur/ and camen to hym & seyden to hym[]

buffetis/ estefone pilate wente oute/ and seyde to hem/ lo I leede hym to zou wiþ oute forþe · þat zee knowe/ for I fynde no cause in hym/ þerfore Jh̄c wente oute berynge a crowne of þornes/ and a cloþe of purpur/ & he seih to hem/ lo þe man/ þerfore whanne þe bischopis & mynystris hadden seen hym þei crieden seyinge crucifie crucifie hym/ pilate seih to hem/ take zee hym/ and crucifie zee/ sohely I fynde no cause in hym/ þe iewis answeriden to hym/ we haue a lawe · & astir þe lawe he schal die/ for he made hym goddis sone/ þerfore whanne pilate had herde þis worde/ he dredde more/ & he wente into þe moot halle/ estefone he seyde to Jh̄u/ of whens art þou? and Jh̄c zawe not answere to hym/ and pilate seih to hym/ spekist þou not to me? wost þou not for I haue power for to crucifie þee/ and I haue power for to delyuer þee? Jh̄c answeride/

C^m 19^m

Joon

hou schuldift not haue any power azenes me: no but it were
 zouen to hee from aboue/ perfore he hat bitrayede me to hee:
 hab he more synne/ perof (or fro pens): pilate souzte for to
 delpyuer hym/ forsohe he iewis crieden seyinge/ zif hou leueest
 hym hus hou art not frende of cesar/ for eche man hat makih
 hymself kyng: azen seih cesar/ perfore pilate whan he had
 herde hes wordis: ledde Jhū forþ · & satte for domesman · in
 a place hat is licostratos · in ebreu forsohe galgatha · in eng-
 lische place of caluarie/ forsohe it was he euentide of paske ·
 as he sirte houre (or haly day)/ and he seih to he iewis/ lo
 zoure kyng/ forsohe hei crieden seyinge/ do away do away: cru-
 cifye hym/ pilate seih to hem/ schal I crucifie zoure kyng? he
 bischopis answeriden/ we haue not a kyng: no but cesar/ per-
 fore panne pilate bitoke hym to hem: hat he schulde be cru-
 cifiede/ forsohe hei token Jhū & ledden oute/ & he berynge
 to hym self a crosse · wente oute into hat place hat is seyde of
 caluarie · in ebreu galgatha · where hei crucifieden hym/ and
 oher two wih hym · on his side & on hat side: perfore Jh̄c he
 mydle/ forsohe & pilate wrote a title: & putte on he crosse/
 sophely it was writen/ Jhū nazareth kyng of Jewes/ perfore
 many of he Jewis redder his title: for he place where Jhū is
 crucifiede was nyz he cytee/ & it was writen in ebreu greek &
 latyn/ perfore he bischopis of Jewes seyden to pilate/ nyl hou
 write kyng of Jewes: but for he seyde I am kyng of iewes/
 pilate answeride/ hat hat I haue writen · I haue writen/ per-
 fore he knyztis whanne hei hadden crucifiede hym: token hys
 clohes & maden four parties · to eche knyzt a parte/ and a
 coot/ forsohe he coote was wihouten seem: and aboue wouen
 by al/ perfore hei seyden to gedir/ kitte we not it: but laye we
 lotte whos it is/ hat he scripture be fulfilde: seyinge hei part-
 iden my clohes to hem: & into my clooh hei senten lotte/ and
 sophely knyztis diden hes pingis/ ¶ forsohe bisidis he crosse of
 Jhū stoden his modir · & he suster of his modir · mary cleophe &
 mary maudeleyn/ perfore whanne Jh̄c hadde seen he modir ·
& he

Joan

& he disciple stonnyng whom he louede: he seih to his modir/
womman lo hi sone/ aftirwarde he seyde to he disciple/ lo
hi modir/ & fro hat houre: he disciple took hire into his mo-
dir// ¶ Aftirwarde Jh̄c witynge for now alle þingis ben en-
dide: þat he scripture schulde be fulfild: he seih/ I þriste/
sopely a vessel was putte ful of vynesgre/ þei forsoþe puttynge
aboute wip ysope þe spounge ful vynesgre: offerden to his
mouþ/ þerfore whanne Jh̄u hadde taken þe vynesgre: he seyde/
it is endide/ and he heed bowide doune: he bitoke þe spirit/ for-
soþe for it was paske euen: þat þe bodies schulden not dwelle in
þe crosse in þe saboth: for þe ilke day of saboth was greet: þe
iewes preyeden pilate þat þe hippis of hem schulden be broken
& taken away/ þerfore knyztis camen: & sopely þei braken þe
pies of þe firste: & of þe toþer þat was crucifiede wip hym/ soþe-
ly whanne þei hadden comen to Jh̄u: as þei sizen hym deade:
þei braken not his pies: but one of þe knyztis openyde his side
wip a spere/ & anone blood & water wente oute/ and he þat
sise bare witnessyng: & his witnessyng is trewe: for he woot
þat he seih trewe þingis: þat zee bileue/ forsoþe þes þingis ben
done: þat he scripture schulde be fulfild/ zee schulen not breke
(or make lesse) a boon of hym/ & eftesone anoter scripture
seih/ þei schulen se into whom þei putten þourz/ Sopely aftir
þes þingis Joseph of armathie preyede pilate þat þei schul-
den take away þe body of Jh̄u/ sopely & nychodeme came þat
had comen to Jh̄u firste in þe nyzt: berynge a medelynge of
myrre & aloes: as an hundride ponde/ þerfore þei token þe
body of Jh̄u & bounde it in linnen cloþes wip swete oynementis
(or spices): as it is custum to Jewes for to birie/ sopely in þe
place where he was crucifiede: was a zerde/ & in þe zerde a
newe graue: in þe whiche not zit any man was putte/ þerfore
þere for þe paske euen of iewis: for þat þe graue was nyzt:
þei puttiden Jh̄u//

Forsoþe

Joon

C^m 20^m



Orsope in one (day) of þe saboth (þat is þe woke):
 mary maudeleyn came erly to þe graue · whanne
 zit dirkeness weren: and sche sise þe stoon turnyde
 azen fro þe graue/ þerfore sche ran & came to Sy-
 mount petre & to anoper disciple whom Jh̄c louede: & seip to
 hem/þei haue taken þe lorde fro þe graue: and we witen not
 where þei haue putte hym/ þerfore petre wente oute & þe ilke
 oper disciple: and þei camen to þe graue/ forsope þe two run-
 nen togedir: & þe ilke oper disciple ranne bifore sunner þan
 petre: and came firste to þe graue/ and whanne he had inbow-
 ide hym: he sise þe schetis putte · nepeles he entride not in/
 þerfore symount peter came supnge hym/ and he entride into
 þe graue/ and he sise þe schetis putte · & þe sudarie þat was
 on his heede · not putte wip þe scheetis: but bi it self wolappide
 into one place/ þerfore þanne & þe ilke disciple þat came firste
 to þe graue: entride & sise & bileuede/ forsope þei wisten not
 þe scripture: for it bihoste hym for to rise azen fro deade/ þer-
 fore þe disciplis wenten estesone to hem self/ forsope mary
 stood at þe graue wip outhen forþe wepyng/ þerfore þe while
 sche wepte: sche howide hire & bihelde forþ into þe graue · &
 sche sise two aungels sittynge in white · one at þe heede & one
 at þe feet where þe body of Jh̄u was putte/ þei seyn to hire/
 womman what wepist þou? sche seyde to hem/ for þei haue
 take away my lorde · & I woot not wher þei haue putte hym/
 and whanne sche hadde seyde þes þingis: sche is turnede abac ·
 & sise Jh̄u stondynge & wiste not for it was Jh̄u/ Jh̄c seip to
 hire/ womman what wepist þou: whom seekist þou? sche gess-
 ynge for he was a gardener: seip to hym/ sire zif þou hast
 taken hym: seye to me where þou haste putte hym · & I schal
 take hym aweye/ Jh̄c seyde to hire/ mary/ sche conuertide (or
 al turnede): seip to hym/ rabony (þat is seyde mayster) Jh̄c
 seip to hire/ nyl þou touche me/ for I haue not zit assendide to
 my fadir/ forsope go to my breþeren: and seye to hem/ I steyze
 vp

Joon

vp to my fadir & zoure fadir: to my god & zoure god/ mary
 maudeleyn came tellynge to he disciplis: for I haue seen he
 lorde/ and hes pingis he seyde to me/ whan euen was in hat
 day in one of he sabotis: & he zatis weren schitte where he
 disciplis weren gederide for drede of he ietwis: Jh̄c came &
 stood in he mydle of he disciplis & seih to hem/ pees to zou/
 and whanne he had seyde pis ping: he schewide to hem handis
 & syde/ perfore he disciplis ioyzeden: he lorde seen/ perfore he
 seih to hem este/ pees to zou/ as he fadir haf sente me: and I
 sende zou/ whan he had seyde hes pingis: he blewe & seyde to
 hem/ take zee he holy gost/ whos synnes zee schulen forzyue:
 hei ben forzouen/ and whos zee schulen wiþ holde: hei ben wiþ
 holden/ forsoþe thomas one of he twelue hat is clepide didy-
 mus: was not wiþ hem whanne Jh̄c came/ perfore disciplis
 seyden/ we haue seen he lorde/ forsoþe he seyde to hem/ no but
 I schal se in his handis he fitchynge of naylis: & schal sende my
 syngeris into he places of he nayles: & schal sende myn hande
 into hys side: I schal not bileue/ and aftir eyzte dayes: este-
 sone his disciplis weren wiþinne: and thomas wiþ hem/ Jh̄c
 came he zatis schitte: and stode in he mydle & seyde/ pees to
 zou/ aftirwarde he seih to thomas/ brynge in þi synger hidir:
 & se myn handis & brynge to þin hande: & sende (or putte) it
 into my side: & nyl þou be vnbeleueful: but seihful/ thomas an-
 sweride & seyde to hym/ my lorde & my god/ Jh̄c seih to hym/
 thomas for þou hast seen me: þou bileuedest/ blestide þei hat
 seen not: and haue bileuede/ forsoþe & many oþer signes Jh̄c
 dide in he sizte of his disciplis: he whiche ben not writen in
 his booc/ forsoþe þes ben writen hat zee bileue for Jh̄c is he
 sone of god/ and hat zee bileuynges: haue lijf in his name//

Aftirwarde

Joon

C^m 21^m



Aftirwarde Jh̄c eftetone ſchewide hym to his diſci-
plis at þe ſee of tyberiadis: ſopely he ſchewide þus/
þer weren togedit Symount petre & thomas þat
is ſeyde didymus: & nathanael þat was of chana
galilee: & þe ſones of zebedee: & oþer of his diſciplis two [

] þei ſeyn to hym/
and we comen wiþ þee/ and þei wenten oute & ſleyzeden into
a boot: & in þat nyȝt þei token no þing/ forſoþe þe morowe
made: Jh̄c ſtood in þe brynke/ neþeles þe diſciplis knewen
not: for it is Jh̄c/ þerfore Jh̄c ſeiþ to hem: children wher
zee haue any ſoupyng þing? þei answereden nay/ he ſeyde
to hem/ ſende zee þe nette into þe riȝthalfe of þe rowynges:
and zee ſchulen fynde/ þerfore þei ſenten þe nette & nowē þei
myȝten not drawe it: for multitude of fiſchis/ þerfore þe ilke
diſciple þe whiche Jh̄c louede: ſeyde to petre/ it is þe lorde/
Symount petre whanne he had herde for it is þe lorde:
girde hym wiþ a coot/ ſopely he was nakide: & ſente hym
into þe ſee/ ſoply oþer diſciplis camen bi boot/ for þei weren
not fer fro þe lande: but as two hundride cubitis: draw-
yngē þe nette of fiſchis/ þerfore as þei camen doune into
þe lande: þei ſizen coolis putte: & a fiſche putte þeron: &
breed: Jh̄c ſeiþ to hem/ bryngē zee of þe fiſchis: þe whiche zee
haue taken nowē/ Symount petre ſleyzede vp: & drowe þe
nette into þe lande ful of greet fiſchis: an hundride fifty & þre/
and whanne þei weren ſo manye: þe nette is not broken/ Jh̄c
ſeiþ to hem/ come zee: ete zee/ and no man of þe ſittyngē
at mete durſte axe hym: who art þou: wityngē for it is þe
lorde/ and Jh̄c came & tooke breede & ȝaue to hem: & þe fiſche
also/ nowē þis þridde tyme/ Jh̄c is ſchewide to his diſciplis:
whan he roos aȝen fro deade// ¶ þerfore whanne þei hadden
eten: Jh̄c ſeiþ to Symount petre/ Symount of Joon loueſt
þou me: more þan þes? [] ȝhe lorde: þou woſte for
I loue þee/ Jh̄c ſeiþ to hym/ ſede þou my lambren/ eſte he ſeiþ
to

Joon

to hym/ Symount of Jon louest thou me? [] the lord
 thou wost for I loue thee/ [] he seith to hym he
 pridde tyme/ Symount of Jon louest thou me? petre is heu
 (or soory) for he seith he pridde tyme louest thou me/ and he seith
 to hym/ lord thou wost alle thingis/ thou wost for I loue thee/
 Jhe seith to hym/ feed my sheep/ treuely treuely I seye to thee/
 whan thou were zonger thou girdist thee & wandrist where thou
 woldist/ soþely whanne thou schalt waxe eldre/ thou schalt
 holde forþe þin handis/ & anoþer schal girde thee/ & leede thee
 whidir thou wolte not/ soþely he seyde þis þing/ signyfyng
 by what deþ he was to glorifie god/ ¶ And whanne he had
 seyde þes þingis/ he seith to hym/ sue thou me/ petre conuertede
 (or turnede) siþe he ilke disciple suppinge whom ihc louede/ & he
 whiche restide in þe soper on his breste/ and seyde to hym/ lord
 who is it þat schal bitraye thee? þerfore whanne petre had seen
 þis/ he seith to Jhu/ lord what forsoþe þis? Jhe seith to hym/
 so I wole hym dwelle til þat I come/ what to thee/ sue thou me/
 þerfore þis worde wente oute amonge breþeren/ for þe ilke
 disciple dieþ not/ and Jhe seyde not to hym for he dieþ not/
 but so I wole hym dwelle til þat I come/ what to thee/ þis is
 þe ilke disciple þat berith witnessyng of þes þingis/ and wrote
 þes þingis/ and we witen for his witnessyng is trewe/ forsoþe
 þer ben & manye oþer signes (or myracles) þat Jhe dide/ þe
 whiche zif þei ben writen by eche by hym self/ I gesse neþer þe
 worlde hym self mowne taken þe bookis þat ben to be writen//

ye dedis of ye apostlis.



Forsope pou theophil firste I made a ser-
moune (or worde) of alle þe þingis þat
Ih̄c bigan for to do & teche: til into þe
day in whiche he comaundyng to þe
apostlis by þe holy goost: whom he chees
was taken vp/ to whom & he zaue hym
selfalpye (or quycke) aftir his passioun
in many argumentis (or prouyngis) by
fourty dayes: apperynge to hem & spekyng of þe rewme of
god/ and he etyng togedir comaundide to hem þat þei schul-
den not departe fro ierl̄m: but þei schulden abide þe bihest of
þe fadir: þe whiche zee herden he seiþ by my mouþe/ for toþely
I non baptiside in water: but zee schulen be baptiside in þe holy
goost: not aftir þes many dayes/ herfore þei þat camen to ge-
dir: areden hym seyng: lorde zif in þis tyme schalt pou re-
store þe kyngdom of isrl̄: forsope he seyde to hem/ it is not
zoure to haue knowen þe tymes or momentis þe whiche þe
fadir has putte in his power/ but zee schulen take þe vertue
of þe holy goost comyng fro aboue into zou: & zee schulen be
witnessis to me in ierl̄m: & in al Jude & in samarie: and vnto
þe vttermoost of erþe/ and whanne he had seyde þes þingis: hem
seinge: he was lifte vp: & a cloude receyuyde hym fro þe eyzen
of hem/ & whanne þei bihilden hym goinge into heuene: lo two
men stoden nyz biþidis hem in white cloþes: þe whiche & sey-
den/ men of galilee: what stondyng zee biholdyng into heu-
ene? þis Ih̄c þat is taken vp fro zou into heuene: so schal
come: as zee sizen hym goinge into heuene/ þanne þei turn-
eden azen to ierl̄m: fro þe hil þat is clepide of olyuete: þe
whiche is biþidis ierl̄m: haupyng þe iourney of a saboth/ and
whanne þei hadden entride into þe soupyng place: þei wenten
vp

ye aplis

vp into þe hizer þingis · where þei dwelten · petre & Jon
 James & andrewe · Philip & Thomas · Bartholomeu & ma-
 theu · James of Alpheï · & Symount zelotes: and Judas of
 James/ alle þes weren dwellynge (or lastynge) to gedir in
 prayer wip wymmen · & mary þe modir of Ihu: and wip
 his breþeren// ¶ In þo dayes petre ryfynge vp in þe mydle
 of breþeren: seyde/ forsoþe þer was a cumpanye of men to
 gedir: almost an hundride & twenty/ men breþeren it bihoueþ
 þe scripture to be fulfild · whiche þe holy gost bifore seyd by
 þe moup of dauid · of Judas þat was leder of hem þat token
 Ihu · þe whiche was nowmbride in vs & gate þe sorte of his
 mynysterie/ and forsoþe þis weldide a feelde of þe hirt of
 wickidnesse · & he hangide to barste þe mydle: and all his en-
 traylis ben sched abroode/ and it is made knowen to alle men
 dwellynge in irīm so þat þe ilke feelde was clepide achildemak
 in þe langage of hem: þat is þe feelde of blood/ forsoþe it is
 writen in þe booke of psalmes/ þe habitacō of hym be made
 deserte: and be þer not þat dwelle in it: & anoper take þe bish-
 opricke of hym/ þerfore it bihoueþ of þes men þat ben geder-
 ide to gedir wip vs in al tyme in whiche þe lorde Ihu entride
 in and wente oute amonge vs · bygynnyng fro þe baptysm of
 Joon vnto þe day in whiche he was taken vp fro vs: one of
 þes for to be made a witnesse of his resurreccō wip vs/ and
 þei ordepynden two/ Joseph þat is clepide barfabas · þat is
 namede iustus: and mathie/ and þei preyng: seyden/ þou
 lorde þat has knowen þe hertis of men: schewe whom þou hast
 chosen of þes two · one for to take þe place of þis mynysterie
 & apostilhed · of þe whiche Judas trespasside: þat he schulde go
 into his place/ and þei zauen lottis to hem/ and þe lotte feld
 on mathie · & he was nowmbrede to gedir: wip þe elleuene
 apostilis//

C^m 2^m



And whanne þe pentecostis dayes (þat is fifty) ·
 weren fulfild: alle disciplis weren togedir in þe
 same place and sodeynly þer was made a soun
 from heuene · as a great spirit comynge to: and it
 fulfild al þe hous: where þei weren sittynge/ and tungis dy-
 uerselypartide as fire appereden to hem: and it sate vpon eche
 of hem/ & alle ben fulfild wif þe holy goste/ & þei bigunnen
 for to speec wif dyuerse langagis · as þe holy gost ȝaue to hem
 for to speke/ forsoþe þere weren in irlm dwellynge iewes re-
 ligious men: of eche nacō þat is vndre heuene/ soþely þis
 voyce made: þe multitude came to gedir/ & in soule (or vn-
 derstonnyng) was confoundide (or astonyede): for eche man
 herde hem spekyng in his langage/ forsoþe alle men weren
 astonyede in witte: and wondriden seyng togedir/ wher not
 alle þes þat speken ben galilees: & how haue we herde eche
 man his langage in whiche we ben borne / parthi · & medy · &
 elampte · & þei þat dwellen at mesopotanye · Jude · & capadosie ·
 ponte · & asie · frigie · & pamphilie · egipte & þe parties of libie ·
 þat is aboute syrenen: and comelyngis romayns/ and iewis &
 profelitis · men of crete & of arabie/ we haue herde hem spe-
 kyng in oure langagis: þe grete þingis of god/ forsoþe alle
 weren stonyede in witte: and wondriden seyng/ what wole
 þis þing be / forsoþe oþer scorneden seyng: for þei ben ful
 of muste/ forsoþe petre stonnyng wif þe elleuene: reyside his
 voyce & spak to hem/ men iewis & alle þat dwellen at irlm: be
 þis þing knowen to ȝou · & wif eres perseyue my wordis/
 Soþely not as ȝee demen (or gessen) þes ben drunken: whan
 it is þe þridde houre of þe day (or undrun): but þis þing it is
 þat was seyde by þe prophete ioel/ and it schal be in þe laste
 dayes: þe lorde seiþ/ I schal leede oute of my spirit on al
 fleysche: and ȝoure sones & ȝoure douztris schulen prophecie/
 and ȝoure zonge schulen se visiouns: and ȝoure eldres schulen
 dreame twenenes/ and soþely on my men seruauntis · & myn
 hande

ye aplis

hande maydens · in þo dayes I schal helde oute of my spirit:
 and þei schulen prophecie/ and I schal ʒyue grete wondris in
 heuene aboue & signes in erþe byneþe: blood & fir & vapoure
 (or smoke)/ þe sunne schal be turnyde into dirkeness · & þe
 mone into blood: bifore þat þe greet & open day of þe lorde
 schal come/ and eche man who euer schal inclepe þe name of
 þe lorde schal be saaf/ zee men of isrl here þes wordis/ Ihu of
 nazareth a man prouede of god in ʒou by vertues (or myracles) ·
 & wondris · & tokenes · þe whiche god dide by hym in þe mydel
 of ʒou as zee witen: hym þe counseyl endid · & by þe priscience
 (or bifore knowynge) of god · bitaken (or bitrayede) · by þe
 handis of wickide men: and turmentynge slowen/ whom god
 reyside þe sorowis of helle vnbounden: vp þat it was impos-
 sible · hym for to be holden of it/ soþely dauid seih into hym/
 I purueyede þe lorde bifore me euermore: for he is on my rizt
 halfe · þat it be not mouede/ for þis þing myn herte ioyede ·
 & mytungegladide: more ouer & my sleysche schal reste in hope/
 for þou schalt not forsake my soule in helle: neþer þou schalt
 ʒyue þin holy for to se corrupcion/ þou hast made knowen to
 me þe weyes of lijf: þou schalt fultille me in myrþe wiþ þi
 face// ¶ When breþeren be it leueful boldely for to saye to ʒou
 of þe patriarke dauid · for he is deade & byriede · & his sepul-
 cre is at vs til into þis day/ þerfore whanne he was a prophete
 & wiste for wiþ an oþe he had sworne to hym · of þe fruyte of
 his leende for to sitte on his feet: he purueyinge spac of þe re-
 surreccion of crist/ for neþer he is leste in helle neþer his sleysche
 size corrupcion/ god reyside þis Ihu: to whom we alle ben
 witnессis/ þerfore he enhauncide by þe rizt hande of god & by
 þe biheste of þe holy gost taken of þe fadir: he sched oute þis þat
 zee seen & heren/ forsoþe dauid assendide not into heuene/
 forsoþe he seih/ þe lorde seyde to my lorde · sitte on my rizt
 halfe · til I schal putte þin enemyes: þe stool of þi feet/ þerfore
 moſte certeynly wite al þe hous of isrl · for god reyside hym
 lorde & crist: þis Ihu whom zee crucifieden/ þes þingis herder
 þei

dedis

pei weren compunct in herte/ & pei seyden to petre & to oþer apostlis/ men breþeren: what schulen we do / petre forsoþe seiþ to hem/ penaunce he seiþ do zee: and eche of zou be cristenyde in þe name of Ihu crist into remysion of zoure synnes: and zee schulen take þe zifte of þe holy goft/ forsoþe repromysion (or estebyheste) · is to zou & to zoure sones · & to alle þat ben fer: whom euer þe lorde oure god haþ clepide to/ soþely wiþ oþer wordis ful manye he witnesside: & monesside hem seinge/ be zee sauede fro þis wickide (or schrewide) generacon/ þerfore pei þat receyueden his wordis: weren baptiside/ & in þat day ben putte to: aboute þre housande soules/ forsoþe pei weren lastyng in techyng of þe apostlis: and in comunyng of brekyng of breede & in preyers/ forsoþe drede was made to eche soule/ and many wondris & signes weren done by þe apostlis in ierlm/ & greet drede was in alle/ also alle men þat bileueden weren to gedir: and hadden alle þingis comoune/ pei selden possessionis & substaunces (or goodis) · and departiden alle þingis to alle men: as it was nede to eche/ forsoþe day by day pei lastyng to gedir in þe temple · & brekyng breede aboute housis · token mete wiþ gladynge & symplenesse of herte · heryinge to gedir god: and al haupng grace to al þe puple/ forsoþe þe lorde encrefide hem þat weren made saaf: eche day into þe same þing//

C^m 3^m



Essope petre & Ion steyzeden into þe temple: at þe nynþe houre of preyng/ and a man þat was lame fro þe wombe of his modir: was borne/ whom pei puttiden eche day at þe zate of þe temple · þat is seyde sayre: þat he schulde are almes of men entryng into þe temple/ þis whanne he sise petre & Ion bygynnynge for to entre into þe temple: preyeden þat he schulde take almes/ forsoþe petre wiþ Ioon biholdyng hym: seyde biholde into vs/ and he bihelde into hem: hoppyng hym to takyng sum þing of hem/ forsoþe petre seyde/ siluer & golde is not to me/ þat þat I haue

ye aplis

I haue I zpye to pee/ in þe name of Ihu crist of nazereth: rise þou & go/ and his rizte hande taken: he lifte hym vp/ and anone þe groundis & þe plauntis (or foolis) of hym ben saddide to gedit/ and he leepyng stode & wandride/ and entride wih hem into þe temple: wandrynge & lepyng & herpyng god/ and al þe puple sise hym walkyng & herpyng god/ forsoþe þei knewen hym for it was he þat satte at almes: at þe sayr zate of þe temple/ and þei weren fulfild wih wondryng & extasy: (þat is leesyng of mynde & resoune & lettynge of tunge:) in þat þing þat felle to hym/ ¶ Sōþely whanne þei sizen petre & Ioon: al þe puple ran to hem at þe porche: þat was clepide of Salamon: wondryng gretly/ forsoþe petre seyng: answeride to þe puple/ men of isrl: what wondren zee in þis þing: or what biholdyng zee vs: as by oure vertue or power: we maden þis for to walke: god of abraham: & god of ysaac: & god of iacob: god of oure faderis haþ glorifiede his sone Ihu: whom sōþely zee bitrayeden: & denyeden bifore þe face of pilate: hym demyng: for to be dismyttide (or leste)/ zee forsoþe denyeden þe holy & iuste: & zee ariden a mansleer for to be zouen to zou/ forsoþe zee slown þe maker of lijf: whom god reyside fro deade men/ of whom zee ben witneffis: and in þe seih of his name he haþ confermyde þis whom zee seen & haue knowen/ þe name of hym & þe seih þat is by hym: zaue þis ful helpe: in þe sizte of alle zou/ and nowebreþeren I woot: þat by unwtiing zee diden: as & zoure prynces/ god forsoþe þat bifore tolde by þe mouþe of alle prophetis: his crist for to suffre: fulfild so/ þerfore be zee repentaunt & be zee conuertide: þat zoure synnes be done aweye: whanne þe tymes of kelyng (or refrechyng) fro þe sizt of þe lorde schulen come: and he schal sende hym þat nowe is prechide to zou: Ihu crist/ whom sōþely it bihoueh heuene for to receyue: til into þe tymes of resitucōn of alle þingis: þe whiche þe lorde spak by þe mouþ of his holy prophetis fro þe worlde/ forsoþe moyse seyde/ for þe lorde zoure god schal reyse to zou a prophete of zoure breþeren:

dedis

heren: as me zee schulen here hym vpon alle þingis • what
euer he schal speke to zou/ forsoþe it schal be/ euery soule þat
schal not here þe ilke prophete: schal be destruyede (or exilide)
of þe puple/ and alle prophetis fro samuel & astirwarde þat
spaken: tolden þes dayes/ zee forsoþe ben þe sones of pro-
phetis • & of þe testament þat god ordeynide to oure faderis:
seyinge to abraham/ in þi seed: alle þe meynes of erþe schulen
be blestide/ god reysynge his sone firste to zou • sente hym ble-
singe zou: þat eche man conuerte hym fro his wickidnesse//

C^m 4^m



Orsoþe hem spekyng to þe puple pristis and magis-
tratis of þe temple camen vpon/ and saduceys so-
rowynge þat þei schulden teche þe puple • & tolden
into Ihu azen risynge fro deade (men)/ and þei
leyden handis into hem: and puttiden hem into kepyng • til
into þe morowe/ Soþely it was now euen/ forsoþe many of
hem þat hadden herde þe worde: bileueden/ and þe nowmbre
of hem is made fyue housande/ forsoþe in þe morowe it is
done • þat þe prynces of hem & eldre men & scribis schulden be
gederide in iherlm: and annas prynce of pristis & cayphas & Ioon
& alexander • & how many euer weren of þe kynde of pristis/
and þei ordeynynge hem in þe mydel: axiden in what vertue
or what names: haue zee done þis þing? þanne petre fulfilde
wih þe holy gost: seyde to hem/ zee prynces of þe puple & eldre
men here zee/ zif we to day ben demyde in þe gode dede of a
sijk man • in þe whiche þis is made saaf: be it knowen to zou
alle • & to al þe puple of isrl: for in þe name of oure lorde ihu
crist of nazareth whom zee crucifide • whom god reyside fro
deade (men)/ in þis • þis man stondiþ hool bifore zee/ þis is
þe soon þe whiche was reprouede of zou bildynge: þe whiche
is made into þe hede of þe corner: & helpe is not in any oþer/
forsoþe neþer oþer name is vndir heuene zouen to men: in
whiche it bihoueh vs for to be made saaf/ forsoþe þei seinge þe
stidfastnesse of petre & Ioon • founden þat þei weren men wih
outen

ye aplis

outhen lettris & ydiotis: wondriden · & knewen for hei weren
 wiþ Jhū/ and feinge þe man stondynge wiþ hem þat was he-
 lide: hei myzten no þing azen seye/ forsoþe hei comaundiden
 hem for to go forþ wiþ outhen þe counseyl: and hei spaken to
 gedir sepyng/ what schulen we do to þes men: for soþely þe
 signe is made knowen by hem: to alle men dwellynge at irlm/
 it is open: & we mowen not denye/ but þat it be no more pup-
 lischide in to þe puple: manase we to hem · þat hei speken no
 more in þis name to any men/ and hei clepyng hem de-
 nounsiden: þat on no maner hei schulden speke ne teche: in þe
 name of Jhū/ forsoþe petre & Ion answerynge: seyden to hem/
 zif it be riztful in þe sizte of god · for to here zou raþer þan
 god: deme zee/ forsoþe we mowne not þe þingis þat we haue
 seen & herde: but speke/ & hei manasyng: lesten hem · not
 fyndynge how hei schulden punysche hem: for þe puple/ for
 alle men clarifieden þat þing þat was done: in þat þing þat
 bifel/ forsoþe þe man was more þan of fourty zeeris: in whom
 þe signe of helþe was made/ forsoþe hei leste camen to heren
 & tolden to hem: how manye þingis þe prynces & eldre men
 seyden to hem/ þe whiche whanne hei herden: wiþ one herte
 reyðiden voyce to þe lorde & seyden/ lorde þou þat madist he-
 uene & erþe · see & alle þingis þat ben in hem · þe whiche by þe
 holy goſt by þe mouþe of oure fadir daupde þi childe: seydist/
 whi heþen men wrathiden (or beeten wiþ teþ to gedir): and
 puplis þouzten beyne þingis/ kyngis of þe erþe stoden nyȝ: &
 prynces camen togedir into one azenes þe lorde · & azenes his
 crist/ for hei camen togedir verreyly in þis cytee azenes þin
 holy childe/ Jhū whom þou anoyntidist: heroude & pounce
 pilate wiþ heþen men & puplis of isrl: for to do þe þingis þat
 þin hande & þi counsayl demeden for to be done/ and now
 lorde biholde into þe þretynngis of hem: & zif to þi seruauntis
 wiþ al trifle for to speke þi worde · in þat þing þat þou holde
 forþe þin hande · helþes & signes & wondris for to be made
 by þe name of þin holy sone Jhū/ and whanne hei hadden
 preyede:

dedis

prepede: he place was mouede: in whiche hei weren gederide/
and alle ben fulfildē wiþ he holy goſt: & ſpaken he worde of
god wiþ triſte/ forſoþe of he multitude of men bileuyngē: her
was one herte & one ſoule (or wille)/ neher any man ſeyde any
þing of þo þingis þat he weldide for to be his owne: but alle
þingis weren in comyn to hem/ & wiþ greet vertue he apoſtliſ
zolden witneſſyngē of he azen ryſyngē of Jhū criſt oure lorde:
& greet grace was in hem alle/ forſoþe neher any nedy man
was amonge hem/ & how many euer weren poſſeſſours (or
welders) of feeldis (or houſis): hei ſellyngē brouzten to: he
pryſe of þo þingis þat hei ſolden: & puttiden biſore he feet of
he apoſtliſ/ forſoþe hei departiden to eche: as it was nede to
eche/ forſoþe Joſeph þat is namyde barnabas of he apoſtliſ:
þat is interpretide he ſone of conforte & deken of he kynde of
cypre: whanne he had a feelde: ſelde it & brouzte to he price:
& puttide it biſore he feet of apoſtliſ//

C^m 5^m



Forſoþe a man ananye by name wiþ ſaphira his wiſe
ſelde a feelde: & defraudide of he priſe: his wiſe
gilty (or wytyngē): and he bryngyngē ſum parte
puttide it biſore he feet of he apoſtliſ/ forſoþe petre
ſeyde/ ananye whi haþ ſathanas temptide þin herte: þee for
to lie to he holy goſt: and for to defraude of he pryce of he
feelde: wher it dwellyngē: dwelte not to þee: and it ſolde
was in þi power: why haſt þou putte þis þing in þin herte:
þou haſt not liede to men: but to god/ forſoþe ananye heryngē
þes wordis ſel doune & diede/ and greet drede was into alle
þat herden/ forſoþe zonge men ryſyngē: moueden hym aweye:
and beryngē oute byrieden/ forſoþe her was made as he ſpace
of þre houres: & he wiſt of hym not knowyngē þat þing þat
was done: entride in/ forſoþe petre anſweride to hire/ wom-
man ſeye to me: zif zee ſelden he feelde for ſo myche: and
ſche ſeyde zhe: ſo myche/ forſoþe petre ſeyde to hire/ what
ſopely came to gedit to zou (or acordide) for to tempte he ſpi-
rit

ye aplis

rit of þe lorde/ lo þe feet of hem þat haue biriede þin housbonde
at þe dore/ and þei schulen bere þee oute/ anone sche sel doune
at his feet/ & diede/ forsoþe þe zonge men entrynge founden
hire deade/ & þei baren hire oute & birieden to hire housbonde/
and greet drede is made in al þe chirche/ and into alle þat
herden þes þingis/ forsoþe by þe handis of apostlis/ signes &
manye wondris weren made in þe puple/ & alle weren to gedir
in þe porche of salamon/ forsoþe no man of oþer durste ioyne
hym self wiþ hem/ but þe puple magnifiede hym/ forsoþe þe
multitude of men & wymmen byleuyng in þe lorde was more
encreside/ so þat into stretis þei brouzten sijk men/ & puttiden
in litil beddis & couchis/ þat petre comynge/ namely þe scha-
dowe of hym schulde schadowe eche of hem/ & þei wer dely-
ueride fro al sekenesse/ forsoþe þe multitude of cytees nyz to
iherlm ran bryngynge to sijk men & traueylide of vnclene spiri-
tis/ þe whiche weren heelide alle/ forsoþe þe prynces of pristis
risynge/ & alle þat weren wiþ hym/ þat is þe heresie of sadu-
cees/ ben fulfildes wiþ enuye/ & leyden handis into apostlis/
and puttiden hem in comoune kepyng/ forsoþe þe aungel
of þe lorde by nyzt openynge þe zate of þe prisoune & ledynge
hem oute/ seyde/ go zee & zee stondynge speke in þe temple to
þe puple/ and þe wordis of his lijf/ þe whiche whan þei had-
den herde/ entreden erly into þe temple & tauzten/ forsoþe þe
prynce of pristis comynge & þei þat weren wiþ hym/ clepide
to gedir þe counseyl/ & al þe eldre men of þe sones of isrl/ &
senten to þe prisoune þat þei schulden be brouzte forþ/ soþely
whanne þe mynystris came & þe prisoune openyde founden hem
not/ þei turneden azen tolden seyinge/ forsoþe we founden þe
prisoune schitte wiþ al diligence/ & þe kepers stondynge at þe
zatis/ forsoþe we openynge/ founden no man þerinne/ Soþely
as þe magistratis of þe temple & þe prynces of pristis herden
þes wordis/ þei doutiden of hem what schulde be done/ forsoþe
summan comynge/ tolde to hem/ for lo þe men whom zee
haue putte into prisoune/ ben in þe temple stondynge & tech-
ynge

Dedís

ynge þe puple/ þanne þe magistrate wente wiþ þe mynyſtris:
 and brouzte to wiþ oute ſtrengþe/ forſoþe þei dredden þe pu-
 ple · leſte þei ſchulden be ſtonyde to deþ/ and whanne þei had-
 den brouzte hem to: þei ordeynyden in þe counſeyl/ & þe
 prynces of priſtis: axide hem ſeyinge/ in comaundyngge we
 comaundiden to zou: þat zee ſchulden not teche in þis name/
 and lo zee haue fulfild eſai in wiþ zoure techynges: and zee
 wolen brynge in on vs þe blood of þis man/ forſoþe petre an-
 ſwerynge & þe apoſtliſ ſeyden/ it bihoueh for to obeie to god
 more þan to men/ god of oure faderis reſyde Ihu whom zee
 ſlowen: hangyng in a tree/ god enhaunſide wiþ his riſthande
 þis prynce & ſaueoure · for to ȝyue penaunce to iſrl: and re-
 myſſion of ſynnes/ and we ben witneſſis of þes wordis: and þe
 holy goſt whom god ȝaue to alle obeſchyngge to hym/ whanne
 þei herden þes þingis: þei weren turmentide & þouzten for to
 flee hem/ forſoþe ſumman riſyng in þe counſeyl · a phariſe
 gamaliel by name · a doctoure of þe lawe · a worſchipful man
 to al þe puple: comaundide men to be made wiþ outen forþ
 to a ſchorte tyme/ & he ſeyde to hem/ zee men of iſrl take tente
 to zou ſelf on þes men: what zee ben to doinge/ forſoþe bifore
 þes dayes theodas was ſeyinge hymſelf for to be ſumman/ to
 whom a nowmbre of men consentide: aboute ſoure hundride/
 þe whiche is ſlayne: and alle who euer bileueden vnto hym ·
 ben diſparplide · & brouzte to nouzte/ after þis Judas galilee
 was in þe daye of profeſſion · & turnede aweie þe puple aſtir
 hym/ and alle how manye euer consentiden to hym: ben ſca-
 teride · & he periſchide/ & nowe ſohely I ſeye to zou · departe
 zee fro þes men & ſuffre zee hem/ for ȝif it be of men þis coun-
 ſeyl (or werke): it ſchal be vndone/ forſoþe ȝif it is of god: zee
 moſwne not vndo hem/ but ſuffre zee hem: leſte parauenture ·
 & zee be ſounden for to repungne to god/ forſoþe þei conſen-
 tiden to hym/ and þei clepyngge to gedir þe apoſtliſ · denoun-
 ſiden to hem beten: þat þei ſchulden no more ſpeke in þe
 name of Ihu · & leſten hem/ & ſohely þei wenten ioyinge fro
þe

ye aplis

he sizte of he counseyl/ for hei ben had worpi for to suffre disci-
pisyng (or wronge) for he name of Ihu/ forsope eche day hei
ceesiden not in he temple & aboute housis: techynge & euuan-
gelizynge Ihu crist//



Forsope in þo dayes þe nowmbre of disciplis waxinge: C^m 6^m
grucchyng of grekis is made azenes ebrues * for
þat he widowis of hem weren dispiside in euery
dayes mynystryng/ forsope þe twelue clepyng to
gedir þe multitude of disciplis: seyden/ it is not euene þing vs
for to forsake þe worde of god: and for to mynystre to bordis/
þerfore breþeren biholde zee men of zou of good witnessyng (or
fame) * seuene ful of þe holy gost & wisdom: whom we schulen
ordeyne on his werke/ forsope we schulen be bispe * to preper
& mynystrie (or prechynge) of þe worde/ & þe worde pleside
to al þe multitude/ and hei chesiden steuen a man ful of feiþ &
of þe holy gost * & philip & procure * & nychanore & thymon * &
permanam * & nychol a geste (or comelyng) antiochene/ hei
ordeynyden þes bifore þe sizte of apostlis: and hei preyng
puttiden þe handis to hem/ and þe worde of þe lorde weride:
& þe noumbre of þe disciplis in iherlm was multipliede myche/
also myche cumpanye of pristis obeyede to þe feiþ// ¶ Steuene
ful of grace & strengþe: made wondris & greet signes in þe
puple/ forsope summe risen of þe synagoge þat was clepide of
lybertynes & cirynense & of men of alexandre * & of hem þat
weren of cilice & asie disputynge wiþ steuene/ and hei myzten
not wiþstonde to þe wisdom & spirit þat spac/ þanne hei pry-
uely senten men þat schulden seye hem haue herde hym seyng
wordis of blasfemye: in to moyses & god/ and so hei moueden
to gedir þe puple & eldre men & scribis: and hei rennyng to
gedir raupschiden hym: & brouzten into þe counseyl/ & hei or-
deynyden false witnessis seyng/ þis man ceesliþ not for to
speke wordis: azenes þe holy place & lawe/ forsope we herden
hym seyng/ for þis Ihu of nazareth schal distrupe þis place *
& schal

Dedys

& schal chaunge tradicoñs: þe whiche moyses bitoke to vs/
and alle men þat saten in þe counseyl biholdynge hym: sizen
þe face of hym as þe face of an aungel/ forsoþe þe pryñce of
pristis seyde to steuene/ zif þes þingis haue hem so: þe whiche
seih//

C^m 7^m



En breperen & faderis here zee/ god of glorie appe-
ride to oure fadir abraham whanne he was in me-
sopotange bifore he dwellide in carram: and seyde
to hym/ go oute of þi lande • & of þi cognacoñ (or
kynrede): and come into þe lande whom I schal schewe to þee/
þanne he wente oute of þe lande of caldeis: and dwellide in
carram/ and þens astir þat his fadir was deade: he translatide
hym into þis lande • in whiche zee dwellen now/ & he zawe
not to hym heretage in it • neþer a paas of foot: but he azen
bibizte for to zyeue to hym it into possession & to his seede astir
hym: whanne he had not a sone/ forsoþe god spak to hym/ for
his seede schal be a comelyng (or gesse) in an alien lande &
þei schulen sujet hem to seruage • & schulen euyl treete hem
foure hundride zeeris & þritty/ and I schal iuge þe solc: to
whiche þei schulen serue • seih þe lorde/ & astir þes þingis þei
schulen go oute: and þei schulen serue to me in þis place/ and
he zawe to hym a testament of circumcisiō: & so he gendride
ysaac & circumcidide hym • in þe eyztþe dage/ and (ysaac) gen-
dride iacob: and Iacob þe twelue patriarkis/ and þe patriar-
kis haupnge enuye to Ioseph: solde hym into egipte/ and god
was wip hym & delyueride hym of alle his tribulacoñs: &
zawe to hym grace & wisdom in þe sizte of pharao kyng of
egipte/ and he ordeynede hym prouost (or souereyn) on egipte:
& on al his hous/ forsoþe hungre came into al egipte & ca-
naan • & grete tribulacō: & oure faderis founden not metis/
forsoþe whanne iacob herde: whete for to be in egipte: he sente
oure faderis firste/ and in þe secounde tyme: Ioseph was
known of his breperen: & his kyn is made known to pharao/
forsoþe

ye aplis

forsoþe Ioseph sendynge clepide to Iacob his fadir: and al his
 cognacoñ in seuenty & fyue soulis/ and Iacob discendide into
 egipte * & is deade he & oure faderis * & þei ben translatide in-
 to sicchem * & ben putte in þe sepulcre þat abraham bouzte by
 prise of siluer * of þe sones of emor þe sone of sicchem/ forsoþe
 whan þe tyme of biheste came nyz * þe whiche god had knowel-
 echide to abraham: þe puple were & was multipliede in egipte *
 til anoþe kynge roos in egipte: þe whiche knewe not Ioseph/
 þis bigilynge oure puple * turmentide oure faderis * þat þei
 schulden putte oute here zonge children: lest þei were quyk-
 enyde/ in þe same tyme moyses was borne: and he was ac-
 ceptide (or louede) of god/ and he was norischide þre monethes:
 in þe house of his fadir/ forsoþe hym putte oute þe douzter of
 pharao took hym vp & norischide hym into a sone to hire/ &
 moyses was lernyde in al þe wisdom of egipcians: and he
 was myzty in his werkis/ forsoþe whanne þe tyme of twenty
 zeer was fulfild to hym: it slepze vp into his herte þat he
 schulde visite his breþeren þe sones of isrl/ & whanne he sice a
 man suffrynge wronge: he vengide hym * & dide vengeaunce
 to hym þat suffride wronge * þe egipcian slayne/ forsoþe he
 gefside breþeren for to vnderstonde: for god by þe hande of hym
 schulde zpyue to hem helpe/ but þei vnderstoden not/ forsoþe in
 þe day suyng * he apperide to hem chydynge * & he recoun-
 seylide hem in pees seyinge/ men zee ben breþeren/ wherto
 noyzen zee eche oþer/ forsoþe he þat dide wronge to his
 neyzebore: puttide hym away seyinge/ who ordeynede þee
 prynce & domesman on vs: wher þou wolte slee me as zistirday
 þou killidest þe egipcian/ forsoþe in þis worde moyses slepze:
 & was made a comelyng in þe lande of madian: where he
 gendride two sones/ and fourty zeer fulfild: an aungel appe-
 ride to hym in sijr of flaume of a busche * in deserte * in þe
 mounte of syna/ forsoþe moyses seinge * wondride in sizte/ &
 hym comynge to þat he schulde biholde: þe voyce of þe lorde
 is made to hym seyinge/ I am god of zoure faderis/ god of
 abraham *

Dedis

abraham * & god of ysaac * god of Jacob/ moyses made trem-
 blynge: durste not biholde/ forsope god seyde to hym/ vnbynde
 he scho of hi feet/ for he place in whiche thou stondist is holy
 erthe/ I seinge sise he affliccō of my puple hat is in egipte * & I
 herde he mournynge of hem: and I came doune for to deliuer
 hem/ & nowe come thou: & I schal sende thee into egipte/ ¶ his
 moyses whom he denyeden: seyinge/ who ordeynede thee
 pryncce & domesman on vs/ god sente his pryncce & azen bier:
 wih he hande of he aungel: hat apperide to hym in he busche/
 his ledde hem oute doinge wondris & signes in he lande of egipte
 & in he reede see: & in deserte fourty zeeris/ his is moyses hat
 seyde to he sones of isrl/ god schal reyse to zou a prophete of
 zoure breheren: as me see schulen here hym/ his is hat was
 in he chirche in wildernesse wih he aungel hat spak to hym
 in he mounte of syna * & wih oure faderis: he whiche took
 wordis of lyfe for to zpye to vs/ to whom our faderis wolden
 not obeie * but puttiden hym aweye * & ben turnyde away in
 here hertis into egipte: seyinge to aaron/ make thou to vs
 goddis: hat schulen go bifore vs/ forsope to his moyses hat
 ledde vs oute of he lande of egipte: we witen not what is done
 to hym/ & he maden a calue in ho dayes: & offerden an ooste
 to he simulacre * & he gladiden in he werkis of here handis/
 forsope god turnede & bitoke hem for to serue to he knyzthode
 of heuene: as it is writen in he booc of prophetis/ where see
 offreden to me slayne sacrifices (or oostis) fourty zeeris in de-
 serte: see hous of isrl: and see haue taken he tabernacle of
 moloc * & he sterre of zoure god remfam: fygures hat see haue
 made for to worschip hem/ & I schal translate zou into babi-
 loyne/ he tabernacle of witnessynge was wih oure faderis in
 deserte: as god disposide to hem * spekyng to moyses: hat he
 schulde make it vp he fourme hat he sise/ he whiche & oure fa-
 deris takynge wih Ihu * brouzten into he possession of he bene-
 men: he whiche god puttide away fro he face of oure faderis:
 til into he dayes of dauyd hat fonde grace anentis god: & aride
 hat

ye aplis

þat he schulde fynde a tabernacle to god of Jacob/ salamon
 forsoþe bildide an hous to hym/ but þe hizedwelliþ not in made
 þingis by honde/ as he seiþ by þe prophete/ heuene is a feet to
 me/ þe erþe soþely þe stool of my feet/ what hous schulen zee
 bilde to me seiþ þe lorde/ or whiche is þe place of my restynge/
 wher myn hande made not alle þes þingis/ wiþ harde nolle &
 vncircumcidide hertis & eris * zee wiþ stonden euermore þe
 holy goſt/ as & zoure faderis so & zee/ whom of þe prophetis
 haue not zoure faderis pursuede/ & haue slayne hem þat bifore
 tolden of þe comynge of þe iuste/ whos traytours & mansleers
 zee weren now/ þe whiche token þe lawe in ordenaunce of aun-
 gels/ & haue not kepte/ forsoþe þei herynge þes þingis/ weren
 dyuertely turmentide in here hertis/ & gnastiden (or grenne-
 den) in hym/ forsoþe whanne ſteuene was ful of þe holy goſt/ he
 biholdynge into heuene ſize þe glorie of god/ and Jhu ston-
 ynge on þe rizt halfe of þe vertue of god/ and he seiþ/ lo I see
 heuenes openyde/ and þe ſone of man stondynge on þe rizt-
 halfe of þe vertue of god/ forsoþe þei crynge wiþ greet voyce/
 helden togedir þere eris/ & maden to gedir aſaute (or ſeerſe-
 neſſe) into hym/ and þei caſtynge hym oute of þe cytee/ ſton-
 eden/ & þe witneſſis diden of here clothes/ biſidis þe feet of a
 zonge man þat was clepide ſaul/ and þei ſtoneden ſteuene/
 inclepyng & ſeyinge/ lorde Jhu receyue my ſpirit/ forsoþe þe
 knees putte/ he criede wiþ greet voyce ſeyinge/ lorde ſette
 not to hem þis synne/ for þei witen not what þei done/ and
 whanne he had ſeyde þis þing/ he ſlepte in þe lorde/ forsoþe
 ſaul was consentynge to his deþ//



Forsoþe greet perfecucōn was made in þat day in þe
 chirche/ þat was in iſrlm/ and alle men weren ſcat-
 eride by þe cuntrees of Jude/ & ſamarie/ out taken
 þe apoſtliſ/ forsoþe men dredeful birieden ſteuene/
 & maden greet mournynge on hym/ forsoþe ſaul gretely diſ-
 trupde þe chirche/ entrynge by houſes/ drawynge men &
 wymmen

Dedís

wymmen bitoke into keppnge (or prifoune)/ þerfore þei þat
 weren fcateride · paßiden forþ: euangelyzinge þe worde of
 god/ forfoþe philip compnge doune into a cytee of samarie:
 prechide to hem criß/ forfoþe þe cumpanyes zauen tente to
 þes þingis þat weren feyde of philip: to gedir herpunge & feinge
 þe signes þat he dide/ forfoþe many of hem þat hadden unclene
 spiritis: cryinge wiþ greet voyce wenten oute/ forfoþe many
 fiik in paleße & crokide ben helide/ þerfore greet ioye is maad
 in þat cytee/ forfoþe þer was a man symon by name þe whiche
 bifore was in þe cytee a wicche deceyunge þe folc of samarie:
 feyinge hym self to be ſum greet man to whom alle herkenyden ·
 fro þe leße unto þe moße: feyinge/ þis is þe vertue of god: þe
 whiche is clepide greet/ forfoþe alle bihilden hym for þis þing ·
 þat myche tyme he had made hem mad (or wood) wiþ his
 wicchyngis/ foþely whanne þei hadden bileyde to philip
 euangiliß of þe kyngdom of god: in þe name of Iþū cñ · men &
 wymmen weren baptizide/ þanne Symon: & he bileyde/ and
 whanne he was baptizide: and cleuyde to philip/ he feinge
 alfo signes & moße vertues for to be made: dredynge wondride/
 forfoþe whanne þe apoßlis þat weren at irlm hadden herde ·
 for samarie receyuede þe worde of god: þei ſenten to hem pe-
 tre & Ion/ þe whiche whanne þei camen: preyeden for hem
 þat þei ſchulden receyue þe holy goß/ forfoþe not zit he came
 into any of hem: but þei weren baptifide onely in þe name of
 þe lorde Iþū/ þanne þei puttiden handis on hem: and þei re-
 ceyueden þe holy goß/ forfoþe whanne Symon had ſeen for
 þe holy goß was zouen by puttynge on of þe hande of apoß-
 lis: he offerde to hem money · feyinge/ zye zee to me & þis
 power · þat to whom euer I ſchal putte on handis: he receyue
 þe holy goß/ forfoþe petre feyde to hym/ þi money be wiþ þee
 into perdicoñ: for þou geßiß þe zifte of god for to be had (or
 weldide) by money/ parte is not to þee neþer ſorte: in þis
 worde/ for þin herte is not rißful: bifore god/ and ſo do þou
 penaunce fro þis þi wickidneße & prepe god: zif paraventure
 þis

ye aplis

his houzte of hin herte be forzouen to hee/ forsope in galle of
bittirnesse · & bonde of wickidnesse. ¶ I se hee for to be/ forsope
Symon answerynge seyde/ preye zee for me to he lorde: þat
no þing of þes þat zee haue seyde · come on me/ and þei wit-
nessynge spekyng he worde of he lorde · zeeden azen to irlm·
& euuangelizeden to many cuntrees & Samaritans/ ¶ forsope
an aungel of he lorde: spak to philip seyng/ rise þou & go
azenes he souzt to he weye þat goiþ doune fro irlm into ga-
zam: þis is deserte weye/ and he risynge wente forþ/ and lo a
man of ethiop · a myzty geldynge of he queen candace of ethi-
opies · he whiche was vpon al hire riches: came for to wor-
schip in irlm/ and he turnyde azen sittynge on his chare: & reed-
ynge psalme he prophete/ forsope he spirit seyde to philip/ come
to: and ioyne hee to þis chare/ forsope philip rennyng: herde
hym reedynge psalme he prophete/ and he seyde/ gestist þou
wher vnderstandist · what þingis þou redist? he whiche seih/
and how may I: zif summan schal not schewe to me? and he
preyede philip · þat he schulde steyze vp & sitte wih hym/ for-
sope he place of scripture þat he red: was þis/ as a scheep of
fleinge he was led · & as a lombe bifore a man scherynge hym
doumbe wih outhen voyce: so he openyde not his moup/ in meke-
nesse his doom is taken vp/ who schal telle oute he generacon
of hym? for his lijf schal be taken aweye fro he erþe/ forsope
he geldynge answerynge to philip: seyde/ I biseche hee of
what prophet seih he þis þing: of hym self or of any oþer?
forsope philip openynge his moup · & bigynnyng at þis scrip-
ture euuangelizide to hym Ihu/ and he while þei wenten by he
weye: þei camen to sum water/ and he geldynge seih/ lo wa-
ter/ who forbediþ me for to be baptiside? forsope philip seyde/
zif þou bileuest of al he herte: it is leueful/ and he answerynge
seih/ I bileue he sone of god for to be Ihu/ and he comaund-
ide he chaar for to stonde/ & þei wenten doune boþe into he wa-
ter · philip & he geldynge · & he baptiside hym/ forsope whanne
he steyzede vp of he water · he spirit of he lorde · raupschide

Dedīs

philip: and he geldynge ſiſe hym no more/ forſohe he wente
ioyzyng by his weye/ philip is founden in azoto/ and paſſynge
forþ euuangelizide to alle cytees: til he came to ceſarie//

C^m 9^m



Saul zit breher (or blower) of manaacis · & betynge
(or ſleinge) into diſciplis of þe lorde: came nyȝe to
þe prynce of priſtis · & axide of hym epiſtliſ into
damask to ſynagogis/ þat zif he fonde any men &
wymmen of his liſt: he ſchulde leede bounden to Irlm/ and
whan he made iourney: it biſel þat he came nyȝ to damask/ &
ſodeynly liȝt fro heuene ſchoon aboot hym: and he fallynge
into þe erþe · herde a voyce ſeyinge to hym/ Saul Saul what
purſueſt þou me: þe whiche ſeyde/ who art þou lorde? and he/
I am Ihu of nazereth: whom þou purſueſt/ it is harde to þee
for to kike azenes þe pricke/ & he tremblynge & wondrynge:
ſeyde/ lorde what wolte þou me for to do? and þe lorde to
hym/ riſe þou & entre into þe cytee: & it ſchal be ſeyde to þee:
what it bihoueh þee for to do/ forſohe þo men þat wenten
wiþ hym: ſtoden made ſerde (or oute of mynde)/ ſohely her-
ynge a voyce: forſohe ſeinge no man/ forſohe ſaul roos fro
þe erþe: & þe yȝen openyde he ſiȝe noþing/ forſohe þei draw-
ynge hym to hondis ledden into damask/ & he was þre dayes
not ſeinge: & he ete not breed neþer dranke/ forſohe a diſ-
ciple was at damask: by name ananye/ and þe lorde ſeyde
to hym in a viſioun ananye/ & he ſeiþ/ lo I lorde [and the
Lorde ſaid] to hym/ riſe þou & go into a ſtreet þat is clepide
rectus/ and ſeeke in þe hous of Judas · ſaul by name tarſenſe/
forſohe lo he preyeh/ & he ſiȝe a man ananye by name en-
trynge & puttynge to hym handis: þat he receyue liȝt/ forſohe
ananye anſweride: lorde I haue herde of many of þis man:
how many euyl þingis he dide to þe ſeyntis in irlm/ & þis haþ
power of prynces of priſtis: for to bynde alle men þat inclepen
þi name/ forſohe þe lorde ſeiþ to hym/ go þou for þis is to me
a veſſel of cheſynge: þat he bere my name biſore heþen men &
kyngis:

ye aplis

kingis: and þe sones of isrl/ forsoþe I schal schewe to hym •
how many þingis it bihoueh hym for to suffre for my name/
and ananye wente & entride into þe hous: & he puttynge to
hym þe handis seyde/ saul broþer • þe lorde ihū sente me • þat
apperide to þee in þe weye • in whiche þou camest: þat þou se
& be fulfild wip þe holy gost/ and anone þere sellen fro his
þzen as scalis: & he receyuede sirt/ and he risynge: is bap-
tistide/ & whanne he had taken mete: he was confortide/ for-
soþe he was wip þe disciplis þat weren at damask: by summe
dages/ & anone he entrynge into þe synagogis • prechide þe
lorde Ihū • for þis is þe sone of god/ forsoþe alle men þat
herden hym wondreden: and seyden/ wher þis is not þat
inpungnede in irīm: hem þat inclepeden þis name: and hidir
to þis þing he came: þat he schulde leede hem bounden to þe
prynces of pristis/ forsoþe Saul myche more were stronge &
confoundide þe ietwis þat dwelliden at damask • affermynge
for þis is cōt/ forsoþe whan manye dages weren fulfild: Jewes
maden a counseyl • þat þei schulden flee hym/ forsoþe þe as-
pies of hem: ben made knowen to Saul/ forsoþe þei kepten &
þe zatis day & nyzt þat þei schulden flee hym/ forsoþe his dis-
ciplis takynge hym in nyzt: bi þe wal leften hym • sendynge
doune & a leep/ forsoþe whanne he came into irīm: he tempt-
ide (or assayed) for to ioynen hym to þe disciplis: & alle dred-
den hym • not bileuyng þat he was a disciple/ forsoþe barna-
bas led hym to þe apostlis • & tolde to hem how in þe weye he
had seen þe lorde & for he spac to hym: and how in damask
he diide tristily in þe name of Ihū/ and he was wip hem en-
trynge in & goinge oute irīm: doinge tristily in þe name of þe
lorde/ and he spac to heþen men: & disputide wip greekis/
forsoþe þei þouzten for to flee hym/ þe whiche þing whanne
breþeren hadden knowen: þei ledden hym in nyzt to cesarie •
& leften to tarsis/ soþely þe chirche by al Jude of galilee & sa-
marie: had pees/ & was edifiede: walkyng in dreede of þe
lorde: & was fulfild wip comfort of þe holy gost/ forsoþe it is
made

dedis

made þat petre while þat he passide alle: came to þe holy men þat dwelliden at lidde/ forsoþe he sonde þete summan eneas bi name · fro cyzte zeetis liggynge in bed: þe whiche was sick in paleste/ and petre seih to hym/ eneas þe lorde Jhu crist heele þee/ rise þou & dresse to þet/ and anone he roos/ and alle men þat dwelliden at lidde & sarone · sise hym: þe whiche ben conuertide to þe lorde/ forsoþe in ioppe was sum disciplesse by name tabita: þe whiche interpretide is seyde dorcass/ þis was ful of good werkis & almes dedis þat sche dide/ forsoþe it is made in þo dayes: þat sche made sick diede/ þe whiche whanne þei hadden waschen: þei puttiden hire in a soupyng place/ forsoþe whanne lidda was nyȝt fro ioppe · discipulis herynge for petre was in it · senten two men to hym preyng: þat þou tarie not to come vnto vs/ soþely petre risynge vp: came wiþ hem/ and whanne he came: þei ledden hym into þe soupyng place/ and alle þe widowis aboute hym wepyng & schewyng cootis & cloþes: þe whiche dorcass made to hem/ forsoþe alle men caste oute wiþ outenforþ · petre puttyng þe knees: preyede/ and he turnyde to þe body: seyde tabita: rise þou in name of oure lorde Jhu crist/ and sche openyde þe yzen/ and petre seyn: sche satte vp azen/ forsoþe he zpyng to hire þe hande: reyside hire/ & whanne he had clepyde holy men & widowis: he assignyde hire quykke/ forsoþe it is made knowen by al ioppe: and þei bileueden in þe lorde/ forsoþe it is made þat many dayes he dwellide in Joppe at Symon sum curriour or tawer//

C^m 10^m



Essope summan was in cesarie by name cornelie centurio (þat is haupnge an hundride men vnder hym) · of þe cumpanye of knyȝtis · þat is seyde of ytalie · a religious man & dredynge þe lorde wiþ al his meyne · doynge manye almessis to þe puple: and preyng þe lorde euermore/ þis sise in a visioun oppynly · as in þe nyȝte houre (or none) · an aungel of god entrynge into hym: and



ye aplis

and seyinge to hym/ cornely/ and he biholdynge hym/ taken
 wif drede/ seyde/ who art thou lorde/ forsoke he seyde to hym/
 hi preyers & his almes dedis/ haue steyede vp into mynde/
 in he sith of he lorde/ and now sende men into ioppe/ & clepe
 a man Symount hat is namyde petre/ his is herboride at a
 man Symon curriour/ whos hous is visidys he see/ his schal
 seye to thee/ what it bihoueh thee for to do/ and whanne he
 aungel hat spac to hym had gon aweye/ he clepide to his
 homely men/ & a knyzt dredynge he lorde/ of hem hat obe-
 schide to hym to whom whanne he had tolde alle þingis/ he
 sente hem into ioppe/ forsoke on he day sunge/ hem ma-
 kynge iourney & neyzyng to he cytee/ petre steyede vp into he
 heyzer þingis of he hous/ pat he schulde preye aboute he sirte
 houre/ and whanne he hungride/ he wolde taste (or ete)/ for-
 soke hem makynge reedy/ an excelle of soule (or rauyschyng
 of spirit) fel on hym/ & he siþe heuene openyde/ & a vessel com-
 ynge doune as a greet scheet wif foure cordis for to be sente
 doune from heuene into erþe/ in he whiche weren alle foure
 foot beestis & crepyng þingis of erþe/ and volatilis of heuene
 (or eire)/ & a voyce is made to hym/ rise petre/ & flee & ete/
 toþely petre seiþ/ lorde ser be it fro me/ for I neuer ete/ al
 comoune þing & vnclene/ and este he secounde tyme he voyce
 to hym/ pat þing pat god haþ clenide/ thou schalt not seye
 vnclene/ forsoke his þing is done by pries/ & anone he vessel is
 receyuede into heuene/ and he while petre wifinne hymself
 doutide/ what he visioun was pat he siþe/ lo he men pat
 weren sente fro cornely sekyng he hous of Symon/ stoden
 nyzt at he zate/ & whanne þei hadden clepide/ þei axide zif
 Symount hat was namyde petre/ had þere herbore/ forsoke
 petre þenkyng of he visioun/ a spirit seyde to hym/ lo þe
 men seeken thee/ and so rise thou & go doune/ & go wif hem/ no
 þing doutynge for I sente hem/ forsoke petre comynge doune
 to he men/ seyde I am whom zee seeken/ what is he cause for
 whiche zee haue comen/ he whiche seyden/ cornelie centurio/

a iuste

dedis

a iuste man • & dredynge god • & haupnge gode witnesynge of alle þe folc of ietwis • toke answere of an holy aungel for to clepe þee into his hous • & for to heere wordis of þee/ þerfore he leedynge hem wiþinne receyuede in herbore/ forsoþe in þe daye supnge • he risynge wente forþ wiþ hem/ and summe of breþeren fro ioppe folowide hym • þat þei be witnesis to petre/ forsoþe anoper day he entride into cesarie/ forsoþe cornelie abode hem • his cosyns and necessarie frendis clepide to gedir/ and it is done whanne petre had entride • cornelie came metynge hym • & fallynge doune at his feet • he worschipide hym/ petre sobely reyside hym • seyinge/ rise • & I my self am a man as & þou/ and he spekyng wiþ hym entride in • & fonde manye þat camen to gedre/ & he seyde to hem/ zee witen how abhomynable it is to a man iewe • for to be ioynede or to come to an alien/ but god schewide to me no man for to seye a man comyn (or vnclene) • for whiche þing I clepide came/ þerfore I are zou for what cause haue zee clepide me/ and cornelie seiþ/ fro þe forþ day passide til to þis houre • I fastynge was preyng in þe nynþe houre in myn hous/ & lo a man stode before me in whijt clooth • and seiþ/ cornelie þi preyer is herde • and þin almes dedis ben in mynde in þe sizte of god/ sende þerfore into Joppe • & clepe Symount þat is nampde petre • þis is herboride in þe hous of Symon curriour • bisides þe see/ þis whanne he schal come schal speke to þee/ þerfore anone I sente to þee • & þou didist wel in comynge to vs/ now þerfore we ben alle present in þi sizte • for to here þe wordis what euer ben comaundide to þee • of þe lorde/ forsoþe petre openynge his mowþ seyde/ in treuþe I haue founden • for god is not acceptour of persones • but in eche folc he þat dredith god/ and wirchith rihtwefnesse • is accepte to hym/ god sente a worde to þe sones of isrl schewynge pees by Ihu crist • þis is god of alle men/ zee witen þe worde þat is made by alle Judee/ forsoþe bygynnyng fro galilee • astir þe baptyme þat Jon prechide Ihu of nazareth • how god anoyntide hym wiþ þe

ye aplis

þe holy gost · & vertue þe whiche þourgh passiðe in wel doinge
 & helynge alle men oppresside of þe deuyl: for god was wiþ
 hym/ and we ben witnessis of alle þingis þe whiche he dide in
 þe cuntre of iewis & Irlm: whom þei slouen hengynge in a
 tree/god reyside þis in þe þridde day · & zawe hym for to be made
 knowen · not to eche puple · but to witnessis bifore ordeynede
 of god to vs þat eten & drunken wiþ hym: astir þat he roos
 azen fro deade men/ and he comaundide to vs for to preche to
 þe puple & for to witnesse: for he is ordeynede of god domes-
 man of quicke & deade/ to þis alle prophetis beren wit-
 nessynge · alle men þat bileuen into hym for to receyue re-
 myssiõ of synnes by his name/ zit petre spekyng þe wordis:
 þe holy gost fel on alle þat herden þe worde/ and þe seipful
 (or cristen men) of circumcisiõ þat camen wiþ petre: [where
 astonnyed] for & into nacoñs þe grace of þe holy gost is schede
 oute/ forsoþe þei herden hem spekyng wiþ tungis (or langa-
 gis): and magnysfyinge god/ þanne petre answeride: wher
 any man may forbide water · þat þes ben not baptiside þat
 haue receyuede þe holy gost: as & we: and he comaundide hem
 for to be baptiside in name of þe lorde Ihu cñ/ þanne þei
 preyeden hym: þat he schulde dwelle wiþ hem summe dayes//



Essoþe þe apostlis herden þat weren in Judee: for
 & heben men receyueden þe worde of god · & þei
 glorifiede god/ forsoþe whanne petre came to Irlm:
 þei þat weren of circumcisiõ disputiden azenes
 hym seyinge/ whi entredist þou to men hauyng prepucie: and
 hast eten wiþ hem: Petre soþely bygynnyng: expounyde to
 þem þe ordre seyinge/ I was in þe cytee of ioppe preyinge: &
 I siȝe in excelle of my soule a visiõne · sum vessel comynge
 doune as a greet scheet (or linnen cloþe) · wiþ foure cordis for
 to be sente doune fro heuene: & it came vnto me/ in whiche I
 biholdynge bihilde & siȝe foure footide þingis of erþe · & beestis
 & creyng þingis: & volatilis of þe eire/ forsoþe I herde & a
 voyce

C^m 11^m

dedis

voyce seyinge to me/ petre rijsse: flee & ete/ forsoþe I seyde
 nay lorde comoune þing (or vnclene): entride neuer into my
 mounþ/ soþely þe voyce answeride þe secounde tyme fro he
 uene/ þo þingis þat god haþ clenstide: þou schalt not seye vn
 clene/ forsoþe þis is done by þries: and alle þe þingis be
 receyuede azen into heuene/ and lo þre men anone stoden nyȝt
 in þe hous in whiche I was: sente fro cesarie to me/ forsoþe a
 spirit seyde to me þat I schulde go wiþ hem no þing doutynge
 forsoþe & þes fire breþeren camen wiþ me: and we entreden
 into þe hous of þe man soþely he tolde how he sate an aungel
 in his hous: stondynge & seyinge to hym/ sende into ioppe
 & clepe Symount þat is nampde petre/ þe schal speke to þee
 wordis: in whiche þou schalt be saaf & al þin hous/ forsoþe
 whan I had bigunnen for to speke: þe holy gost sel on hem
 as into vs in þe bigynnyng/ forsoþe I biþouzte on þe worde
 of þe lorde: and he seyde/ soþely Ioon baptiside in water: for
 soþe zee schulen be baptiside in þe holy gost/ þerfore zif god
 zaue þe same grace as & to vs þat bileueden in þe lorde Ihu
 crist: who was I þat myȝte forbede þe lorde: þat he schulde not
 geue þe holy gost to men bileuyng in þe name of Ihu crist:
 þes þingis herde: þei helden pees & glorifieden god: seyinge/
 þerfore & to heþen men: god haþ zouen penaunce to lijf/ and
 soþely þei þat weren scateride of þe tribulacōn: þat was made
 vndre steuene: walkiden forþ til to senyce & cypre & antioche
 to no man spekyng þe worde: no but to ietwes al one/ forsoþe
 sum of þe men weren of cypre & cyrren/ þe whiche whanne
 þei entreden into antioche: spaken to greekis schewyng þe
 lorde Ihu/ & þe hande of þe lorde was wiþ hem/ & myche
 nowmbre of men bileuyng: is conuertide to þe lorde/ forsoþe
 þe worde came to þe eris of þe chirche þat was at irlm on þes
 þingis: & þei senten barnabas vnto antioche/ þe whiche
 whanne he had comen: & seen þe grace of þe lorde: ioyede/ and
 he monestide alle men in purpos of herte: for to dwelle in þe
 lorde: for he was a good man & full of þe holy gost & feiþ/ &
 myche

ye aplis

myche cumpanye is putte to þe lorde/ forsoþe he wente forþ
to tarsis: þat he schulde seek saul/ whom whan he had founden/
he ledde to antioche/ and al a zeer þei lyueden þere in þe
chirche · & tauzten myche cumpanye: so þat firste cristen dis-
ciples weren namyde at antioche/ forsoþe in þes dayes: pro-
phetis camen ouer fro irlm̄ to antioche/ & one of hem risynge
agabus by name: signyfiede by þe spirit a greet hungre to
comynge in al þe roundeneste of erþis: þe whiche hungre is
made vndre claudius/ forsoþe þe disciplis purposiden alle as
eche had · for to sende mynysterie to breþeren dwellyng in Ju-
dee/ þe whiche þing & þei diden · sendynge to þe eldre men: by
þe hande of barnabas & saule//



Forsoþe in þe same tyme heroude þe kyng sente hon-
dis · for to turment summen of þe chirche/ forsoþe
he slowe by swerde · James þe broþer of Joon/
forsoþe he seinge for it pleside to þe iewis · puttide
to for to cacche & petre/ forsoþe þe dayes of þerfe loues weren/
whom whanne he had cauȝte he sente into prisoune: and bi-
takynge to foure quaternyouns of knyȝtis · (þat eche had
foure vndir hym) for to kepe hym: willynge aftir pask for to
bryng hym forþ to þe puple/ & soþely petre was kepte in pri-
soune/ forsoþe preyer was made of þe chirche: wiþ outen ceef-
ynge to god for hym/ forsoþe whan heroude was to bryng
forþ hym: in þat nyȝt petre was slepyng bitwixe two knyȝtis
bounden wiþ two cheynes: & keepers before þe dore kepten þe
prisoune/ and lo an aungel of þe lorde stood nyȝ: & lizte schone
azen in þe habitacle/ and þe side of petre smyten: he reyside (or
wakȝde) hym seyinge/ rise swifftely/ and anone þe cheynes fel-
len doune of his handis/ forsoþe þe aungel seyde to hym/ be
þou girde bifore: & do on þi hoofis/ & he dide so/ & he seyde to
hym/ do aboute to þee þi clooþ: & sue me/ and he goinge oute
suede hym: and he wiste not for it is soþe þat was made by þe
aungel/ forsoþe he geside hym self for to se a visioun/ forsoþe

C^m 12^m

dedis

hei passynge he firste & he secounde keppynge: camen to he Iren
 zate pat leedih to he cytee: he whiche wilfully is openyde to
 hem/ and hei goinge oute camen forþ into one strete: and
 anone he aungel passide aweye fro hym/ and petre turnynge
 azen to hym self: seyde/ nowe I woot verreyly for he lorde
 sente his aungel: & delyueride me fro he hande of heroude: &
 of al abydynge of he puple of Jewis/ and he biholdynge came
 to he hous of mary modir of Jon pat is namyde markus:
 were many weren gederide to gedir & preynginge/ forsoþe hym
 knockynge at he dore of he zate: a wenche rode by name
 came forþ to se/ and as sche knewe he voyce of petre: for ioye
 sche openyde not he zate/ but rennyng in: tolde petre for to
 stonde bifore he zate/ & hei seyden to hire/ pou maddist (or art
 woot)/ sche sopely assermyde: for to haue hym so/ forsoþe hei
 seyden/ it is his aungel/ forsoþe he lastide knockynge/ sopely
 whanne hei hadden openyde: hei sizen hym & wondriden/
 sopely he bekenynge to hem wiþ hande for to be stille: tolde
 how he lorde had ledde hym oute of prisoune/ and he seyde/
 telle zee to James & to breþeren hes þingis/ and he gon oute:
 wente into anoter place/ forsoþe he day made: her was not
 litil turblynge amonge he knyztis: what was done of petre/
 sopely whanne heroude had souzte hym azen & not founden:
 inquesicion (or seekynge) make of he keepers: he comaundide
 hem for to be brouzte/ and he comynge doune fro Judee into
 cesarie: dwellide here/ forsoþe he was wroh to men of tyre &
 of sidon/ and hei of one acorde come to hym: & blasius pat was
 on he couche of he kyng: softely stiride: hei axiden pees: for
 whi pat here cuntrees weren norischide (or susteynyde) by
 hym/ forsoþe a day ordeynede: heroude cloþide wiþ kyngis
 cloþinge satte for domesman: and spac to hem/ forsoþe he
 puple criede he voyces of god: not of man/ sopely anone an
 aungel of he lorde smote hym: for he had not done honoure
 to god/ and he wastide of wormes: diede/ sopely he worde of
 he lorde waxide/ & was multipliede/ forsoþe barnabas & saul
 turnyde

ye aplis

turnyde azen fro irlm̄ · þe mynyſterie fulfildē: Ion taken to
þat was nampde markus//



Forsoþe þer weren in þe chirche þat was at antioche:
prophetis & dottours · in whiche barnabas & Sy-
mon þat is clepide blac · & lucius syronense & ma-
naen þat was þe soukyngē feer of heroude tetrark
(þat is prynce of þe surþe parte) & saul/ forsoþe hem mynyſ-
tryngē in þe lorde & fastyngē: þe holy gost seyde to hem/ de-
parte zee to me saul & barnabas into þe werke: to whiche I
haue taken hem/ þanne þei fastyngē & preyingē & puttyng han-
dis to hem: lesten hem/ and soþely þei sente of þe holy gost:
wenten forþ to seleucia/ and fro þens þei wenten by boot to
cypre · & whanne þei camen to salamyne: þei prechiden þe
worde of god in synagogis of iewis/ forsoþe þei hadden & Ioon
in mynyſterie (or seruice)/ and whanne þei hadden walkide by
al þe ile vnto paphum: þei founden a man wicche · a false
prophete a iewe · to whom þe name was barieu · þat was wiþ
þe pro consul sergius poul prudent man/ þis barnabas poul
clepide to: desiride for to here þe worde of god/ soþely helymas
wicche wiþstode hem · so soþely is interpretide his name:
sekyngē for to turne awey þe proconsul fro bileue/ forsoþe
saul wicche & poul · fulfildē wiþ þe holy gost: biholdyngē into
hym · seyde/ a þou ful of al gile · & al falsenesse · þou sone of þe
deuyl · þou enemye of al ryztwelnesse: þou leuest not for to
subuerte (or distrupe) þe ryztful weyes of þe lorde/ and lo now
þe hande of þe lorde on þee: and þou schalt be blynde · & not
seinge summe vnto a tyme/ & anone a myſte sel doune on hym:
and dirkenesse/ and he goinge aboute souzte hym þat schulde
zyue þe hande to hym/ þanne þe proconsul whanne he had
seen þe dede: bileuede · wondryngē on þe techyngē of þe lorde/
and whanne fro paphum poul had gon by boot · & þei þat we-
ren wiþ hym: þei camen to pergen of pamphile/ for ion depart-
yngē fro hem: turnyde azen to irlm̄/ soþely þei goinge to per-
gen:

C^m 13^m

Dedīs

gen: camen to antioche of perſidie/ and þei gone into þe ſyna-
goge: þe day of ſobotis: ſaten/ forſoþe aſtir reedyng of þe lawe
& prophetis: þe prynces of þe ſynagoge ſenten to hem ſeyinge/
men breþeren: ʒif any worde of exortacoñ (or techyng) to þe
puple is in ʒou: ſeye ʒee/ forſoþe poul ryſyng & wiþ hande bid-
dyng ſilence: ſeiþ/ men of iſrl̄ & ʒee þat dreden god: heriþ/ god
of þe puple of iſrl̄ chees oure faderis & enhauncide þe puple:
whanne þei weren comelyngis in þis lande of egipte: and in
an hiʒe arme he ledde hem oute of it: & by tyme of fourty
zeeris: he ſuſteynede here maners in deſerte/ and he diſtruy-
inge ſeuene folkis in þe lande of chanaan: by ſorte departide
to hem þe lande of hem: as aſtir ſoure hundride & fifty zeeris/
and aſtir þes þingis he ʒaue domeſmen: vnto ſamuel þe pro-
phete/ and fro þens: þei axiden a kyng/ and he ʒaue to hem
ſaul þe ſone of ciſ: a man of þe lynage of beniamyn: by fourty
zeeris/ and hym done aſwey: he reſide to hem dauid kyng:
to whom he beryng wiſneſſyng: ſeyde/ I haue founden
dauid: þe ſone of ieſſe: a man aſtir myn herte: þe whiche
ſchal do alle my willis/ of whos ſeed vp biheſte: god ledde
oute of iſrl̄ a ſaueour ihū: Ion prechyng bifore þe face of his
comyng þe baptyſm of penaunce to al þe puple of iſrl̄/ forſoþe
whan Ion had fulfild his cours: he ſeyde/ whom ʒee demen
me for to be I am not/ but lo here comeþ aſtir me of whos I
am not worþi: for to vnbynde þe ſchoon of his feet/ men bre-
þeren ſones of þe kynde of abraham: & þat in ʒou dreden god:
to ʒou þe worde of helpe is ſente/ ſoþely þei þat dwelliden at
iſrl̄ & prynces of it vnknoWyng þis Ihu: & þe voyces of pro-
phetis þat by euery ſaboth ben red: demyng fulfilden/ and
þei ſyndyng in hym no cauſe of deþ: axiden of pilate: þat þei
ſchulden ſlee hym/ and whanne þei hadden endide alle þingis
þat weren writen of hym: þei puttyng hym doune of þe tree:
puttiden hym in a graue/ forſoþe god reſide hym fro deade
(men) in þe þridde day: þe whiche is ſeen by many dayes to
hem þat to gedir ſtepyeden vp fro galilee to iſrl̄: þe whiche
ben

ye aplis

ben to now his witneſſis to þe puple/ & we ſchewen to zou þe ilke þat is made biheſte azen to our faderis · for god haþ fulfild þis to zoure ſones · azen reſpynge Ihu · as in þe ſecounde pſalme it is writen/ þou art my ſone to day I gendride þee/ forſoþe þat he azen reſpide hym fro deade men · now no more to turnyng into corrupcion · þus he ſeiþ/ for I ſchal zꝑue to zou þe holy trewe þingis of daupd/ and herfore in anoter ſtede he ſeiþ/ þou ſchalt not zꝑue þin holy for to ſe corrupcion/ forſoþe daupd in his generacon whanne he had mynyſtride to þe wille of god · ſlepte (or diede)/ and is putte to his faderis · & ſize corrupcion/ ſohely he whom god reſpide fro deade (men) · ſize not corrupcion/ herfore men breþeren be it knowen to zou · for by hym remyſſion of ſynnes is tolde to zou · fro alle ſynnes · of þe whiche zee myzten not be iuſtifiede in þe lawe of moyſes/ in þis eche man þat bileueþ · is iuſtifiede/ herfore ſe þee þat it come not to zou · þat is aboue ſeyde in prophetis/ ſe zee diſpiſers & wondre zee · & be zee ſcateride abroad · for I worche a werke in zoure dayes · a werke þat zee ſchulen not bileue · zif any man ſchal telle oute to zou/ forſoþe hem goinge oute · þei prepeden · þat anoter ſuyng ſaboth · þei ſchulen ſpeke to hem þes wordis/ and whanne þe ſynagoge was leſte · manye of Jewes & of comelyngis worſchippynge ſueden poul & barnabas/ þe whiche ſpekynge ſoftely counſeyliden hem · þat þei ſchulden in þe grace of god/ ſohely in þe ſaboth ſuyng · almoſt al þe cytee came to gedir · for to heere þe worde of god/ forſoþe iewes ſeinge þe cumpanyes of puple ben fulfild wiþ eneue · & azen ſeyden þes þingis þat weren ſeyde of poul · blaſfemyng/ þanne poul & barnabas ſtedefaſtly ſeyden/ to zou it bihoſte firſte for to ſpeke þe worde of god · but for zee putten it aweye & haue demyde zee vnworþi of euerlaſtyng liſ · lo we turnen to gedir to heþen men/ forſoþe ſo þe lorde comaundide vs/ I haue putte þee into liſte to heþen men · þat þou be into helpe · vnto þe vntirmoſt of erþe/ ſohely heþen men herynge · ioyzeden & glorifieden þe worde of þe lorde

dedis

lorde & bileueden · how manye euer weren bifore ordeynyde t
euerlaſtynge liſt/ forſoþe þe worde of þe lorde was ſet ſowen
by al þe cuntre/ ſoþely iewes ſtreden religious wynnem
oneſte & þe firſte men of þe cytee/ & ſtreden perſecuciō into
poul & barnabas · and caſtiden oute hem of here cuntrees/ and
þei þe powdre of ſeet ſchaken away into hem/ camen to
pconye/ & þe diſciplis weren fulſilde wiþ ioye of þe holy goſt/

C^m 14^m



Forsoþe at ychonye it is done · þat to gedir þei entre-
den into a ſynagoge of Jewes & ſpaken/ ſo þat a
plenteuouſe multitude of iewis & grekiſ bileuede/
forſoþe þe iewis þat weren vnbileueful · reſyden
perſecuciō/ and to wraþ ſtreden þe ſoulis of heþen men
azenes breþeren/ þerfore þei dwelten myche tyme · doinge
triſtily in þe lorde · berynge witneſſynge þe worde of hiſ grace/
zyuyng ſignes & wondris for to be made by þe handiſ of hem/
forſoþe þe multitude of þe cytee iſ departide/ & ſoþely ſumme
weren wiþ iewis · ſumme ſoþely wiþ þe apoſtiliſ/ forſoþe
whanne aſaute of heþen men & iewes was made wiþ here
prynces for to punyſche wiþ diſpiſynge (or falſe blamyng) ·
& to ſtoon hem/ þei vnderſtondyng ſtedden to gedir to þe
cytees of lycaonye · liſtriſ & derben · & al þe cuntree in enuy-
roune/ & þei weren prechyng here þe goſpel/ and al þe mul-
titude iſ mouede to gedir in þe techynge of hem/ poul ſoþely
& barnabas dwelten at liſtriſ/ and ſumman at liſtriſ ſeek in
þe ſeet · ſatte crokide fro hiſ moderiſ wombe/ þe whiche neuer
had gon/ þiſ herde poul ſpekynge þe whiche biholdynge hym ·
& ſeinge for he had ſeiþ þat he ſchulde be made ſaaf/ ſeyde wiþ
greet voyce/ riſe þou riſt on þi ſeet/ and he lepte & walkide/
forſoþe þe cumpanyes whanne þei hadden ſeen þat þat poul
dide/ reriden here voyce in lycaon tunge ſeyinge/ goddiſ made
like to men/ camen doune to uſ/ and þei clepiden barnabas
Jouem · poul ſoþely mercurie/ for he was leder of þe worde/
and þe priſt Iubiter þat was bifore þe cytee · bryngynge to
bolis

ye aplis

holis & crounes bifore þe zatis wiþ pupilis: wolde make sacrifice/
 þe whiche þing whanne þe apostolis barnabas & poul herden ·
 here cootis cutte to gedit: þei skippiden oute into þe cumpa-
 nyes · crynge & seyinge/ men what done zee þis þing? and we
 be deadely men lijk to zou · schewinge to zou to be conuertede
 fro þes veyne þingis · to quicke god þat made heuene & erþe &
 þe see: & alle þingis þat ben in hem/ þe whiche in generacons
 passide: leste alle folkis for to entre into here owne weyes/
 and soþely not wiþ outen witnessyng · he wel doinge leste
 hym self · fro heuenes zpyunge reynes & tymes berynge fructe:
 fulfillyng wiþ mete & gladenesse zoure hertis/ and hem sey-
 inge þes þingis: vnnep̄ swagiden þe cumpānyes · þat þei of-
 freden to hem/ forsoþe summe iewis camen ouer fro antioche ·
 & yconye · & þe cumpānyes swetely styrede þei stonyng poul
 drowen oute of þe cytee: gessyng hym for to be deade/ soþely
 þe disciplis enuyrounyng hym: he risyng entride into þe
 cytee/ and þe sup̄ng day: he wente forþ wiþ barnabas into
 derben/ and whanne þei hadde euangelizide to þe ilke cytee &
 tauzte manye: þei turnyde azen to listris & yconye & antioche ·
 confermyng þe soulis of disciplis: and monestynge/ þat þei
 schulden dwelle in feiþ & seyinge/ for by manye tribulacōis it
 bihoueh vs for to entre into þe kyngdome of heuenes/ and
 whanne þei hadden ordeynede pristiis to hem by alle cytees ·
 & hadden preyede wiþ fastyngis: þei bitoken hem to þe lorde ·
 into whom þei bileueden/ and þei passyng perfidie: camen
 to pamphile/ and þei spekyng þe worde of þe lorde in pergen:
 camen into ytalie/ and fro þens þei wenten bi boot to anti-
 oche fro when þei weren taken to þe grace of god: into þe
 werke þat þei fulfilden/ soþely whanne þei camen & gederiden
 þe chirche: þei tolden how many þingis god dide wiþ hem:
 for he had openyde to heþen men þe dore of feiþ/ forsoþe þei
 dwelliden a tyme not litil: wiþ þe disciplis//

And

dedis

C^m 15^m



Ad summe comynge doune fro Judee · tauzte bre-
 heren · for but zee ben circumcidide aftir þe lawe
 of moyses · zee mowne not be made saaf / þerfore
 sedicioune (or discencion) made · not lesse to poul
 & barnabas azenes hem · þei ordeyneden þat poul & barnabas
 & summe oþer of hem schulden go by to þe apostlis & pristis in
 ierlm on þis questioñ / þerfore þei ledde forþ of þe chirche · pass-
 iden by senyce & Samarie · tellynge þe luynges of heþen men ·
 and þei maden greet ioye to alle breþeren / toþely whanne þei
 camen to ierlm · þei weren recepuede of þe chirche & of þe apos-
 tlis & eldre men · tellynge how many þingis god dide wip
 hem / forsoþe sum of þe heresie of pharisees þat bileueden · ri-
 sen seyinge / for it bihoueh þem for to be circumcidide · and for
 to comaunde · for to kepe þe lawe of moyses / and þe apostlis
 & eldre men camen to gedit · for to seen of þis worde / forsoþe
 whanne greet seekynge to gedit was made · petre risynge
 seyde to hem / men breþeren zee witen for of olde dayes in
 zou · god chees by my moup heþen men for to here þe worde
 of þe gospel & for to bileue / and god þat knewe hertis bare
 witnesynge · zuyng to hem þe holy gost as & to us / and no
 þing dyuerside bitwixe us & hem · by seip clensynge þe hertis
 of hem / now þerfore what tempten zee god · for to putte a yok
 on þe nolle (or necke) of disciplis · þe whiche neþer we neþer
 oure faderis myzten bere · but by þe grace of oure lorde Ihu
 crist · we bileuen for to be sauede · as & þei / forsoþe al þe mul-
 titude hilde pees · and herde barnabas & poul tellynge how
 many signes & wondris god dide by hem in heþen men / and
 aftir þat þei hilden pees · James answeride seyinge / men bre-
 heren here zee me / Symount tolde how firste god visitide for
 to take of heþen men a puple to his name · & to hym þe wordis
 of prophetis acorden · as it is writen / aftir þis I schal turne
 azen · & bilde þe tabernacle of dayud þat fel doune · & I schal
 bilde azen þe caste doune þingis of it · & I schal reyle it þat
 oþer

ye aplis

oper of men azen seeke þe lorde/ & alle folkis on whiche my name is clepide · þe lorde doinge his þing seiþ/ fro þe worlde/ to þe lorde his werke is knowen/ for whiche I deme hem of heþen men ben conuertide to god for to be not vnquytide (or diseefide): but for to write to hem · þat þei abstene hem fro defoulþingis of symulacris · fornycacon & straungelide þingis & blood/ moyses soþely of olde tymes haþ in alle cytees hem þat prechen hym in synagogis/ wheþer by eche saboth he is red/ þanne it pleside to þe apostlis & eldre men & al þe chirche · for to chese men of hem & sende to antioche wiþ poul & barnabas/ Judas þat was nampde barnabas · & silam þe firste in breþeren/ writynge by hondis of hem/ Apostlis & eldre breþeren to hem þat ben at antioche · & citie · & cilicie · breþeren of heþen men/ gretynge (or helpe)/ for we herden þat summe of vs goinge oute turbliden zou wiþ wordis · turnynge vpsodoune zoure soulis · to whiche men we comaundiden not · it pleside to vs gederide into one · for to chese men & sende to zou · wiþ our most derworþe barnabas & poul · men þat bitoken (or gauen) here soulis (or lyues): for þe name of oure lorde Ihu cñ · herfore we senten Judas & Silas þe whiche & þei schulen telle þe same þingis to zou by wordis/ forsoþe it is seen to þe holy gost & vs · for to putte to zou no þing more of charge · þan þes nedeful þingis · þat zee abstene zou fro þe offride þingis of Symulacris · & blood stranglide · & fornycacon · fro whiche zee kepyng zou · schulen do wel/ fare zee wel/ herfore þei dismyttide camen doune to antioche/ and þe multitude gederide · þei bitoken þe epistel/ þe whiche whanne þei hadden redde · þei ioþzeden on þe comforte/ forsoþe Judas & Silas · & þei whanne þei weren prophetis wiþ ful myche worde comfortiden breþeren & confermeden (hem)/ Soþely summe litil tyme made here · þei weren dismyttide (or leste wiþ pees) of breþeren · to hem þat hadden sente hem/ forsoþe it is seen to Sylas · for to dwelle here/ Judas soþely wente alone to Irlm/ forsoþe poul & Barnabas dwelliden at antioche techynge & euangelizynge þe worde

dedis

of þe lorde: wiþ manye oþer/ forsoþe astir summe dayes/ þe poul seyde to barnabas/ we turnynge azen bisite we oure breþeren by alle cytees in whiche we haue prechede þe worde of þe lorde: how þei haue hem/ barnabas forsoþe wolde take wiþ hym & Joon: þat was namyde marchus/ þe poul toþely preyede hym: þat he þat departide fro hem fro pamphylie: & wente not wiþ hem into werke: schulde not be recepuede/ toþely disconcois made: so þat þei departiden atwynne/ and barnabas toþely marke taken to: by lotte came to cipre/ forsoþe poul shallas chosen wente forþ: taken to þe grace of god fro breþeren/ forsoþe he wente by cirie & cilicie consermyng þe chirche: commaundyng for to kepe þe preceptis of apostlis & eldre men/ toþely he came into derben & listram//

C 16^m



And lo sum disciple was here: by name tymothe: þe sone of a womman widowe seipful (or csten): þe sadir heþen/ þe breþeren þat weren in lystris & pronye: zildiden gode witnesþynge to hym/ þe poul wolde hym for to go forþ wiþ hym self: & he takynge to circumcidide hym for iewes þat weren in þe ilke places/ toþely alle wisten for his sadir was heþen/ forsoþe whanne þei passiden by cytees: þei bitoken hem for to kepe þe techyngis þat weren demyde of apostlis & eldre men þat weren at irlm/ and toþely þe chiches weren consermyde in seip: & aboundiden in nombre eche dave/ forsoþe þei passynge frigie: & þe cuntre of galathie: weren forbeden of þe holy gost: for to speke þe worde of god in asia/ toþely whanne þei camen into mysie: þei temptiden for to go into bethenya: & the spirit of Jhu suffride hem not/ toþely whanne þei hadden passide by mysie: þei came doune to troade: & a visioun by nyzt was schetwode to þe poul/ summan of macedonpe was stondynge & prepyng hym & sepyng/ þe poul goynge into macedonpe: helpe vs/ toþely as he sise þe visioun: anone þei souzten for to go forþ into macedonpe: made certeyn: þat god had clepide vs for to euangelize to hem/ toþely we

ye aplis

we goinge by boot (or saylynge) wih streypte course camen to samatrachia · in þe day suyngē to neapolis · & fro þens to philippis · þat is þe firste parte of macedonye: þe cytee colonye/ soþely we weren in þis cytee summe dayes: spekyngē to gedir/ soþely in þe day of sabothis · we wenten oute wih outen þe zate bisidis þe flood · where preyer was seen for to be: and we sittynge spaken to wymmēn þat camen to gedir/ and summe womman lidda by name purpurrelle of þe cytee of tiatirence · worscheppynge god herde: whos herte þe lorde ordeynede for to ȝue tente to þes þingis · þat weren seyde of poul/ forsoþe whanne sche was baptiside & hire hous: sche preyede seyinge/ ȝif zee haue demyde me for to be feiþful to þe lorde: entre zee into myn hous & dwelle/ and sche constreynede vs/ forsoþe it is done vs goinge to preyer: sum wenche hauynge a spirit of dyuynacon · for to mete vs/ þe whiche ȝaue greet wynnynge to hire lordis in dyuynynge · (þat is telleinge hid þing by þe deuplis crafte)/ þis suyngē poul & vs: crieden seyinge/ þes men ben seruauntis of hize god: þat tellen to ȝou þe weye of helpe/ forsoþe þis þing sche dide: in many dayes/ soþely poul sorowynge & conuertide: seyde to þe spirit/ I comaunde to þee in þe name of Ihu crist for to go oute of hire/ and he wente oute in þe same houre/ soþely þe lordis of hire seyinge for þe hope of here wynnynge wente awey: cacchyngē poul & Syllas · þei ledden hem into þe chepyng (or doom place) to þe prynces/ & þei offryngē hem to þe magistratis: seyden/ þes men distourblen oure cytee · whanne þei ben ietwis · & schewen a custom þe whiche it is not leueful to vs for to receyue neþer do: siþen we ben romayns/ and þe puple ran azenes hem & magistratis · & þe cootis of hem kitte: þei comaundiden hem for to be beten wih ȝerdis/ and whanne þei hadden ȝouen to hem manye woundis · þei senten hem into prisoune · comaundyngē to þe keper · þat he diligently schulde kepe hym/ þe whiche whanne he had taken suche precepte: sente hem into þe inner prisoune · & streynede þe feet of hem in a tree/ soþely at mydnyȝt: poul & Syllas

Dedis

& sylas worschippynge herieden god: and hei hat weren in ke-
 pyng herden hem/ sohely todeynly a greet erpe mouynge is
 made: so hat he foundementis of he prisoune weren mouede/
 and anone alle he dores ben openyde: and he bondis of alle
 ben vnbonden/ sohely he keper of he prisoune made waken.
 & seinge he zatis of he prisoune openyde: he swerde drawen
 oute. wolde flee hym self. wenynghe he bounden men for to be
 fled/ forsohe poul criede wiþ greet voyce: seyinge/ do hou no
 þing of euyl to þi self: forsohe alle we ben here/ and lizte aride
 he entride in: and tremblyng he fel doune to poul & sylas at he
 feet/ and he bryngynge hem wiþ oute forþ: seih/ lordis what
 bihoueh me for to do: þat I be made saaf/ and hei seyden bi-
 leue hou into he lorde ihū: and hou schalt be saaf & þin hous/
 and hei spaken to hym he worde of he lorde: wiþ alle þat
 weren in his hous/ and hetakynge hem in he ilke houre of þe nyzt
 waschide here woundis/ and he is baptyside & al his hous an-
 one/ and whanne he had ledde hem into his hous: he sette to
 hem a borde/ and he gladide wiþ alle his hous: bileuynghe to
 god/ and whanne day was made: he magistratis senten lic-
 tours (þat ben mynysters of punyschynghe) seyinge dismytte
 zee (or delyuere) þo men/ forsohe he keper of prisoune tolde þes
 wordis to poul. for he magistratis haue sente þat zee ben de-
 lyueryde/ nowe herfore zee goinge oute. go in pees/ forsohe
 poul seyde to hym/ hei senten into prisoune vs beten oppnly
 vndampnyde men romayns: and now pryuely hei casten vs
 oute not so/ but come hei: and hem self caste vs oute/ Specially
 he mynystres of peyne tolden þes wordis to he magistrates/
 and hei dredden: herde þat hei weren romayns/ and hei
 comen bisecheden hem & hei leedynghe forþ preyeden þat hei
 schulden go oute of he cytee/ sohely hei goinge oute of he pri-
 soune: entreden in to libie/ and he breheren seen: hei confor-
 tiden hem. & wenten forþ//

Sohely

Sohely whanne hei hadden passide by amphiboly m & appolonye: hei camen to tessalonyk. whare was a synagoge of iewes/ sohely aftir custum poul entride into hem: & pre sabotis he declaride to hem of scriptures openynge & schewynge. for it bihoste crist for to suffre: & rise azen fro deade (men): and for his is Jhe crist whom I telle (or schewe) to zou/ & summe of hem bileueden & ben ioynede to poul & silas. & of heben men a greet multitude & noble wymmen not fewe/ sohely Jewes haupnge enuye. & takynge of he comounte summe euyl men. & a cumpanye made: hei moueden he cytee/ & hei stondynge nyze to iasons hous: souz- ten hem for to brynge forþ into he puple/ and whanne hei founden hem not: hei drowen Jason & summe breheren to he prynces of he cytee crynge for þes it ben þat mouen he worlde: and hidir hei camen. whom iason receyuyde/ and alle þes done azenes þe maundementis of cesar seyinge: anoter ihu for to be kyng/ forsoþe hei moueden he puple & prynces of he cytee: herynge þes þingis/ and satisfaccoñ taken of Jason & of oþer: hei leften hem/ forsoþe anone by nyzt. breheren dismyttiden poul & sylas into beroan/ þe whiche whanne hei camen: entriden into he synagoge of iewes/ sohely þes weren he nobler of hem þat ben of tessalonyk/ whiche receyueden he worde wiþ al desire: eche day seekynge scriptures. zif þes þingis so hadden hem/ and sohely many of hem bileueden. & of honest heben wymmen & men not fewe/ forsoþe whanne iewes in tessalonyk hadden knowen. for & at beroan. þe worde of god is prechide of poul: hei camen & hidir mouynge. & discourblynge he multitude/ and anone breheren dismyttiden poul þan þat he schulde go vnto he see/ forsoþe silas & tymothe dwelten þere/ forsoþe hei þat ledden forþ poul: ledden hym into athenys/ and maundement taken of hym to Silas & tymothe þat ful hyzingly hei schulden come to hym: hei wenten forþ/ forsoþe whan poul abode hem at athenys: his spirit mouede in hym seinge
þe

Dedís

he cytee zouen to ydolatrie/ herfore he disputide in he syna-
 gogue wih ieiwes & men worschippynge in he chepyng (or doom
 place): by alle dayes to hem þat herden/ forsoþe summe epi-
 cureis & stoylees & philosophers disputiden (or tretiden) wih
 hym: & summe seyden what wole þis sower of wordis seye:
 soþely oþer seyden/ he is seen for to be a teller of newe deuplis:
 for he tolde to hem Ihu & azen risynge/ and þei ledde hym
 taken to arypage (þat is comyn stole): seyinge mowe we wite
 what is þis newe doctryne þat is seyde of þee: soþely þou brin-
 gis in summe newe þingis to oure eris/ herfore we wolen wite
 what þes newe þingis wolen be: soþely alle men of athenys &
 comelyngis & herboride men: zauen tente to none oþer þing:
 no but for to seye or for to here any þing of newe: soþely poul
 stondynge in he mydil of ariopage (or comyn stole): seih/ men
 of athenes/ by alle þingis I se þou as þeyne worschippers/ soþe-
 ly I passynge & feinge zoure symulacris: sonde & an auter in
 whiche it was writen to vnknowen god/ herfore whiche þing
 zee vnknotwynge worschipen: þis þing I schewe to þou/ god
 þat made þe worlde & alle þingis þat ben in it: þis whanne he
 is lorde of heuene & erþe dwellih not in templis made by han-
 dis: neþer is worschipide by mannes handis haupnge nede of
 any þing: whanne he zyueþ lijf to alle men: & inbreþinge &
 alle þingis/ and made of one alle þe kynde of men: for to en-
 habite on al þe face of erþe: determynynge tymes ordeyn-
 yde: & termes of habitacoñ (or dwellynge) of hem: for to seek
 god: zif parauenture þei seelen hym oþer synnden: þou: he
 be not fer fro eche of þou/ soþely in hym we lyuen & ben mou-
 ede & ben: as & summe of zoure poetis seyden/ soþely we ben
 & þe kynde of hym/ herfore siþ we ben þe kynde of god: we
 schulen not deme (or gesse) godly þing for to be of golde & sil-
 uer or stoon: to graupnge of craste & þouzte of man/ and soþe-
 ly god dispisynge þe times of þis vnkunynge: nowwe schewih
 to men: þat alle euery where do penaunce for þat he ordeynede
 a day: in whiche he is to demynge þe worlde in equyte: in a
 man

ye aplis

man in whiche he ordeynede seiþ ʒpuyng to alle: reysynge hym fro deade men/ soþely whanne þei hadden herde þe azen reysynge of deade men: soþely summe scorneden: summe forsoþe seyden/ we schulen heere þee este of his þing/ so poul wente oute of þe mydel of hem/ forsoþe summe cleuyng to hym bileueden/ in þe whiche & dionysē ariopagite (or greet man of comoune stole) & a womman by name damaris: and oþer wiþ hem//



ʃtit þes þingis he gone oute of athenys: came to: corrynthe/ and syndynge a man iewe: by name aquila: of ponte by kynde: þat late came fro ytalie: & priscille his wife: for þat claudius comaundide alle iewes for to be partide fro rome: came to hem/ and for he was of þe same crafter: he dwellide at hem & wrouzte/ soþely þei weren of senefectorie crafter (þat is to make hilyngis to traueylunge men) and he disputide in þe synagoge by eche saboth puttynge bitwixe þe name of þe lorde ʃhū/ and he softely counseylide to iewes & grekis/ soþely whanne silas & timothe camen fro macedonye: poul ʒaue bisynesse to þe worde witnessynge to þe iewes ʃhū for to be crist/ forsoþe hem azen seyng & blasfemyng: he chakynge of his clothes seyde to hem/ ʒoure blood on ʒoure heed: ʃI clene fro hens forþ schal go to heþen men/ and he passynge þens: entride into þe hous of sum iuste man by name tyte: worschypynge god/ whos hous was ioynede to þe synagoge/ crispe soþely pryncē of þe synagoge: bileuyde to þe lorde wiþ al his hous/ and manye of þe corryntheis helyng: bileueden & weren cristenyde/ forsoþe þe lorde seyde by nyȝt to poul a visioun/ nyl þou drede: but speke & be not stille: for whiche þing ʃI am wiþ þee/ and no man schal be putte to þee þat he noye þee: for myche puple is to me in þis cytee/ forsoþe he satte þere a ʒeer & sixe monethes techynge at hem þe worde of þe lorde/ forsoþe gallion proconsul of acaye: þe iewes risen by wiþ one intwit (or wille) into poul: & ledde hym to doom seyng/ for azenes þe lawe he counselyþ men: for to worschip

C^m 18^m

dedis

worship god/ sohely poul bygynnyng for to open þe moup/
gallion seyde to ietwis/ zif here were any wickide þing or werste
trespas zee men ietwes/ rizzly I schulde susteyne zou/ forsoþe
zit questiouns ben of þe worde & names of zoure lawe/ zee self
se/ I wole not be domesman of þes wordis/ and he droue hem
fro þe domesplace/ forsoþe alle takynge sostones prynce of þe
synagoge/ smyten hym bifore þe doom place/ and no þing of
þes was to charge to gallion/ poul forsoþe whan zit he had sus-
teynede many dayes/ seyinge farewel to breþeren/ by boot
came to cirie/ & wif hym prissille & aquyla/ þe whiche hadden
clepide to hem þe heed in cencris toune/ sohely þei hadde a
vowe/ and he came to ephesie/ & here he leste hem/ sohely he
goinge into þe synagoge/ disputide wif ietwis/ sohely hem
preyinge þat he schulde dwelle more tyme/ he consentyde not/
but he makynge farewel & seyinge/ it bihoueh me for to make
þe solemne day comynge to at irlm/ and este I schal turne
azen to zou god willynge/ he wente forþ fro ephesie/ and he
comynge doune to cesarie/ slepyede vp & grette þe chirche/ and
came doune to antioche/ and here sumwhat of tyme made/ he
wente forþ walkynge by ordre þourgh þe cuntree of galathie &
frigie confermyng alle disciplis/ sohely summe iewe appollo by
name/ a man of alisaundre of kynde/ a man eloquent came to
ephesie/ myzty in scriptures/ þis man was tauzte þe weye of
þe lorde/ & feruent in spirit spaci/ and tauzte diligently þo þin-
gis þat weren of Ihu/ knowynge onely þe baptysm of Joon/
sohely þis man bigan for to do tristly in þe synagoge/ whom
whan prissille & aquyla herden/ þei token hym to/ & more dili-
gently expoundeden to hym þe weye of þe lorde/ forsoþe whanne
he wolde go to acaye/ breþeren monestryde (or counseylide)/
writen to þe disciplis/ þat þei schulden receyue hym/ whiche
whanne he came/ zaue myche to hem þat bileueden/ forsoþe
he gretely ouercame ietwes/ schewynge oppnly by scriptures/
Ihu for to be crist//

Forsoþe

ye aplis



Esloke it is done whanne appollo was at corrynthe · C^m 19^m
 hat poul he heyzer parties gone · came to ephesie ·
 & sonde summe of disciplis · and he seyde to hem/
 zif zee haue receyuede þe holy gost bileuynges and
 þei seyden to hym/ but neþer we haue herde · zif þe holy gost
 is/ soþely he seiþ/ þerfore in what þing ben zee baptiside?
 whiche seyden/ in bapty m of Ion/ forsoþe poul seyde/ Ion
 baptizide in bapty m of penaunce · þe puple · seyinge þat þei
 schulden bileue into hym þat was to comynge astir hym · þat
 is into Ihu/ þes þingis herde · þei ben baptiside in þe name of
 oure lorde Ihu/ and whanne poul had putte to hem þe handis ·
 þe holy gost came on hem · & þei spaken wiþ langagis & pro-
 phecieden/ forsoþe alle weren almost twelue men/ soþely he
 gon into þe synagoge · wiþ trist spac · by þre monethes dispu-
 tyng & softely mouyng of þe kyngdom of god/ Soþely whan-
 ne summe weren enduride (or made harde) & bileueden not ·
 cursyng þe weye of þe lorde bifore þe multitude · he goinge a-
 wey fro hem departide þe disciplis · eche day disputyng in scole
 of sumtpraunt (or strongeman)/ þis is done by two zeetis · so
 þat alle þat dwelliden in asie herden þe worde of þe lorde ·
 Jewes & heþen men/ and vertues whiche euer god dide by þe
 honde of poul · so þat on sijk men þe sudaries (or swetyng clo-
 þes or nyzt cloþes or girdels) weren borne fro his bodie · and
 seekenessis departiden fro hem · and whiche spiritis wente
 oute/ forsoþe & summe of Jewes exorcistis (or coniurers) co-
 mynge aboute · temptiden for to inclepe þe name of þe lorde
 Ihu cñ · on hem þat hadden euyl spiritis · seyinge/ I coniure
 zou by Ihu whom poul prechih/ soþely þere weren summe
 seuene sones of a iewe sceue prynce of pristis · þat dide þis
 þing/ soþely þe euyl spirit answeryng · seyde to hem/ I haue
 knowen Ihu · & I woot poul · forsoþe who ben zee · and þe
 man in whom was þe wirfte deuyl lepyng into hem & hau-
 yng lordeschip of boþe was stronge azenes hem · so þat nakide

dedis

& woundide hei fledden away fro þat hous/ forsoþe þis þing
 was made knowen to alle þe iewis & heþen men þat dwelliden
 at ephesie/ and drede fel doune on hem alle and þei magny-
 fieden þe name of þe lorde Jhū and many men bileuynges: ca-
 men knowelechynges & tellynge here dedis/ Sopely many of
 hem þat sueden curious þingis: brouzten to gedir bokis &
 brente bifore alle men/ & þe prices of hem acountide: þei
 founden money of fifty þousandepens/ so strongely þe worde of
 god weride: & was confermyde/ sopely þes þingis fulfildes:
 poul purposide in spirit macedonye passide & acaye: for to go
 to irlm: seyinge for aftir þat I schal be þere: it bihoueh me
 for to se rome/ forsoþe he sendyng into macedonye two of men
 mynnstrynges to hym tymothe & eraste: he dwelte at a tyme in
 asia/ þerfore þer was made in þat day a trublynges not lesse:
 of þe weye of þe lorde/ forsoþe demetrie by name argentarie:
 makyng silueren housis to dyan þat is false goddesse: zaue to
 crafty men not litil wynnynge/ whom he cleynges to gedir: &
 hem þat weren suche maner werkemen: seyde/ men zee witen
 for of þis craft is to zou wynnynge & zee seen & herynge for
 not onely of ephesye: but almost of al asie: þis poul counseyl-
 ynges turneh away myche cumpanye: seyinge/ for þei ben not
 goddis: þat ben made by handis/ forsoþe not only þis parte
 schal be in perel to vs for to come into reproue: but þe temple
 of greet dian schal be acountide into nouzte: but & þe ma-
 jeste of hire schal be distrupede: whom al asie worschipih & þe
 worlde/ þes þingis herde: þei ben fulfildes wih ire: & crieden
 seyinge/ greet dian of ephesians/ & þe cytee is fulfildes wih con-
 fusion/ and þei made asaute wih one intwit (or wille) into þe
 teatre (or comoune biholdynges place): gayus raupschide & ari-
 starke men of macedonye: felowis of poul/ Sopely poul wil-
 lynge for to entre into þe puple: þe disciplis suffreden not/ for-
 soþe summe & of þe prynces of asye þat weren his frendis: sent-
 en to hym: preyinge þat he schulde not 3yue hym self in to þe
 teatre/ Sopely oþer men crieden oþer þing/ Sopely þe chirche
 was

ye aplis

was confuside · & many wisten not of what cause þei camen to gedre/ soþely of þe cumpange þei wiþdrowen summan alisaundre · iewes puttynge hym (or ser schouynge)/ forsoþe alexandre scilence axide wiþ hande · wolde zilde resoune to þe puple/ whom as þei knewen for to be a iewe · one voyce of alle men was made crynge as bi two houres/ greet dian of ephesians/ and whanne þe scribe had ceeside þe cumpanges · he seyde/ men of ephesy · who soþely is of men þat knowen not þe cytee of ephesians · for to be worschipper of greet dyan · & of þe sone Iubiter · þerfore whanne it may not be azenseyde to þes þingis · it bihouen þou for to be ceeside (or swagide) · & for to do no þing solily/ soþely zee haue brouzte þes men · neþer sacrilegers neþer blasfemyng zoure goddesse/ þat zif demetrie & þe werkemen þat ben wiþ him · haue cause azenes any man · comynge togedir of domes be done · & proconsules (or iustices) ben · accuse þei hem togedir/ zif zee seeken ouzte of any oþer þing · it may be asoylde in þe laweful chirche/ for whi & we ben in perel for to be reþrouede for þis dayes sedicoñ (or discencion) · siþ no man is gilty of whom we may zilde resoune of his rennyng togedir/ and whanne he had seyde þis þing · he leste (or delyueride) þe chirche//



Drsoþe astir þat noyce ceeside þe disciplis clepide · poull monestynge hem · seyde farewel/ and he wente forþ · for to go into macedonye/ Soþely whanne he had walkide by þe parties · & had monestide hem by myche worde · he came to grece/ where whan he hadde ben þre monethes · aspies in puyll of þe iewes weren made to hym schippynge into cirie/ and he had counseyl of turnynge azen into macedonye/ soþely solipater pirry beroence folowide hym/ of tessalonycensis forsoþe aristarke · & secounde · & gayus · derbens · tymothe/ soþely asiam · titicus · & trophimus · þes whanne þei wenten bifore · susteyneden (or abiden) vs at troade/ forsoþe we schippiden astir dayes of þerfe looues fro philippis · & camen

C^m 20^m

dedis

& camen to hem at troade in syue dayes · where we dwelten
 seuene dayes/ sohely one day of saboth whan we camen for to
 breke brede: poul disputynge wiþ hem · he to goinge in þe mo-
 rowe/ and he drowe alonge þe worde til into þe mydnyzt/
 sohely plenteuous laumpis weren in þe soupyng place: where
 we weren gederide togedir/ sohely sum zonge man eutichus
 by name · sittynge on þe wyndowe · whan he was dreynte wiþ
 a greuouse sleep · poul disputynge longe · he ledde by sleep · fel
 doune fro þe þridde stage (or soupyng place): & he taken vp ·
 is offride deade/ to whom whanne poul came doune he laye on
 hym · & biclippyng seide/ nyl zee he turblide: forsoþe þe soule
 of hym is in hym/ and he goinge vp · & brekyng breed & tast-
 ynge: spac I nowz til into þe lizte · & so he wente forþ/ sohely
 þei brouzten to þe childe lyuyng: & þei ben comfortide not
 leest/ sohely we steyzinge vp into a schippe: schippide into
 ason · fro þens we ben into recepyng poul/ sohely so he had
 disposide · to makynge iourneye by lande/ forsoþe whanne he
 founde vs in ason: hym taken to · we camen to mytelene/
 and fro þens schippyng in þe day supinge · we camen azenes
 chywm · & anoper day we hauenyden at samun: and in þe
 day supinge we camen to mylite/ sohely poul purposide for
 to schippe ouer to ephes: lestte any dwellyng were made to
 hym in asie/ sohely he hizede zif it were possible to hym þat he
 schulde make þe day of pentecost at irlm/ fro mylite sohely he
 sendynge to ephes: clepide þe more þourgh birþe of þe chitche/
 whiche whanne þei camen to hym & weren togedir: he seide to
 hem/ zee witen fro þe firste day in whiche I came into asie ·
 how wiþ zou by eche tyme I was seruyng to þe lorde wiþ al
 mekenesse & myldenesse & temptacoñs þat fallen to me of as-
 piingis of iewes how I wiþdrowe not þe profitable þingis to
 zou · þat I tolde not to zou & tauzte zou oppnly · & by housis
 witnesynge to iewes & heþen men into god/ penaunce & seip
 into oure lorde Ihu cñ/ And so I þe bounden in spirit go into
 Irlm · what þingis in it ben to comynge to me vnkownynge ·

ye aplis

no but þat þe holy gost by alle cytees witnesseth to me seyinge ·
 for bondis & tribulaciōs · dwellen to me at irlm/ but I schame
 (or drede) no þing of þes · neþer I make my soule (þat is lijf) ·
 preciouset þanne myself · þe while I ende (or fulfille) my course ·
 & þe mynysterie of þe worde · whiche I receyuede of þe lorde Ihu
 for to witnesse þe gospel of þe grace of God/ and nowe lo I
 woot · for zee schulen no more se my face · alle zee by whom I
 passide · prechyng þe kyngdom of god/ wherfore I witnesse to
 zou þis day · for I am clene of þe blood (or synne) of alle men/
 forsoþe I slepe not aweye · þat I tauze (or tolde) not to zou
 al þe counseyl of god/ takih tente to zou & to al þe floe in þe
 whiche þe holy gost sette bischopis for to rewele þe chirche of
 god · whiche he purchaside wih his blood/ I woot for astir my
 departyng raupfchyng wolfes schulen entre into zou · not
 sparyng þe floe/ and of zou self men spekyng weywarde þin-
 gis schulen rise · þat þei leede disciplis astir hem/ for whiche
 þing make zee holdyng in mynde · þat by þre zeer nyzt & day
 I ceefide not wih teeris monestynge eche of zou/ and nowe I
 bitake zou to god · & to þe worde of his grace · þat is myzty for
 to edifie & zpye heretage in alle made holy/ forsoþe of no man
 I coueptide siluer or golde or cloþe · as zee zou self witen/ but
 to þo þingis þat weren nede to me & to þes þat ben wih me · þes
 handis mynystredon/ alle þes þingis I schewide · to zou for so
 it bihoueh me traueplyng for to receyue þe sijt · & for to haue
 mynde of þe lorde Ihu/ for he seyde/ it is more bleffide for to
 zpye more · þan for to receyue/ and whanne he had seyde þes
 þingis · his knees putte · he preyede wih alle hem · Sopely
 greet wepyng of alle men was made/ and þei fallyng on þe
 necke of poul · kissiden hym sorowynge moste in þe worde þat
 he seyde · for þei weren no more to seinge his face/ and þei led-
 den hym to þe schippe//



Whely whan it was done þat we schulden schippe
drawen awey fro hem streypte course we camen to
choum · & þe day supinge to rodum & fro þens to
patiram · fro þens into yram/ and whan we foun-
den a schippe passynge ouer into senyce · we steyzinge by schip-
piden (or sayliden)/ soþely whanne we apperiden to cypre · we
leeuyng it at þe liste halfe schippiden into sirie · & camen to
tyre/ soþely þere þe schippe was to puttyng oute þe charge/
soþely disciplis founden · we dwelten þere seuene dayes/ þe
whiche seyden by spirit to poul · þat he schulde not steyze to
Irlm/ and þe dayes fulfilde · we goinge forþ wenten · alle men
wif wifes & fre children leedyng forþ vs til wifouten þe cytee ·
& þe knees putte to in þe see brynke · we preyeden/ and whanne
we hadden made farewell togedir · we wenten by in þe schippe/
soþely þei turnyde azen into þere owne þingis/ soþely þe schip-
pe saylunge fulfilde fro tyre · we discendiden to ptholomayda/
and þe breþeren grette well · we dwelten one day at hem/ for-
soþe anoper day we gon forþ camen to cesarie/ and entrynge
into þe hous of philip euuangelist þat was one of þe seuene ·
dwelten at him/ soþely to þis weren foure douztris virgynes
prophecyinge/ and whanne we dwelten þere by summe dayes ·
summan prophete agabus by name came ouer fro Judee/ þis
whanne he came to vs · took þe girdel of poul · & byndynge to-
geder to hym þe feet & handis · seyde/ þe holy gost seyde þes
þingis/ þus iewes schulen bynde in irlm þe man whos is þis
girdel · and þei schulen bitake hym into heþen mennes handis/
whiche þing whanne we herden · we preyeden · & þei þat weren
of þat place · þat he schulde not steyze to irlm/ þanne poul an-
sweryde & seyde/ what done zee wepyng & turmentynge myn
herte · soþely I am reedy not onely for to be bounden · but &
to die in irlm · for þe name of þe lorde Ihu/ and whanne we
myzten not counseyl hym · we weren stille (or residen) seyng/
þe wille of þe lorde be done/ soþely aftir þes dayes we made
reedy

ye aplis

reedy: theyzeden to ierlm/ sohely summe of disciplis camen wiþ
 vs fro cesarie: leedyng wiþ hem summan: Jason of cypre: an
 olde disciple: at whom we schulden be herboride/ and whanne
 we camen to Ierlm: breheren receyueden vs wilfully/ sohely
 in þe day supinge: poul entride wiþ vs to James: & alle þe eldre
 men ben gederide/ whom whanne he had grette: he told bi alle
 þingis: what þingis god had done in heþen men: by þe myn-
 ysterie of hym/ & þei whanne þei herden: magnyfieden god: &
 seyden to hym/ þou broþer seest how many þousandis ben in
 ietwes þat haue bileuede to god: & alle ben suers (or louers) of
 þe lawe/ sohely þei herden of þee: for þou techist departynge
 fro moyses: of þe ilke ietwes þat ben by heþen men: seyinge/
 þat þei owen not for to circumcide here sones: neþer owen for
 to entre vp custum/ þerfore what is: sohely it bihoueh a multi-
 tude come to gedir/ sohely þei schulen here þee for to haue
 come ouer/ þerfore do þou þis þing: þat we seyn to þee/ þer ben
 to vs foure men hauynge a vowe on hem/ þes taken to: ha-
 lowe þee wiþ hem: & caste in hem þat þei schaue here hedis: &
 alle men wite þat þe þingis þat þei herden of þee ben false:
 but þou walkist & þi self keypynge þe lawe/ of þes sohely þat bi-
 leueden of heþen men: we writen demynge þat þei abstene
 hem fro þing offride to ydolis: & blood & stranglide þing &
 fornyracoñ/ þanne þe men taken to: poul in þe day supynge
 purposide wiþ hem entride into þe temple: schewynge þe sul-
 fillynge of dayes of purifyinge: til offrynge was offride for eche
 of hem/ sohely whanne seuene dayes weren endide: þe ietwes
 þat weren of asie: whanne þei sizen hym in þe temple: streden
 al þe puple: & leyden handis on hym crynge/ men of isrl helpe
 zee vs/ þis is þe man þat azene þe puple & lawe & þis place:
 techynge euery where alle men/ more ouer & hap ledde in þe-
 þen men into þe temple: & hap defoulide þis holy place/ forsoþe
 þei sizen trophymus of ephesy in þe cytee wiþ hym: whom þei
 gestide for poul had brouzt into þe temple/ and al þe cytee is
 mouede: and arennyng to gedir of puple is made/ and þei
 cacchynge

dedis

cacchynge poul · drowen hym oute of þe temple: and anone
 þe zatis ben closide/ soþely hem seekynge for to flee hym · it is
 tolde to þe tribune of þe cumpanye of knyztis: for al Jrlm̄ is
 confoundide/ þe whiche anone knyztis taken to · & centuri-
 ouns: ran to hem/ whiche whanne þei hadden seen þe tribune
 & knyztis: ceesiden for to smyte poul/ þanne þe tribune co-
 myng to cauhte hym · & comaundide for to be bounden wih
 two cheynes/ and axide who it was: & what he had done/
 soþely oþer crieden oþer þing in þe cumpanye/ And whanne
 he myhte not knowe þe certeyn þing for noyse: he comaundide
 hym for to be led into þe castels/ and whanne poul came to
 grees: it bifel þat he was borne of knyztis · for strenghe of þe
 puple/ forsoþe þe multitude of puple suede hym cryinge · take
 hym aweye/ and whan poul bigan for to be led into þe castels:
 he seiþ to þe tribune/ zif it is leueful to me · for to speek any þing
 to þee/ whiche seyde/ þou greek hast þou knowen/ wher þou
 art not þe egipcian þe whiche bifore þes dayes mouedist a
 noyse · & leddis & oute into deserte foure þousande of men ·
 mansleers/ and poul seyde to hym/ soþely I am a man Jewe
 of tharse of cilicie · a cyteseyn (or burgeys) of a cytee not vn-
 knownen/ forsoþe I preye þee suffre me for to speek to þe puple/
 and whanne he suffride · poul stondynge in þe grees: bekenyde
 wih þe hande to þe puple/ and a greet scilence made: he spac
 to hem in ebreu tunge seyinge//

C^m 22^m



En breheren & faderis: here zee what resoun I zilde
 now to zou/ forsoþe whanne summe herden for in
 ebrue tunge he spac to hem: þei zauen more sci-
 lence/ and he seyde I am a iewe borne of tarse of
 cilicie · norischide forsoþe in þis cytee bifidis þe seet of gama-
 liel · lernyde after þe treuþe of faderis lawe · folower (or louter)
 of þe lawe: as & zee alle ben to day/ þe whiche I pursuede þis
 weye til to þe deþ · byndynge to gedir & drawynge into holdis
 men & wymmen · as þe prynce of pristis zildis witnessynge to
 me

ye aplis

me · & alle þe more in birþe · of whiche I takynge piſſils to
breþeren wente to damaske · þat I ſchulde brynge fro þens
bounden into Irlm · þat þei ſchulden be peynede/ forſoþe it
is done me goinge & neyþinge to damaske in þe midday fo-
deynly fro heuene a copious lihte ſchone aboute me/ and I fall-
ynge into þe erþe · herde a voyce fro heuene ſeyinge to me/
Saul Saul what purſueſt þou me? it is harde to þee for to
like azenes þe pricke/ forſoþe I anſweride/ who art þou lorde?
and he ſeyde to me/ I am Ihu of nazereth whom þou purſueſt/
and þei þat weren wiþ me · ſizen ſohely þe lihte · forſoþe þei
herden not þe voyce of hym þat ſpac wiþ me/ and I ſeyde/
lord what ſchal I do? ſohely þe lorde ſeyde to me/ þou riſynge
go to damask · & here it ſchal be ſeyde to þee of alle þingis
which it bihoueþ þee for to do/ and whanne I ſize not for þe
cleerte of þat liht · I ledde to handis of felowis · came to da-
mask/ forſoþe ſumman ananye vp or aſtir þe lawe hauynge
witneſſynge of alle iewes dwellynge in damask comynge to
me & ſtondynge nyz · ſeyde/ Saul broþer biholde/ & I in þe
ſame houre bihilde into hym/ and he ſeyde/ god of oure ſaderis
ordeynede þee · þat þou ſchuldiſt knowe þe wille of hym &
ſchuldiſt ſe iuſte þing · & here þe voyce of his mouþe · for þou
ſchalt be his witneſſe to alle men · of þo þingis þat þou haſt
ſeen & herde/ and now what dwelleſt þou? riſe vp · & be bap-
tiſide · & waſche aweye þi ſynnes · inclepe þe name of hym/ for-
ſoþe it is done to me turnynge azen into Irlm · & preyinge in
þe temple · me for to be made in rauyſchynge of ſoule · and to
ſe hym ſeyinge/ hiſe þou & go oute faſte of irlm · for þei ſchulen
not receyue þi witneſſynge of me/ and I ſeyde/ lorde þei wi-
ten for I was cloſynge to gedir into priſoune · & betynge by
ſynagogis · hem þat bileueden into þee/ and whanne þe blood
of ſteuene þi witneſſe was ſched · I ſtoode nyz & contentide &
kepte þe clothes of men ſleine hym/ and he ſeyde to me/ go
þou for I ſchal ſende þee ſer to naciounes/ forſoþe þei herden
hym til to þis worde · & þei reſyden here voyce ſeyinge/ take

Dedys

fro þe erþe ſuche a maner man/ forſoþe it is not leueful hym
for to lyue/ ſoþely hem crynge in voyce & caſtyng away here
cloþes & þrowyng duſte into þe eire/ þe tribune comaundide
hym for to be led into þe caſtels · & for to be beten wip ſcour-
gis · & for to be turmentide/ þat he ſchulde wite for what cauſe
þei crieden ſo to hym/ and whanne þei hadden ſtreynyde hym
wip bondis (or roopis) poul ſeyde to a centurion ſtondyng nyȝ
to hym · zif it were leueful to ȝou for to ſcourge a man ro-
mayne & vndampnyde/ whiche þing herde/ þe centurion wente
to þe tribune/ and tolde to hym ſeyinge/ what art þou to do-
inge/ forſoþe þis man is a cyteſeyn romayne/ forſoþe þe tri-
bune comynge to ſeyde to hym/ ſeye þou zif þou art a ro-
mayne/ and he ſeyde · ȝhe/ and þe tribune anſweride/ how
lyztely (or holdely) ſeyſt þou þee a romayne cyteſeyn/ I wip
myche ſoume gate þis cyuylite/ and poul ſeiþ/ I ſoþely & am
borne/ þerfore anone & þei þat weren to turmentynge hym/
departiden away fro hym/ and þe tribune dredde aſtir þat he
wiſte azen for he was a cyteſeyn of rome/ & for he had boun-
den hym/ forſoþe in þe day ſuyng · he willyng for to wite
more diligently of what cauſe he were accuſide of Jewes · vn-
bounde hym · & comaundide priſtis for to come to gedir · & al
þe counſeyl/ and he bryngyng forþ poul/ ordeynyde hym
amonge hem//

C^m 23^m



Daul forſoþe biholdyng into þe counſeyl/ ſeiþ/ men
breþeren · I wip al good conſcience haue lyuede
biſore god/ til into þis day/ ſoþely ananye prynce
of priſtis · comaundide to men ſtondyng nyȝ/ for
to ſmyte his mowþ/ þanne poul ſeyde to hym/ walle made
white/ god ſchal ſmyte þee/ and þou ſittyng demest me by
(or aſtir) þe lawe · & azenes þe lawe comaundiſt me for to be
ſmyten/ and þei þat ſtoden nyȝ/ ſeyden/ curſiſt þou þe hiȝeſt
priſt of God/ ſoþely paul ſeyde/ breþeren I wiſte not for he is
prynce of priſtis/ ſoþely it is writen/ þou ſchalt not curſe to þe
prynce

ye aplis

prynce of hi puple/ forsoþe poul witynge for one partie was
of saduceis & þe toþer of pharisees: he criede in þe counseyl/
men breþeren I am a pharisee & þe sone of pharisees: of þe
hope & azen risynge of deade men I am demede/ and whanne
he hadde seyde þis þing: discencion is made betwene pharisees
& saduceis & þe multitude is departide/ forsoþe saduceis seyn
for to be no rysynge azen of deade men: neþer aungel neþer
spirit/ forsoþe pharisees knowelechen boþe/ soþely a greet crie
is made & summe of pharisees risynge vp: fouzten seyinge/
we fynde no þing of euyl in þis man/ what zif a spirit spak to
hym or an aungel? & whan greet discencion was made: þe tri-
bune dredynge lest þe poul schulde be drawen of hem: comaun-
dide knyztis for to go doune & to rauysche hym of þe mydel of
hem & for to leede hym into castels/ soþely in þe nyzt synge:
þe lorde stondynge nyzt to seiþ/ be þou slidest/ soþely as þou
hast witnesse of me in ierlm: so it bihoueh þee for to witnesse
& at rome/ forsoþe þe day made: summe of þe iewes gederiden
hem & made a vowe seyinge & hem neþer to etynge neþer
drynkynge: til þei slewen poul/ forsoþe þere weren more þan
fourty men: þat maden þis coniuracō (or swerynge togedir)/
þe whiche wenten to þe prynces of pristis & eldre men: and
seyden/ wiþ deuocion we haue voweþ vs to no þing tasyng:
til we sleen poul/ now þerfore make zee knowen to þe tribune
wiþ þe counseyl: þat he leede forþ hym to zou: as zee to know-
ynge more certeynly of hym/ soþely we ben reedy for to slee
hym: bifore þat he come nyzt/ whiche þing whanne þe sone of
poulis suster had herde þe aspies (or tresoun): he came & en-
tride into þe castels & tolde poul/ soþely he clepyng to hym
one of þe centuriouns: seiþ/ leede þis zong man to þe tribune:
for he haþ sum þing for to schewe to hym/ and he forsoþe tak-
yng hym to: & leede to þe tribune & seiþ/ bounden poul prep-
ede me leede to þee þis zonge man & haunþe some þing for to
speke to þee/ soþely þe tribune takynge his hande: wente wiþ
hym bifidis halfe & axide hym what þing is it þat þou hast
for

Dedis

for to schewe to me/ forsoþe he seyde/ it bifalleþ to þe iewes
for to prepe þee þat to morowe day þou brynge forþ poul into
þe counseyl: as þei ben to seekynge sum þing certeyner/ so-
þely bileue þou not to hem/ forsoþe more þan fourty men of
hem: asprien hym: þe whiche haue abowide hem not for to ete
ne drynke: til þei sleen hym/ and now þei ben reedy: abid-
ynge þe bihest: þerfore þe tribune leste þe zonge man comaundynge þat he schulde speke to no man: for he had made þes þingis knowen to hym/ and two centuriouns clepide togedir: he seyde to hem/ make zee reedy two hundride knyztis: þat þei go til cesarie: & horsemen seuenty: & speremen two hundride: fro þe þridde houre of nyzt: & make zee reedy iumentis (or horsis): þat þei puttynge poul vpon: schulden leede hym saaf to felix president/ soþely he dredde lest parauenture Jewes schulden rauysche hym & slee: & he astirwarde schulde suffre chalenge: as he were to takynge money: writynge to hym a pistel conteynyng þes þingis// ¶ Claudius lesias: to þe beste felix president: helpe/ þis man taken of Jewes: & bygynnyng for to be slayne of hem/ I aboue comynge wiþ cumpane delyueride: knowen for he is a romayne/ and I willynge for to wite þe cause: þe whiche þei puttiden azeneshym: ledde hym into þe counseyl of hem/ whom I fonde to be accuside of questiouns of þe lawe of hem: forsoþe haunynge no cryme worþi of bondis/ and whanne it was tolde to me of þe aspries (or trefouns) þat þei maden reedy: I sente hym to þee: denounsynge & to þe accusatours: þat þei seyn at þee/ fare wel/ soþely knyztis vp þing comaundide to hem: takynge to poul: ledde hym by nyzt into antipatridem/ and in þe day synge: þe horsemen leste þat þei schulden go wiþ hym: þei turneden azen to þe castels/ þe whiche whanne þei camen to cesarie: & token þe pistel to þe president: þei setten bifore hym & poul/ forsoþe whanne he had redde & axide of what prouynce he was: & knowynge for he was of cilicie: I schal here þee he seip: whanne þin accusatours schulen come/ and he
comaundide

ye aplis

comaundide hym for to be kepte in þe pretorie (or moot halle)
of heroude//

Forsoþe astir fyue dayes · ananye prynce of prissis C^m 24^m
came doune wih summe eldre men · & tertulle sum
oratur (or sayre speker or avoker) · whiche wenten
to þe precident azenes poul/ and poule sumnyde:
tertulle bigan for to accuse seyinge/ whanne in myche pees we
done by þee · & manye þingis ben amendide by þi prouydence
(or wisdom) · euermore & euery where þou beste felix · we haue
receyuyde wih al doinge of þankyngis/ forsoþe lesse I tarie
þee lenger · I preye þee shortely · here vs for þi mekenesse/ we
haue founden þis man berynge benym or pestilence · & stiryng
sedicoñ (or discencon) · to alle iewis in al þe worlde · & autour of
sedicioune of þe secte of nazarenes · þe whiche also enforside
for to defoule þe temple · whom & taken to: we wolden deme
astir oure lawe/ soþely lissas þe tribune aboue comynge · wih
greet strengþe delyueride hym fro oure handis/ comaundyng
his accusers for to come to þee · of whom þou demynge mayste
knowe of alle þes þingis · of whiche we accusen hym/ forsoþe
& iewes castiden to seyinge þes þingis for to haue hem so/ for-
soþe poul answeride grauntynge to hym þe precident for to
seye/ of many zeeris I knowynge þee for to be domesman to þis
folc: schal do ynowz for me wih good intwitte (or resoune)/
soþely þou mayste knowe · for to me ben not more þan twelue
dayes · siþ I steyzede vp for to worship in Jrlm/ and neþer in
þe temple þei founden me disputynge wih anyman or makynge
concuris (or rennyng to gedir) of þe cumpanye of puple · neþer
in synagogis neþer in cytee · neþer þei mowne proue to þee · of
þe whiche þingis þei now accusen me/ soþely I knoweleche
to þee þis þing · þat by þe secte whiche þei seyn heresie · so I
serue to god þe fadir · bileuyng to alle þingis þat ben writen
in þe lawe & prophetis · haupnge hope into god · þe whiche &
þei hem self abiden þe azen risynge to comynge of iuste men &
wickide/

dedis

wickide/ In his þing & I studie wiþ outen hurtynge: for to haue conscience to god & to men euermore/ forsoþe astir mo zeeris. I came to doinge almes dedis into my folc: & offryngis & vowis in whiche þei founden me purifiede in þe temple: not wiþ cumpange neþer wiþ noyse: & þei cauzten me cryinge & seyinge take aþweye oure enemye: soþely summe Jewes of asie whom it bihoſte for to be nowe present (or reedy) at þee: & accuse zif þei hadden any þing azenes me: or þes hem self seye: zif þei founden in me any þing of wickidnesse: siþ I stood in þe counseyl: no but onely of his one voyce: by whiche I criede stondynge amonge hem: for of þe azen risynge of deade men: I am demede þis day of zou/ Soþely felix differride hem: moſte certeynly þe witynge of þe weye: seyinge/ whanne liſias þe tribune schal come: I schal here zou/ and he comaundide to a centurioun for to kepe hym & for to haue reste: neþer for to forbede any man for to mynyſtre of his owne þingis to hym// ¶ Soþely astir summe dayes felix comynge wiþ drusiſil his wiſe þat was a iewes: clepide poul & herde of hym þe seiþ þat is into cō Ihu/ soþely hym diſputynge of riȝtweſneſſe & chaſtite & of doom to comynge: felix made tremblynge: answeride: þat parteyneþ nowe go: soþely in tyme couenable I schal clepe þee to/ also & hoppynge: þat money schulde be zouen to hym of poul/ for whiche þing & ofte he cleppynge hym to: spaci wiþ hym/ soþely two zeeris fulfildes: felix tooc a ſuccellour: festus of ponte/ forsoþe felix willynge for to gyue grace to Jewes: leste poul bounden//

C^m 25^m



Therefore whanne festus came into þe prouynce astir þe þridde day: he assendide to Irlm fro cesarie/ and þe prynces of prissis & þe firste of Jewes wenten to hym azenes poul: and preyede hym aringe azenes hym þat he schulde comaunde hym for to be ledde to irlm: settynge aspies for to ſlee hym in þe weye/ soþely festus answeride: poul for to be kepte in cesarie: hym soþely to goinge forþ

ye aplis

forþ more ripely (or hastely)/ þerfore he seiþ · þei þat in zou
ben myzty comynge doune to gedir · zif any cryme is in þe man ·
accuse hym/ soþely he dwellynge amonge hem · no more þan
ten or eyzte dayes · came doune to cesarie/ and þe toþer day
he satte for domesman · & comaundide poul for to be ledde to/
whiche whanne he was ledde · Jewes stoden aboute hym þe
whiche camen doune fro Irlm · puttyng azenes manye & gre-
uous causis · whiche þei myzten not proue/ Soþely poul zild-
ynge resoune · for neþer into þe lawe of Jewes · neþer into þe
temple · neþer into cesar I synnede any þing/ forsoþe festus
wyllynge for to gyue grace to þe iewes · answerynge to poul
seyde/ wolte assende to Irlm · & here be demyde of þes þingis
at me/ Soþely poul seyde/ at þe doom place of cesar I stonde
wher it bihoueh me for to be demyde/ I haue not noyzed to
þe Jewes · as þou hast better knowen/ soþely zif I haue noy-
zed or done any þing worþi deþ · I forsake not for to die/
soþely zif no þing of þes is · þat þei accusen me · no man may
zyue me to hem/ cesar I apeel/ þanne festus spekyng wip þe
counseyl · answeride/ cesar þou hast appelide · to cesar þou
schalt go/ and whanne summe dayes weren passide · agrippa
kyng & bernyce camen doune to cesarie · for to greet wel fes-
tus/ and whanne þei dwelten here many dayes · festus sche-
wide to þe kyng of poul seyng · Summan is leste bounden of
felix · of whiche whanne I was at irlm · prynces of prissis &
eldre men of Jewes camen to me · aringe dampnacōn azenes
hym/ of whom I answeride/ it is not custum to romayns for
to dampne any man · bifore þat he þat is accuside · haue his
accusers present · & take place of defendynge · for to watche
aweie crymes (or grete trespassis) · þat ben putte azenes hym/
þerfore whanne þei camen to gedir hidir · wip outhen anye de-
laye in þe day suyng I sittynge for domesman · comaundide
þe man for to be led to/ of whom whanne accusers stoden · þei
seyden no cause of whiche þingis I hadde suspicioñ of euyl/ so-
þely þei hadden azenes hym summe questiouns of þere deþne
worschippynge

dedis

worschippynge (or religioun): and of Ihu deade whom pou
 affermyde for to lyue/ sohely I doutynge of suche maner ques-
 tioun seyde . zif he wolde go to Irlm . & here for to be demyde
 of hes pingis/ pou forsophe appelynge pat he schulde be kepte
 to he knowynge of he emperoure. I comaundide hym for to
 be kepte . til I schal sende hym to cesar/ Sohely agrippa seyde
 to festus/ and I myself wolde here he man/ to morne he seih
 pou schalt here hym/ sohely on he toper day whan agrippa &
 bernyce camen wih myche ambusioun (or pride of staat)/ and
 entride into he auditorie wih tribunes & pryncipal men of he
 cytee. festus biddynge pou is led to/ and festus seyde/ kyng
 agrippa & alle men pat ben wih vs. zee seen his (man) of whiche
 al he multitude of Jewes preyeden me at irlm . aringe & cry-
 inge . hym for to not bihoue lyue more/ forsophe I sonde hym
 for to haue done no ping worpi of deþ/ sohely hym appelynge
 his ping. to he emperoure Ideme for to sende . of whiche man
 I haue not what ping certayne I schal write to he lorde/ for
 whiche ping I brouzt hym to zou . & moſte to pee o kyng agrip-
 pa. pat aringe made I haue what I schal write/ forsophe it is
 seen to me wih ouden resoun for to send a bounden man. &
 not to signyfie he cause of hym//

C^m 26^m



Agrippa sohely seih to pou/ It is suffride to pee for
 to speke for pi self/ hanne pou he hande holden
 forþ. bigan for to zilde resoun/ of alle pingis in
 whiche I am accuside pou kyng agrippa/ I gesse
 me blesside at pee . whanne I am to defendyng me pis day .
 moſte pee wityng alle pingis pat be at ietwes customs & ques-
 tyouns/ for whiche ping I biſeche. here me patiently/ and so-
 hely alle ietwes bifore witynge me fro he bygynnyng . haue
 knowen my lijf fro zouþe . pat fro he bigynnyng was in my
 ſolc in irlm . zif hei wolen here witneſſe . for vp he moſte cer-
 teyn ſette of oure religioun . I lyuede a phariſee/ and nowe
 in he hope of repromyſſion pat is made to oure faderis of god.
 I ſtonde

ye aplis

I stonde sujet in doom · in whiche our twelue lynagis seruyng
nyzt & day · hopen for to bycome/ of whiche hope · pou kyng
I am accuside of Jewes/ what vnbeleueful ping is demyde at
zou · zif god reysih deade men/ and sohely I gesside me azenes
he name of Ihus nazarene · for to owe do many contrarie pingis ·
whiche ping & I dide in Irlm/ and I encloside manye of seyntis
in prisouns power taken of prynces of prissis/ and whanne
pei weren slayne · I gaue he sentence/ and by alle he synago-
gis ofte I punyschyng hem · consireynede for to blasfeme/
and more I waxinge wood azenes hem · pursuede to alien
cytees wih power & suffryng he prynces of prissis · in he myd-
day in he weye I sise pou kyng from heuene lizte haue schy-
nyde aboute me ouer he schynnyng of sunne · and hem pat
weren to gedir wih me/ and whanne we alle hadden fallen
doun in to he erhe · I herde a voyce seyinge to me in ebrue
tunge/ Saul Saul what pursuest thou me/ it is harde to hee to
like azenes he pricke/ forsohe I seyde/ who art thou lorde/ so-
hely he lorde seyde/ I am Ihs whom thou pursuest/ but rise vp
& stonde on hi feet/ sohely to his ping I apperide to hee · pat
I ordeyne hee mynysire & witnesse of ho pingis pat thou hast
seen · & of ho in whiche I schal appere to hee · delueryng hee
fro puplis & folkis into whiche now I sende hee for to open he
yzen of hem · pat hei be conuertide fro dirkenessis to lizte/ and
fro power of sathanas to god · pat hei take remysstoun of synnes ·
& soorte (or parte) amonge seyntis by seih pat is in me/ wher-
fore thou kyng agrippa · I was not vnbeleueful to heuenely
wisdom · but to hem pat ben at damask firste & Irlm & bi al he
cuntre of Jude & to heben men · I schewide (or tolde) pat hei
schulden do penaunce & be conuertide to god · doinge worhi
werkis of penaunce/ of his cause Iewes temptiden me taken to ·
whanne I was in he temple · willynge for to slee me/ sohely I
holpen by he helpe of god into his day · stonde witnessyng to
lesse & more · no ping wih ouden seyinge · hanne whiche pingis
he prophetis & moyses spaken for to be comyng/ zif crist pas-

dedis

sible (or able to suffre) · zif he firste of he azen ryllynge of deade men · is to schewynge lizte to he puple & heben men/ hym spekyng hes pingis · & zildynge resoun · festus wih greet voyce seyde/ poul pou maddist (or warist wood)/ many lettres turnen hee into wodenesse/ and poul seih/ I madde not pou beste festus · but I speek oute he wordis of treuþe in sobrenes/ soþely & he kyng to whom I speke sydefastly · woot of hes pingis/ soþely I deme no þing of hes · for to dare hym (or vnknewe)/ neþer in a corner is ouzte of hes pingis done/ bileuest þou kyng agrippa to prophetis? I woot for þou bileuest/ Soþely agrippa seyde to poul/ in litil þing þou counseylist me for to be made a cristen man/ and poul/ I desire anentis god · & in litil & in greet · not onely þee · but & alle hes þat heren to day · for to be made suche what maner & I am · out taken hes bondis/ and he kyng roos vp & he precident & bernyce · and þei þat saten nyz to hem/ he whiche whanne þei wenten away · spaken to gedir seyinge/ for þis man hap not done any þing worþi deþ or bondis/ forsoþe agrippa seyde to festus/ þis man myzte be dismyttide (or delyueride) · zif he had not appellede to cesar//

C^m 27^m



Soþely as it demyde hym for to schippe into ytalie · and þei bitoken poul wih oþer kepte to a centurioun by name Julius · of he cumpanye of knyztis of he emperoure/ Soþely we steyzinge into he schippe of adrymetis & bygynnyng for to sayle · baren vp aboute he placis of asie · lastynge stille wih vs aristarke of macedonye tessalonycense/ forsoþe he day suyng · we camen to sydon/ soþely Julius trefynge manly (or curteysely) poul · suffride for to go to frendis · & to do he cure (or nede) of hym/ and whanne we hadden taken vp fro þens · we vndresayliden to cypre · for þat wyndis weren contrarie · & he see of cilicie & pamphilie · we saylynge camen to listris þat is licye/ and here centurioun syndynge a schip of alisaundre saylynge into ytalie ·

ye aplis

lie: puttide vs ouer into it/ and whanne manye dayes we say-
 liden slowely * & vnnephe camen azene gnydun * he wynde for-
 bedynge vs: we sayliden to crete bisidis salomona/ and vnnephe
 we bisidys saylunge camen into sum place hat is clepide of
 good hauen * to whom he cytee tessala was nyz/ forsope myche
 tyme passide * & whanne nowe was no liker saylunge * for hat
 fastynge passide: poul confortide hem * seyinge to hem/ men I
 se for wronge & harme * not onely of charge & schippe * but also
 of oure soulis (or lyues): bygynne saylunge for to be/ sohely
 centurioune bileuede more to he gouernoure & to he lorde of
 he schippe: hanne to hes pingis hat weren seyde of poul/ and
 whanne he hauen was not able for to dwelle in wynter: ful
 manye ordeyniden counseyl * for to sayle pens: zif in any
 maner hei myzten come to senyce * for to wynter in he hauen
 of creete biholdynge to affrike & to chorum/ sohely he souh
 blowynge * hei gessynge hem for to holde purpose * whanne
 hei hadden taken vp fro alton * sayliden to creete/ sohely not
 astir myche (tyme) * he wynde tyfonyk hat is clepide north or
 este (or wynde of tempest): sente hym azenes it/ and whan he
 schip was rauylschide * & myzte not enforce into he wynde * he
 schippe zouen to blowynges: we weren borne/ sohely we ren-
 nyng into sum yle hat is clepide cauda: vnnephe myzten gete
 a litil boot/ he whiche taken vp wih helpis * hei vlden gird-
 yng to gedir he schippe * dredynge lest he schulen falle into
 sondy places: he vessel undirsente: so hei weren borne/ sohely
 vs protwen wih greet tempest: in he day suyng he maden
 castynge oute * & he pridde day wih here hondis castiden away
 he instrumentis of he schippe/ sohely neher sunne neher sterres
 apperynge by mo dayes * & tempest not litil schewynge nyz:
 nowe al he hope of oure helpe was done aweye/ and whanne
 myche fastyng had be: hanne poul stondynge in he mydel of
 hem seyde/ o men it bihoste me herde * for to not take away
 fro creete * & make to wynne his wronge & castynge oute/ and
 nowe I counseyl you for to be of gode inwitte (or herte)/ sohely
 per

Dedis

her schal be losse of no soule of zou: outaken of þe schippe/ for-
 soþe an aungel of god of whom I am & to whom I serue: stode
 nyze to me þis nyzt seyinge/ poul drede þou not: it bihoueh
 þee for to stonde nyzt to cesar/ and lo god haþ zouen to þee:
 alle þat ben in schippe wiþ þee/ for whiche þing zee men · be
 of good intwite (or herte) forsoþe I bileue to my god: for
 so it schal be · as it is seyde to me/ Soþely it bihoueh vs for
 to come into sum Iile/ but aftirwarde in þe fourtenþe day þe
 nyzt came aboue to vs saylyng in þe stonpe see: aboute myd-
 nyzt þe schippemen supposiden sum region (or cuntre) for to
 appere to hem/ þe whiche sendynge doune a plomet founden
 twenty paasis of depnesse/ and aftir a litil þei partide þens:
 founden fiftene paasis/ soþely þei dredynge leste we schulden
 falle into scharpe places · fro þe lasse parte of þe schippe send-
 ynge foure ankeris · desireden day for to be made/ soþely þe
 schipmen seekynge for to fle of þe schippe · whanne þei had-
 den sente a litil boot into þe see vndir colours as þei schulden
 bigynne fro þe former parte of þe schippe for to strecche forþ
 þe ankers: poul seyde to þe centurioune & knyztis/ no but þes
 schulen dwelle in þe schippe: zee mounne not be made saaf/
 þanne knyztis kuttiden away þe coordis of þe litil boot: and
 suffreden it for to falle fro/ and whanne lizte bigan for to be
 made: poul preyede alle men for to take mete · seyinge/ þe four-
 tenþ day þis day zee abidyng dwellen fastynge: no þing fast-
 ynge/ for whiche þing I preye zou for to take mete for zoure
 helpe: for of none of zou þe heer of þe heede schal perishe/ and
 whanne he had seyde þes þingis: he takynge breede dide þank-
 yngis to god in þe sizte of alle men/ and whanne he hadde
 broken: he bigan for to ete/ forsoþe alle men more patient
 (or herty): and þei token to mete/ soþely we weren alle þe
 soulis in þe schippe: two hundride seuenty & fire/ and þei ful-
 fillide wiþ mete: dischargiden þe schippe · castynge wheet into
 þe see/ soþely whanne day was made: þei knewen not lande/
 forsoþe þei bihilden sum hauen hauynge a waterbanke into
whiche

ye aplis

whiche þei þouzten zif þei myzten: for to caste þe schippe/ and whanne þei hadden taken vp þe ankeris: þei bitoken hem to þe see: to gedir slakynge þe ioyntures & gouernaylis/ and a litil sayle: lifte vp: vp blowynge of þe wynde: þei wenten to þe banke/ and whanne we fellen into a place of grauel gon al aboute wif þe see: þei hurtlyden þe schippe/ and þe former parte sicchide dwelte vnmouable: soþely þe laste parte was broken of strengþe of þe see/ soþely counseyl of þe knyztis was for to slee men in þe kepynge: lest any schulde scape: whanne he had swimmyde oute/ forsoþe centurioune willynge for to kepe poul: forþed to be done/ and he comaundide hem þat myzten swimme: for to sende hem firste into þe see & scape: & go oute to þe lande/ and summe oþer þei baren in bordis: summe on þo þingis þat weren of þe schippe/ and it is made þat alle þe soulis (or lyuyng men) scapipen to þe lande//



And whanne we hadden scapide: þanne we knewen þat þe isle was clepide mytilyne/ soþely barbars (or heþen men): zauen to vs not a litil humanyte (or curteysie)/ forsoþe a sijr kyndelide: þei refetiden (or refreschiden) vs alle: for þe rayne þat came nyz & colde/ soþely whan poul had gederide sum multitude of kittynge of vynes: & inputte on þe sijr: an eddre whanne sche came forþ fro þe heet: assaylide his hande/ þerfore as barbars sizen þe beest hangynge in his hande: þei seyden togedir/ soþely þis man is a manqueller/ whiche whanne he scapide fro þe see: goddis vengeaunce suffriþ hym not for to lyue/ and he soþely schakynge of þe beest into þe sijr: suffride no þing of euyl/ and þei gesiden hym for to be turnyde into swellynge: & sodeynly to fallynge: & for to die/ forsoþe hem longe abydyng: & seinge no þing of euyl for to be done in hym: þei turnynge to gedir: seyden hym for to be god/ forsoþe in þo places weren maners (or seeldis) of þe prynce of þe isle: puplius by name: þe whiche receyuyng vs þre dages benygngely (or of good wille):

Cm 28m

Dedis

wille) • fonde vs/ sohely it bifel þe fadir of puplius for to ligge
traueylide wiþ feueris & discenterie (or fluxe) to whom poul
entride/ and whanne he had preyede • & puttide þe handis to
hym: he sauede hym/ whiche þing done alle þat in þe yle had:
den sekenessis: camen to • & weren curide (or heelide)/ whiche
also honoureden vs in manye worschipis • & to vs schippynge:
in puttiden what þingis weren necessarie/ forsoþe aftir þre
moneþes we schippiden in a schippe of alisaundre • þat had
wyntride in þe iyle • to þe whiche was a noble þing of castels/
and whanne we camen to syracusan: we dwelten þere þre
dayes/ fro þens we schippynge aboute: bicamen to þe regioun/
and aftir one day þe south blowynge: in þe secounde day we
camen to puteolos/ where breþeren founden: we ben preyede
for to dwelle þere anentis hem • seuene dayes • & so we camen
to rome/ and fro þens whan breþeren hadden herde: þei run-
nen to vs til to þe chepyng of apppyus • & to a place þat is cle-
pide þre tauernes/whom whan poul had*: doinge þankyngis
to god • toke triste/ sohely whan we camen to rome: it is suf-
fride to poul for to dwelle to hym self wiþ one knyzt kepyng
hym/ forsoþe aftir þe þridde day: he clepide to gedir þe firste
of Jewes/ and whanne þei camen: he seyde to hem/ men bre-
þeren I doinge no þing azenes þe puple or custom of faderis •
I bounden at Jrlm • am bitaken into þe handis of romayns/
whiche þei hadden aringe of me: wolden dismytte me • for þat
no cause of deþ was in me/ but Jewes azen seyinge: I am
constreynede for to appeel cesar • not as haupnge any þing for
to accuse my folc/ þerfore for þis cause I preyede for to se zou:
and I spac to/ forsoþe for þe hope of isrl: I am girde aboute
wiþ þis cheyne/ and þei seyden to hym/ neþer we haue recey-
uyde lettris of þee fro Jude • neþer any of breþeren comynge
to: schewide or spac any euyl þing of þee/ sohely we prepen
for to here of þee: what þingis þou feelist/ for whi of þis sette
it is knowen to vs: for euery where it is azenseyde/ sohely
whanne þei hadden ordeynede a day to hym: mo camen to
hym

* Thus in
the MS. but
the word
[seen] is evi-
dently want-
ing.

ye aplis

hym in þe ooste (or herbore) · to whom he expounyde witnes-
 ynge þe kyngdom of god · & counseyliden hem of Ihu & of þe
 lawe of moyses & prophetis: fro þe morn til to þe euentide/
 and summe bileueden to þes þingis þat weren seyde of poul:
 and summe bileueden not/ whan þei weren not consentynge
 to gedir: þei departiden · poul seyinge one worde/ for þe holy
 gost spac wel by ysaye þe prophete to oure faderis: seyinge go
 þou to þis puple · & seye to hem/ wiþ ere zee schulen here: and
 zee schulen not vnderstonde/ and zee seinge schulen se: and zee
 schulen not biholde/ þe herte of þis puple is infattide: and wiþ
 eris þei herden greuoussly/ and þei pressiden here yzen to gedir:
 lestte parauenture þei seen wiþ yzen · & wiþ eris heren · & bi
 herte vnderstonde · & be conuertide · & I heele hem/ þerfore be
 it knowen to zou · for to heben men þis helpe of god is sente:
 and þei schulen here/ and whanne he hadde seyde þes þingis ·
 Jewes wenten oute fro hym: haupnge myche questioune (or
 seekynge) amonge hem self/ soþely he dwellide al two zeer in
 his þisride place · & he receyuyde alle þat entriden to hym
 prechynge þe kyngdom of god · & techynge what þingis ben
 of þe lorde Ihu cñ wiþ al trisse wiþ outen forbedynge//

ye pistel of James.



James þe seruaunt of god · & of oure lorde C^m 1^m
 Ihu cñ: to þe twelue kynredis þat ben
 in þe scaterynge abroad: helpe/ my bre-
 þerengesse (or deeme) zee al ioye: whan
 zee schulen falle in dyuerse temptacoñs
 or tribulacoñs wytyng þat þe prouyng
 of zoure seiþ: wirchþ patience/ soþely
 patience haþ parfite werke · þat zee be
 parfite & hool · in no þing saylynge/ þerfore zif any of zou
 nedith

ye pistel

nediſh wiſdom: are he of god: he whiche zyueþ to alle men
largely: & vybraydiþ not: and it ſchal be zouen to hym/ ſo-
hely are he in feiþ: no þing doutynge/ forſoþe he þat doutiþ:
is lijk to a wawe of þe ſee: he whiche of wynde is mouede &
borne aboute/ þerfore geſſe not þe ilke man þat he ſchal take
any þing of þe lorde/ a man double of inwitte: is vnſtable in
alle his weyes/ forſoþe a meke broþer glorie in his enhaun-
ynge/ ſohely a riche man in his mekenesse/ for as þe floure of
hay (or graſſe): he ſchal paſſe/ ſohely þe ſunne is ſprungen vy
wiþ brennyng (or heet): and driede þe hay/ and þe floure of
it ſel doune: & þe ſayrenesse of his chere periſchide: ſo a riche
man welowiþ in his weyes/ bleſſide is þe man þat ſuffreþ
temptacon/ for whanne he ſchal be prouede: he ſchal receyue
þe crowne of liſt: he whiche azen bihiſte to men louynge
hym/ no man whan he is temptide ſeye: for he is temptide of
god/ ſohely god is vntempter of euyl þingis/ forſoþe he temp-
tiþ no man/ ſohely eche man is temptide of his coueytynge:
drawen (fro reſoun) & ſnaride (or deſceyuyde)/ þanne couey-
tynge whanne it haþ conſequeude: bryngiþ forþ ſynne/ ſohely
ſynne whan it is fulfild: gendriþ deþ/ and ſo my moſte der-
worþe breþeren: nyl zee erre/ eche beſt þing zouen: & al par-
ſite ziſte it is fro aboue comynge doune of þe ſadir of liſtis/
anentis whom is not ouerchaunge: neþer ſchadowynge of
whilenes (or tyme)/ forſoþe wilfully he gendride wiþ vs þe
worde of treuþe: þat we be ſum bygynnyng of þe creature of
hym/ wite zee my breþeren moſte louede/ be eche man ſwiſte
for to here: forſoþe ſlowe for to ſpeke: & ſlowe to wraþe/ ſo-
hely þe wraþ of man worchiþ not þe riſtweſneſſe of god/ for
whiche þing zee caſtynge aweye al vncleneneſſe & plente of
malice in myldeneneſſe (or homelyneſſe): receyue zee þe worde
infente (or ioynyde): þat may ſaue zoure ſoulis/ forſoþe be
zee doers of þe worde: & not herers onely: deſceyuyng zou ſelf/
for zif any man is herer of þe worde & not doer: þis ſchal be
compariſounde (or lickenyde) to a man biholdynge þe cheer
of

of James

of his birthe in a myrour/ sohely he bihilde hym self & wente:
and anone he forzate what maner he was/ forsoþe he þat schal
parfitely biholde in þe lawe of parsite freedom * & schal dwelle
in it not made a forzetel herer * but doer of werke: þis schal
be bleside in his dede/ forsoþe zif any man gesse hym self for
to be religious * not restreynynge his tunge * but deceyuyng
his herte: þe religioun of hym is beyne/ þis is a clene religi-
oune & vnwemmyde * anentis god & þe fadir * for to visite pu-
pilles (þat is fadirles or modirles or boþe) & wydowis in here
tribulacō * & for to kepe hym self vndefoulide fro þis worlde//



M breheren nyl zee in accepcon (or takynge) of per- C^m 2^m
sones: haue þe seiþ of oure lorde Ihu crist of glorie/
forsoþe zif þere schal entre into zoure couent (or
gedirynge to gedir) * a man hauynge a golden
rynge * in white (or sayre) cloþe * forsoþe & a pore man schal
entre in foule habite (or cloþe) * & zee biholde into hym þat is
cloþide wiþ a ful cleer cloþe * & zit zee schulen seye to hym *
þou sitte heere wel: sohely to þe pore man zee seye: stonde þou
here * or sitte vndir þe stool of my feet: wher zee demen not
anentis zou self * & ben made domesmen of wickide houztis:
here zee my moste derworþe breheren/ wher chees not pore
men in þis worlde riche in seiþ * & eynes of þe kyngdom * þat
god behizte azen to men louynge hym: forsoþe zee hane dis-
piside þe pore man/ wher riche men oppresen zou not by
power * & drawen zou to domes: wher þei blasfeme not þe
good name * þat is inclepide on zou: neþeles zif zee parfou-
men þe kyngis lawe by scriptures þou schalt loue þi neyzebore
as þi self: zee done wel/ sohely zif zee taken persones: zee wir-
chen synne * zee be reþrouede of þe lawe as trespasours/ for-
soþe whoeuer schal kepe al þe lawe * sohely offende in one * he
is made giltþy of alle/ for he þat seyde þou schalt not do lecche-
rie: seyde & þou schalt not flee/ þat zif þou schalt not do lecche-
rie * but þou sleeþ þou art made trespasoure of þe lawe/ þus

ye pistel

speke zee & hus do zee: as bygynnyng for to be demyde by
lawe of parfite fredom/ sohely dome wih ouden mercy to hym
hat doih not mercy/ sohely mercy aboue reysih doom// ¶ **A**ny
breheren what schal it profite zif any man seye hym for to
haue seih · werkis forsohe we haue not · wher seih schal mothe
saue hym/ forsohe zif a brohet or sifter be nakide & haue nede
of eche day lyuelode · forsohe any of zou seye to hem go zee in
pees · be zee made hoothe · & be zee fulfillide/ sohely zif zee
schulen not zyue to hem what hingis ben necessarie of body:
what schal it profite to zou/ so & seih zif it haue not werkis:
is deade in it self/ but summan schal seye/ hou hast seih · and
I haue werkis/ schewe hou to me he seih wih ouden werkis:
and I schal schewe to hee my seih of werkis/ hou bileuest for
one god is: hou doist wel/ and deuelis bileuen & to gedir trem-
blen/ forsohe wolte hou wite hou veyne man: for seih wih
ouden werkis is ydil/ abraham oure fadir · wher he was not
iustifiede of werkis offerynge ysaac his sone on he auter/ per-
fore hou seest: for seih wrouzde wih his werkis · & his seih ful-
filde of werkis/ and he scripture is fulfilde: seyinge/ abraham
bileuede to god · & it is rettide to hym to riztwelnesse: and he
is clepide he frende of god/ zee seen for a man is iustifiede of
werkis: and not of seih onely/ also forsohe & raab hoore · wher
sche was not iustifiede of werkis · recepyng he messagers · &
by anoter weye doinge oute (or sendynge) oute/ forsohe as a
body wih ouden spirit is deade: so & seih wih ouden werkis is
deade//

C^m 3^m



M breheren nyl zee be made manye maystris · wit-
ynge for zee taken he more dome/ sohely alle we
offenden in many hingis/ zif any man offendih not
in worde: his is a parfite man/ forsohe he may wih
a bridil: leede aboute al he body/ forsohe zif we putten horsis
bridels into mouthes for to consente to us & we beren per wih
aboute al he body of hem/ and lo schippis whanne hei ben
grete ·

of James

grete · & ben dryuen of stronge wyndis: sohely hei ben borne
aboute of litil gouernayle · wher he birre of a man dressynge
schal wole/ so & he tunge sohely is a litil membre: and rephly
grete þingis/ lo how myche sijn kyndelich how greet a wode/
and oure tunge is sijn: he vnpuersite of wickidnesse/ he tunge
is ordeynede in oure membris: he whiche defouliþ al he body/
and it enflaumpyde (or sette a sijn) of helle: enflaumeþ he queel
of oure birþe/ sohely al he kynde of beestis or foulis & serpentis
& of oþer: he ouercomen (or vndrezokide) · & ben made tame
of mannes kynde · forsoþe none of men may daunte (or chast-
tise) he tunge/ sohely it is vnquyete (or vnpeesible) euyl þing:
and ful of deadely venym/ in it we blessen god he fadir: and
in it we cursen men · þat ben made of he lickenesse of god/ of
he same mouþ comen forþ blesynge & cursynge/ my breþeren
it bihouen not þes þingis for to be made so/ wher a welle of
he same hool brynge forþ swete & salte water: my breþeren ·
wher a fyge tree may make grapis: [eiþer a vyne fygis:]
so neþer salte water: may make swete water/ who is wise
& disciplynede (or chastifide) amonge zou: schewe he of good
lyuynge his werke in myldenesse of wisdom/ but zif zee haue
bittir zeale (or enuye) & stryuynges ben in zoure hertis: nyl
zee glorie & he liets azenes he treuþe/ forsoþe þis wisdom is
not fro aboue comynge doune: but erþely bestly sendely/ for
where is enuye & strife: þere vnstidfastnesse & al schrewide
werke/ forsoþe wisdom þat is fro aboue · firste sohely it is
chaste · aftirwarde peesible · mylde · swadible (þat is esy for
to trete & to be tretide) · consentynge to good þingis · ful of
mercy & gode fruytis · demynge wiþ outen feynynge/ sohely
he fruytis of rihtwefnesse ben sowen in pees: to men making
pees//

pe pistel

C^m 4^m



Wher of bataylis & chestis (or chydngis) amonge zouſ
wher not of zoure coueytis · hat ſitzen in zoure
membres · zee coueyten · and zee hane not / zee
fleen & hane enuye · and zee mowne not gete / zee
chiden & maken batayle · and zee hane not for whiche þing
zee hane not axide / zee aren & zee receyuen not · for þat zee
aren euyl · as in zoure coueytise zee ſchewen / auoutrers witen
not zee · for þe frendſhip of þis worlde is enuye to god · þer
fore who euer ſchal wole · for to be frende of þis worlde · is or
deynede þe enemy of god / wher wenen zee þat veynly þe ſcrip
ture ſeiþ þe ſpirit þat dwelliþ in zou coueytis to enuye · for
ſoþe he ʒyueþ more grace / for whiche þing he ſeiþ / god wiþ
ſtondiþ proude men · forſoþe to meke men he ʒyueþ grace /
þerfore he zee ſuget to god / forſoþe wiþſtonde zee þe deuyl · &
he ſchal flee fro zou / neyze zee to god · & he ſchal neyze to zou /
zee ſynners clenſe þe handiſ · & zee double of intwit (or wille) ·
purge þe hertis / be zee wrecches (in zoure owne yzen) · &
weple zee & wepe zee / zoure leyzinge be it turnyde into wep
ynge · & zoure ioye into ſorowe of herte / be zee mekide in þe
ſitte of þe lorde · & he ſchal enhaunce zou / my breþeren nyl
zee bachite eche oþer / he þat bachitiþ his broþer · or þat demeth
his broþer · bachitiþ þe lawe & demeth þe lawe / forſoþe ʒif þou
demeſt þe lawe · þou art not doer of þe lawe · but domeſman /
ſoþely one is ſpeker (or maker) of þe lawe & Juge · þat may
leeſe & delyuer / forſoþe who art þou þat demeſt þi neyzebores ·
lo nowe zee þat ſeyn · to day or tomorowe we ſchulen go into
þe ilke cytee · & here ſoþely we ſchulen make a zeer · & we
ſchulen make marchaundise & we ſchulen make wynnynge ·
þe whiche witen not what is to zou in þe morowe / forſoþe
what is zoure liſt · a vapour (or ſmoke) to a litil ſemyng · and
aftirwarde it ſchal bewaſtide · þerfore þat zee ſeye / ʒif þe lorde
ſchal wole · & ʒif we ſchulen lyue · we ſchulen do þis þing /
now forſoþe zee gladen in zoure pridis / euery ſuche ioyinge
is

of James

is wickide/ perfore to a man kunnyng for to do good * & not
doinge: synne it is to hym//



D nowe zee riche men wepe zee * zoulunge in zoure C^m 5^m
wrecchidnessis pat schulen come to zou/zoure rich-
essis ben made roten: & zoure cloþes ben eten of
mouztis/ zoure golde & siluer haþ rustide: & ruste
of hem schal be to zou into witnessyng & schal ete zoure sleyschis
as fiyr/ zee haue tresouride to zou wraþe in þe laste dayes/ lo
þe hiþre of zoure werkemen þat repeden zoure cuntrees * þat
is fraudide of zou crieþ * & þe crie of hem: entride into þe eris
of þe lorde of oostis/ zee haue eten on þe erþe: & in zoure lec-
cheries zee haue norischide zoure hertis/ in þe day of sleeinge
zee ledden to & slouen þe iuste man: & he azenstode not zou//
¶ perfore breþeren be zee patient: til to þe comynge of þe
lorde/ lo an erþe tilier abidih precious fruyte of þe erþe: pa-
tiently suffrynge til he receyue tymeþul & lateþul/ and be zee
patient & conferme zee zoure hertis: for þe comynge of þe
lorde schal neyþ/ breþeren nyl zee be sorowful eche into oþer
þat zee be not demyde/ lo þe iustise stondih nyl: bifore þe zate//
Breþeren take zee ensauple of euyl goinge oute & of longe
abidyng of traueyl * & paciẽce * þe prophetis þat spaken to
zou in name of þe lorde/ lo we blessen hem þat suffreden/ zee
herden þe suffrynge (or paciẽce) of Job * & zee lizen þe ende
of þe lorde: for þe lorde is mercyful & doing mercy bifore
alle þingis/ my breþeren nyl zee swere: neþer by heuene ne by
erþe: neþer by what euer oþer oþe/ forsoþe be zoure wordis
nay nay: þat zee falle not vndre doom/ Sopely zif any of
zou is sorowful (or heuþe): prepe he wiþ euen inwitte * & sepe
þe psalme/ any of zou is siþk: leede he in pristis of þe chirche *
& prepe þei on hym * anoyntyng wiþ oyle in name of þe
lorde: & þe preper of seiþ schal saue þe siþk/ and þe lorde schal
discharge (or make hym lizt)/ and zif he be in synnes: þei
schulen be forzouen to hym/ perfore knoweleche zee one to
anoþer

petre .i.

another zoure synnes: and prepe zee for eche oþer: þat zee be
sauede/ forsoþe þe continuel preper of a iuste man: is myche
worþe/ helie was a man lijk to vs passible (or able for to suf-
fre: & in preper he prepede þat it schulde not rayne on þe
erþe: & it raynyde not þre zeeris & fire moneþes/ and este-
sone he prepede: & heuene zaue rayne: & þe erþe zaue his
fruyte/ breþeren forsoþe zif any of zou schal erre fro þe treuþe:
& any schal conuerte hym: he owip for to wite: & he þat schal
make a synner for to turne fro þe errour of his weye: schal
saue þe soule of hym fro deþ: and couerip þe multitude of
synnes//

þe firste pißtel of petre

C^m 1^m



Þre apostle of Ihu crist to þe chosen
gestis (or comelyngis) of dispersion (or
scaterynge abroad) : of ponte & gala-
thie of capadosie of asie & of bithynne
vp þe prescience (or bifore knowynge)
of god þe sadir into halowynge of þe
spirit: into obedience & spryngynge of
þe blood of Ihu crist: grace & pees to
zou be multipliede/ blesside (be) god & þe sadir of oure lorde
Ihu crist: þe whiche vp his grete mercy azen gendride vs into
quyk hope: by þe azen rysynge of Ihu crist fro deade men:
into heretage vncorruptible: & vndefoulide & unwelowable
þat schal not fade: kepte in heuenes: in zou þat in þe vertues
of god ben kepte by þe seiþ into helpe made redy: for to be
schewide in þe laste tyme in whiche zee schulen ioye: zif it
bihoueþ now a litil for to be soory in dyuerse temptacons þat
þe prouynge of zoure seiþ be myche preciouser/ þan golde þat
is prouede by fyr/ be it founden in to herpyng & glorie & ho-
noure

petre .i.

noure into þe reuelacōn of Ihū c̄st: whom whanne zee haue
not seen zee louen into whom also nowē zee not seinge: bi-
leuen/ forsoþe zee bileuynge schulen haue ioye wiþ oute forþ
in gladenesse vnenerrable (þat may not be tolde oute) · & glo-
rifiede bryngynge azen þe ende of zoure seiþ · þe helpe of zoure
soulis/ of whiche helpe prophetis souzten oute & enserchiden ·
þat prophecieden of þe grace to comyng in zou · sechynge
whiche or what maner tyme þe spirit of c̄st signyfyede in hem ·
bifore tellynge þe passiouns þat ben in c̄rist · & later glories/
to whom it is schewide for not to hem self soþely to zou þei
mynystreden þo þingis · þat nowē ben tolde to zou bi hem
þat euangelizeden to zou þe holy gost sente fro heuene: into
whom aungels desyren for to biholde/ for whiche þingis zee
girde þe lendis of zoure soule · sobre · parfite hope into þe ilke
grace þat is offryde to zou into reuelacōn or schewynge of Ihū
c̄st · as sones of obedience · not to gedir lickenyde to þe for-
mer desyres of zoure ignoraunce: but vp hym þat clepide zou
holy · þat & zoure self be holy in al lyuynge/ for it is writen/
zee schulen be holy: for I am holy/ and zif zee inclepen hym
sadir · þe whiche wiþ outhen accepciōn of persones demeyþ vp
þe werke of eche man: lyue zee in drede in tyme of zoure pil-
grymage (or litil dwellynge in erþe)/ wityng þat not bi cor-
ruptible golde or siluer zee ben bouzte azen of zoure veyne
lyuynge of faderis tradicoñs: but by þe precious blood of þe
lombe · vndefoulide & vntpottide c̄st Ihū/ bifore knowen so-
þely bifore þe makynge of þe worlde: forsoþe schewide in þe
laste tymes · for zou þat by hym ben seiþful in god þat reyside
hym fro deade men · & zawe to hym euerlastynge glorie · þat
zoure seiþ & hope were in god/ zee makynge chaste zoure soulis
in obedience of charite · in loue of broþerhede of symple herte
loue zee to gedir bisiloker borne azen · not of corruptible seed:
but of vncorruptible by þe worde of quyeke god & dwellynge
into wiþ outhen ende/ for eche slepþe hay: and al þe glorie of
it as floure of hay/ þe hay drieþ vp: and his floure sel doune/
forsoþe

petre .i.

forsoþe þe worde dwellig into wiþ outen ende/ soþely þis is þe
worde þat is euangelizide to zou//

C^m 2^m



Therefore puttyng away al malice · & al gile & symul-
actis or feynyngis · & enuyes & al detraccon as
newe gendride zonge children · wiþ oute gile ·
coueyte zee mylke þat in it zee ware into helpe · zif
neþeles zee tastiden for þe lorde is swete/ to whom zee goinge
nyz a quykke soon · reprouyde soþely of men · forsoþe chosen
of god & honouride · & zoure self as quykke stones be aboue
bildide spiritual housis · holy prishode for to offre spiritual
oostis (or offryngis) · acceptable to god by Ihu crist/ for whiche
þing þe scripture holdiþ lo I schal putte in syon þe heyzeft
soon · corner soon · chosen · precious/ and he þat schal bileue
into hym · schal not be confoundide/ þerfore honoure to zou
bileuyng/ forsoþe to men not bileuynges · þe soon whom þei
bildyng reproueden · þis is made into þe hede of þe corner ·
& þe soon of offencion (or hurtyng) · & soon of sclaudre · to
hem þat offenden by worde · neþer bileuen in whiche & þei ben
putte/ forsoþe zee ben a kynde chosen · kyngely prishode ·
holy folc · puple of purchasynges · þat zee telle þe vertues of
hym þat clepide zou fro dirkenessis · into his wondreful lizte/
þe whiche sum tyme not þe puple of god · now soþely þe puple
of god/ þe whiche not hauyng mercy · now forsoþe hauyng
mercy// ¶ Hoste dere I biseche zou as comelyngis (or gestis) for
to abstene zou fro fleyschely desiris · þat sizten azenes þe soule/
hauyng zoure conuerfacion (or lijf) good amonge heþen men/
þat in þat þing þat þei bacbiten (or euyl treten) of zou as of
mysdoers · þei biholdyng zou of good werkis · glorifie god in þe
day of visitacion/ be zee suget to eche creature of man for god/
oþer to þe kyng · as excellent (or worþi in staat) · oþer to
dukis · as sente of hym/ to þe vengeaunce of mysdedis (or mys-
doers) · forsoþe to þe preysyng of good dedis (or good men) ·
for so is þe wille of god · þat zee doinge wel make þe unkun-
nyngnesse

petre .i.

nyngnesse of vnprudent men for to be doumbe/ as fre men/ & not as hauyng fredom he couerynge of malice: but as he seruauntis of god/ honoure zee al men · loue zee bretherhede · drede zee god · make zee he kyng honourable/ seruantis be zee suget in al drede to lordis/ not onely to good & mylde: but also to tyrauntis/ forsoþe þis is he grace · zif for conscience of god · any man suffriþ sorowis (or heuynessis) suffrynge vniustly/ soþely what grace is it · zif zee synnyng & buffatide suffren/ but zif zee wel doinge suffren: þis is grace anentis god/ forsoþe in þis þing zee ben clepide/ for cēt suffride for vs · leuyng to zou enfaumple: þat zee solotwe he steppis of hym · he whiche dide not synne · neþer gile is founden in his moup/ whiche whanne he was curside: curside not/ whanne he suffride he manasside not/ soþely he bitoke hym to a man demynge hym vniustly · whiche he hym self suffride (or bare) oure synnes in his bodye on þe tree · þat we be deade to synnes lyue to ryztwesnesse · by whos wounde zee ben helide/ forsoþe zee weren as scheep erryng: but zee ben conuertide now to þe scheperde & bishop of zoure soulis//



Also & wymmen be suget to here housbondis/ þat zif any bileue not to þe worde: by þe conuersacon of wymmen · be þei wonnen wiþ outen worde · biholdyng in drede zoure holy conuersacon/ of þe whiche be not wiþ outen sorþ curious ournyng of heer · or doinge aboute of golde or ournyng of cloþinge of vestymentis: but þe ilke þat is þe hid man of herte & uncorruptible of quyetē (or peesible) & mylde spirit · he whiche is riche in þe sizte of god/ soþely so & holy wymmen hoppyng in god · (not in ournement of cloþinge:) ournyden (or maden clene) hem self: suget to here owne housbondis/ as saare obeyede to abraham: clepyng hym lorde/ of whom zee ben douztris wel doinge: & not dredyng any perturbacon/ also men togedir dwellyng by science (or kunnyng) zyuyng honoure to þe

petre .i.

wommans vessel (or body) as to þe more sijk: as & to þe euen
 eyris of grace of lijf · þat zoure preyers be not lettide/ forsoþe
 in seih al of one vnderstondynge (or wille) · in preyer be zee
 compacient (or eche suffryng wiþ oþer) · louers of fraternyte ·
 mercyful · mylde · meke · not zildynge euyl for euyl · neþer
 cursynge for cursynge: but azen blessinge/ for in his þing zee
 ben clepide: þat zee welde blessinge by heretage/ forsoþe he
 þat wole loue lijf & se good dayes: constreyne his tunge fro
 euyl · & his lippis þat þei speke not gile/ soþely bowe he fro
 euyl & do good · seek he pees & parsitely sue it/ for þe pzen of
 þe lorde on iuste men: & þe eris of hym into þe preyers of hem/
 forsoþe þe chere of þe lorde on men doinge euyl þingis/ and
 who is it þat schal noye to zou: zif zee schulen be good suers:
 but zif zee suffren any þing for riztwesnesse: zee (ben) blessinge/
 soþely drede zee not þe drede of hem: þat zee be not distour-
 blide/ forsoþe halowe zee þe lorde crist in zoure hertis · euer-
 more reedy to do satisfaccoñ to eche man axinge zou (resoune)
 of þat seih/ and hope þat is in zou: but wiþ myldenesse & drede
 haupnge gode conscience/ þat in þat þing þat þei bacbiten of
 zou: þei ben confoundide · þe whiche chalengen falsely zoure
 gode conuersacioñ in cñt/ soþely it is better zif þe wille of god
 wole · zee wel doinge for to suffre: þan euyl doinge/ for & crist
 ones diede for oure synnes · he iuste · for vniust: þat he schulde
 offre vs to god made deade soþely in fleysche: forsoþe made
 quycke in spirit/ þe whiche þing & to hem þat weren closide to
 gedir in prisoun: he comynge in spirit prechide/ In whiche
 weren sumtyme unbileueful whanne þei abiden þe pacience
 of god in þe dayes of noe · whanne þe arke (or schippe) was
 made in whiche a fewe þat is to seye eyzte foulis · ben made
 saaf by water/ þe whiche þing & baptym of lijf fourme: ma-
 kih vs saaf/ not þe puttynge away of fleysche of filþes · but
 þe aringe of good conscience into god/ by þe azenrytynge of
 oure lorde Jhū cñt þat is in þe rizthalse of god · he swolowynge
 deþ (or distruyinge): þat we schulen be made eyres of euer
 lastynge

petre .i.

lastynge lijf he gon into heuene: aungels & powers & vertues
made sugettis to hym//



Therefore cōst suffrynge in sleysche: & be zee armyde by C^m 4^m
 he same penkynge/ for he þat suffride in sleysche
 ceesliþ fro synnes: þat he lyue not now to þe de-
 sires of men: but to þe wille of god: þat is more
 of tyme in sleysche/ soþely þe tyme passide is ynowe to þe wille
 of heþen men to ben endide: þe whiche walkiden in lecche-
 ries: in desires: in myche drynkynge of wyn: ofte etynges:
 & unleuesful worschippyngis of ydolis: in whiche now þei ben
 aferde (on eche side) in which þing þei wondren: zou togedir
 not rennyng into þe same confusioñ of leccherie blasfe-
 mynge: þe whiche schulen not ȝyue resoun to hym þat is
 reedy to deme þe quycke & deade/ soþely for þis þing & to deade
 men it is euangelizide: þat þei be demyde/ soþely by men in
 sleysche: soþely þat þei lyue by god in spirit/ forsoþe þe ende
 of alle þingis schal neyze/ and so be zee prudent: & walke zee
 in preyers/ bifore alle þingis forsoþe hauyng charite eche to
 oþer in zou self algatis lastynge: for charite couerip þe mul-
 titude of synnes: holdynge hospitalite to gedir wiþ outen
 grucchyng/ eche man as he receyuyde grace: mynystryng it
 into eche oþer: as good dispenders of þe manyfolde grace of
 god/ ȝif any man spekip: speke he as þe wordis of god/ ȝif
 any man mynystriþ: as of þe vertue whiche god mynystriþ:
 þat god be honouride in alle þingis: by Ihu crist oure lorde/
 to whom is glorie & lordeschip: into worldis of worldis
 amen// ¶ Hoſte dere nyl zee go in pilgrymage in seruour þat
 is made to zou in temptacoñ: as any of newe bifalle to zou/
 but zee comunynge to þe passiouns of cōst haue ioye: þat & zee
 gladynge wiþ oute forþ: haue ioye in þe reuelacoñ of his glo-
 rie/ ȝif zee ben dispiside in þe name of crist: zee schulen be bles-
 side/ for þat þat is of þe glorie & vertue of god: & þe spirit þat is
 his: restiþ on zou/ forsoþe no man of zou suffre as a mansleer
 or

petre .i.

or þeeſt or curſer: or deſirer of oþer mennes þingis/ forſoþe zif
as a cōſten man: ſchame he not/ ſoþely glorifie he god in his
name/ for tyme is þat doom bygynne of goddis hous/ ſoþely
zif firſte of vs: what ende of hem þat bileuen not to þe goſpel/
and ſoþely zif a iuſte man vnnephe ſchal be ſauede: where ſchal
þe vnpiuous man & ſynner appeer? & ſo & þei þat ſuffren vp þe
wille of god · bitaken here ſoulis in good dedis: to þe ſeiþful
maker of nouzt//

C^m 5^m



Therefore I euen elder biſeche þe elder men þat ben
in zou · & I witneſſe of criſtis paſſioun · whiche &
compyner of þat glorie þat is to be ſchewide in tyme
to compynge: ſeede zee þe ſloc of god þat is in zou/
purueyinge not conſtreynnyngly: but wilfully vp god/ not for
grace (or loue) of ſoul wynnynge: but wilfully/ neþer as ha-
ynge lordſchip in þe clergie: but made fourme (or enſam-
ple) of þe ſloc · & of intwitte/ & whanne þe pryncce of ſcheperdes
ſchal appere: zee ſchulen receyue þe vnwelowable crowne of
glorie/ (or þat ſchal neuer fade)/ alſo zee zonge men: be zee
ſuget to eldre men/ forſoþe ſchewe zee al to gedit mekenelle/
for þe lorde wiþſtondeþ proude men: forſoþe he zyueth grace
to meke men/ þerfore be zee mekide vnder þe myzty honde of
god: þat he repte zou in þe day of viſitacōn/ zee caſtynge into
hym al zoure biſynneſſe: for to hym is cure of zou/ be zee ſobre
& wake zee · for zoure aduerſarie þe deuyl · as a rorynge li-
oune goiþ aboute: ſekyng whom he ſchal deuoure/ to whom
a zenſonde zee ſtrongely in ſeiþ: wytynge þe ſame paſſioun for
to be to þe ilke zoure breþerhede · þat is in þe worlde/ forſoþe
god of al glorie þat clepide into his euerlaſtyng glorie zou ſuf-
frynge a litil: he ſchal no more parfourme · conferme & make
ſadde/ to hym glorie & lordſchip into worldis of worldis
amen/ by ſiluan a ſeiþful broþer to zou as I deme · I wrote
ſhortely: biſcechyng & witneſſynge þis for to be verrey grace of
god · in whiche zee ſtonden/ þe chirche þat is gederide in ba-
biloyne

petre .2.

biloyne gretih zou wel: and markus my sone/ grete zee wel in
holy cosse/ grace to zou alle hat ben in crist amen//

ye secounde pistel of petre



Sumount petre seruaunt & apostle of Ihu
crist: to hem hat haue taken wih vs
euen myche feih in riztwelnesse of oure
god & saueour Ihu crist grace to zou &
pees be fulfild in he knowynge of oure
lorde Ihu crist/ howe alle pingis of his
godeliche vertue hat ben to list & pitee:
ben zouen to vs by he knowynge of

C^m 1^m

hym hat clepide vs for his owne glorie & vertu: by whom he
zaue to vs moste & precious bihestis: hat by hes pingis zee
schulen be made felowis of goddis kynde: sleinge he corrup-
cion of hat coueytise hat is in he worlde/ forsope zee vnderber-
ynge (or zyuyng) al cure: mynysterie in zoure feih: vertue
sophely in vertue: science (or kunnyng) in science: sophely ab-
stynence in abstynence/ forsope pacience in pacience sophely:
pitee in pitee sophely: loue of brotherhede: forsope in loue
of brotherhede: charite/ forsope zif hes ben wih zou & ouer-
comen (or ben plenteuouse): hei schulen not ordeyne zee
voyde: ne wih ouden fruyte in he knowyng of oure lorde Ihu
crist/ forsope to whom hes ben not reedy: he is blynde: & by
honde temptyng (or assaying) receyuyng forzetynghesse: of
he purgynge of his olde trespassis/ wherfore bretheren more
bisie zee: hat by good werkis zee make zoure clepyng & ches-
ynge certayne/ sophely zee doinge hes pingis: schulen not synne
any tyme: forsope hus he entrynge into euerlastynge kyng-
dome of oure lorde crist Ihu & saueour: schal be mynysride to
zou plenteuously for whiche ping I schal bigynne for to mo-
nestie

petre .2.

nesse zou euermore of hes pingis · & sohely I wole zou wy-
tynge & confermyde in presente truehe/ forsohe I deme iust how
longe I am in his tabernacle for to reyse zou in monestyng I
certeyn for he puttyng of · of my tabernacle is swyfter · vp hat
oure lorde Ihu crist has signyfiende to me/ forsohe I schal zyue
werke (or bisyne) & ofte for to haue zou astir my deyl · hat
zee do he mynde of hem/ sohely we not supnge unwise talis
haue made knowen to zou he vertue & prestience (or bifore
knowynge) of oure lorde Ihu crist · but made biholders of his
gretene) · sohely he takyng of god he fadir honoure & glorie
suche maner voyce sliden doune to hym fro he greet glorie ·
his is my louede sone in whom I haue pleside to me · here zee
hym/ and we herden his voyce brouzte to fro heuene · whanne
we weren wif hym in he holy hil/ and we haue a sadder worde
of he prophete to whiche zee zyuyng tente done wel · as to a
lanterne zyuyng lizte in a dirke (or mysty) place til he day
bygynne for to zyue lizt · & he day sterre sprynge in zoure her-
tis/ firste vnderstondynge his ping · hat eche prophecy of scrip-
ture is not made by propre (or owne) interpretacon/ forsohe
prophecie is not brouzte to by mannes wille · but he holy men
of god in spirit wif he holy goft spaken//

C^m 2^m



Forsohe her weren & false prophetis of he puple · as
& in zou schulen be maystris liers · hat schulen
bryng in sectis of perdicon · & hei denyen he ilke
lorde hat bouzt hem · aboue ledynge to hem self
hasty perdicon (or dampnacō) · & manye schulen tue here lec-
cheries · by whiche he wey of treu) schal be blasfemyde/ and
hei schulen marchaundise of zou in coueytise by feynede wor-
dis/ to whom doom now) sumtyme ceesly not · & he perdicon
of hem nappi) not/ forsohe zif god sparide not to aungels ·
but bitoke hem to be turmentide · drawen wif hondis of helle
into helle · for to be kepte into doom/ and sparide not to he
firste worlde · but kepte noe he eyzthe · bifore goer of ryztwel-
nesse ·

petre .2.

nessē · bryngynge in þe delyue · (or greet flood) · to þe worlde
of vnpitous men/ and he dryuynge into poudre þe cytees of
men of sodom & of men of gomor dampnyde by turnynge vp-
sodoune · puttynge ensauple of hem þat weren to doinge euyl
(or vnpitously)/ and delyueride iuste loth oppreside: fro þe
wronge of curside men & leccherouse conuersacō/ soþely in
syt & herynge he was iuste: dwellyng anentis hem/ þat fro
day into day turmentiden wiþ wickide werkis · a iuste soule/
þe lorde knewe for to delyuer pitouse men of temptacō: so-
þely for to kepe wickide men into þe day of doom · for to be
turmentide/ forsoþe more hem þat walken astir slepche in
coueytynge of vnclenesse · & dispisen lordeschippynge bolde ·
dreden not to brynge in sectis plesynge to hem · blasfemyng/
wher aungels whanne þei ben more in strengþe & vertue: be-
ren not azenes hem þe execrable (or curside) doom: þes soþely
as vnreasonable beestis kyndely into capcō (or takynge) · &
into deþ blasfemyng in þes þingis þat þei knowen not: schu-
len perische in here corrupcō receyuyng þe hire of vnryt:
welnesse/ gessynge þe voluptees of þe day: delices of defou-
lynge & of wemme/ wiþ delices flowynge in here fecstis do-
inge lecherie wiþ zou: haupnge eyzen ful of auoutrie & vncees-
ynge trespass deceyuyng vnstidfast soulis · haupnge þe herte
exerciside in coueytise · þe sones of cursynge · forsakynge þe
ryt weye erreden synge þe weye of baalam of holor · þe
whiche louede hire of wickidnesse/ soþely he had correccō (or
reprouynge) of his wodenesse a dourbe beest vnder 3ok speke-
ynge wiþ voyce of man: forþed þe vnwisdom of þe prophete/
þes ben wellis wiþ outen water · & cloudis (or mystis) dryuen
wiþ whirlynge wyndis · to whom þe picke myste of dirkenessis
is reseruyde/ soþely þei spekyng in pryde of vanyte: deceyuen
in desiris of slepche of lecherie: hem þat a litil scapen/ þe
whiche lyuynge in errour · byhotynge liberte (or freedom) to
hem · whanne þei ben seruauntis of corrupcō soþely of whom
any man is ouercomen: of hym & he is seruaunt/ forsoþe zif
men

petre .2.

men forsaakinge þe desoluyngis (or unclennesis) of þe worlde
in þe knowynge of oure lorde & saueour Jhu crist · effelome in-
wylapide in þes þen ouercomen: þe later þingis þen made to
þem worse þan þe former / soþey it was better to hem for to
not knowe þe wey of rightnesse: þan for to turne azen aftir
þe knowynge · fro þat holy maundement þat was bitaken to
hem / soþey þe ilke þing of verrey prouerbe bisel to hem · an
hounde turnyde azen to his doom (or castyng vp) · & a sowe
wachen in þe walowynge or stowe of cleve (or fen) //

C 3^e



D I write to you þis secounde pistle · in whiche I
sire youre cleer soul in monestynge to gedit · þat
zee be myndeful of þe wordis þat I bifore seyde of
holy prophetis · & of þe maundementis of holy apos-
tlis of þe lorde saueour / firste witynge þis þing · þat in þe laste
dayes illusours (or scornors or deceyuours) · schulen come in
deceyt · goinge aftir here owne couepntyngeis seyinge: where
is bihest: or þe comynge of hym / forsoþe siþ þe faderis sley-
ten · so alle þingis lasten fro þe bygynnyng of creature /
soþely it dareþ hem willynge þis þing · þat heuenes weren bi-
fore · & þe erþe of water · & by water beinge (or stondynge to
gedet) by goddis worde: by whiche þingis þat ilke worlde
clenside · þanne perischide forsoþe þe heuenes þat nowe ben ·
& þe erþe · by þe same worde putte azen · ben kepte to sijt ·
into þe day of doom & perdicō of vnpytous men / forsoþe zee
moste dere · one þing dare you nouzt (or be not unknowen) ·
for one day anentis god · as a housande zeeris: & a housande
zeer as one day / þe lorde tarieth not his bihest as summen ges-
sen: but he doih paciently for you · not willynge any for to
perische: but alle for to turne azen to penaunce / forsoþe þe
day of oure lorde schal come as a þeef: in whiche heuenes wiþ
greet birre (or feertsnes) schulen passe / soþely elementis schu-
len be dissoluyde by heete / forsoþe þe erþe & alle werkis þat ben
in it · schulen be brente / þerfore whanne alle þingis schulen
be

petre .2.

be to ben dissoluyde: what maner men bihouep it zou for to
 ben in holy luynges pytees: abidyng & hizzynge into þe com-
 ynge of þe day of oure lorde Jhu c̃st: by whom heuenes bren-
 nyng schulen be dissoluyde: & elementis by brennyng (or
 heet of fyr) schulen fayle/ soþely we abiden by his bihestis
 newe heuenes & newe erþe: in whiche ryztwesnesse dwelliþ/ for
 whiche þing zee moſte dere abidyng þes þingis: biſie for to
 be founden to hym in pees: vntpottide & vndefoulide/ and
 deme zee þe longe abidyng of oure lorde: zoure helpe: as &
 oure moſte dere broþer poul wroot to zou: by wiſdom zouen
 to hym/ as & in alle epiſtels ſpekynge in hem of þes þingis:
 in whiche ben ſumme harde þingis in vnderſtondyng: þe
 whiche vnwiſe (or vntauzte) & vnſtable men: deprauen: as
 & oþer ſcriptures to here owne perdicō/ þerfore zee breþeren
 biſore wityng: kepe zou ſelf: leſte zee ouerled (or deceyuede)
 by errour of vnwiſe men: falle away fro zoure owne ſadneſſe/
 forloþe ware zee in þe grace & knowynge of oure lorde Jhu
 c̃st: & oure ſaueour/ to hym glorie & nowe & into þe day of
 euerlaſtyngneſſe// Amen

þe firſte piſſel of Ioon



Whiche þing was fro þe bigynnyng: C^m 1^m
 whiche we herden: whiche we ſizen
 wiþ oure yzen: whiche we bihilden: &
 oure handiſtretiden to gedir (or touch-
 iden) of þe worde of liſt: & þe liſt is
 ſchewide/and we ſizen & we witneſſen:
 & tellen to zou euerlaſtyng liſt þat was
 anentis þe fadir: and apperide to vs/
 þerfore þat þing þat we ſizen & herden we tellen to zou: þat
 & zee haue ſelowſchip wiþ vs: & oure ſelowſchip be wiþ þe
 fadir

Joon .i.

sadir & his sone Jhū crist/ and his þing we witen to zou:
 þat zee haue ioye · & zoure ioye be ful/ and his is þe tellynge
 þat we herden of hym & tellen to zou/ for god is lizt: & any
 dirkeness ben not in hym/ zif we schulen seye · for we haue
 selowelschip wiþ hym · & we wanderen in dirkeness · we lizen
 & we done not treuþe/ soþely zif we walken in lizt · as & he is
 in lizte: we haue selowelschip to gedit/ and þe blood of Jhū his
 sone: clenst vs fro al synne/ zif we schulen seye for we hane
 not synne: we oure self deceyuen vs · & treuþe is not in vs/ zif
 we knowelechen oure synnes: he is seifful & iust · þat he for-
 zgyue to vs oure synnes · & clense vs fro al wickidnesse/ zif we
 schulen seye for we haue not synned: we maken hym a liet:
 & his worde is not in vs//

C^m 2^m



M litil sones I write to zou þes þingis þat zee synne
 not/ but & zif any man schal synne: we haue avo-
 ket anentis þe sadir Jhū crist iust · & he is helpynge
 for oure synnes/ soþely not onely: but also for of al
 þe worlde/ and his þing we witen for we haue knowen hym:
 zif we kepen his comaundementis/ he þat seif hym for to haue
 knowen god · & kepiþ not his comaundementis: is a liet &
 treuþe is not in hym/ forsoþe who kepiþ his worde: verreyly
 in hym is parfite charite/ in his þing we witen for we ben in
 hym: zif we schulen be parfite in hym/ he þat seif hym for to
 dwelle in hym: & he owiþ for to walke as he walkide/ moke
 dere I write to zou not a newe maundement · but þe olde
 maundement · þat zee hadden fro þe bygyngynge/ þe olde
 maundement is þe worde þat zee herden/ eftesone I write to
 zou a newe maundement þat is trewe · & in hym & in zou:
 for dirkeness passen · & verrey lizt nowe schineþ/ he þat seif
 hym · for to ben in lizt & hatiþ his broþer: is in dirkeness til
 to zit/ he þat loueþ his broþer dwelliþ in lizt: & sclaundre is
 not in hym/ soþely he þat hatiþ his broþer: is in dirkeness ·
 & in dirkeness wandriþ: & woot not whidir he goiþ · for
 dirkeness

Joon .i.

dirkeness hane blyndide his yzen/ litil sones I write to zou *
 for youre synnes ben forzouen to zou * for his name/ faderis
 I write to zou * for zee haue knowen hym pat is fro he bigyn-
 nyng/ zonge men I write to zou * for zee hane ouercomen he
 wickide/ I write to zou infauntis (or zonge children): for zee
 hane knowen he fadir/ I write to zou zonge men (or of mydil
 age): for zee ben stronge * & he worde of god dwellih in zou *
 & ouercamen he wickide/ ¶ Apl zee loue he worlde: neher ho
 pingis pat ben in he worlde/ zif any man loueh he worlde:
 he charite of he fadir is not in hym/ for whi alle ping pat is
 in he worlde is coueytise of flesche & coueytise of yzen * &
 pride of lijf: whiche is not of he fadir * but it is of he worlde/
 and he worlde schal passe: & he coueytise of it/ sohely he pat
 doih he wille of god: dwellih into wiþ ouden ende/ my litil
 sones he lasse is/ and as zee haue herde for antecrist comeþ:
 now many antecristis ben made/ wher of we witen: for it is
 he lasse houre/ hei wenten forþ fro vs: but hei weren not of
 vs/ for whi zif hei hadden ben of vs: sohely hei hadden dwelte
 wiþ vs/ but hei pat ben knowen for hei ben not of vs/ but zee
 haue vnccion of he holy (goste): & haue knowen alle pingis/
 I wrote not to zou * as to men unknowynge treuþe: but as
 to knowynge it * & for eche leesynge is of treuþe/ who is a lier:
 no but his pat denyeþ for Jh̄c is not crist * his is antecrist: pat
 denyeþ he fadir & he sone/ sohely eche pat denyeþ he sone ne-
 her haþ he fadir/ forsoþe he pat knowelechiþ he sone haþ & he
 fadir/ pat ping pat zee herden fro he bygynnyng: dwelle in
 zou/ for zif it schal dwelle in zou he whiche zee herdenat he bi-
 gynnynge: & ze schulen dwelle in he sone & he fadir/ and his
 is he azenbihest pat he bihizte to vs euerlastyng lijf/ I wrote
 þes pingis to zou: of hem pat deceyuen zou/ and he anoynt-
 ynge he whiche zee receyueden of hym: dwelle in zou/ and
 zee hane not nede pat any man teche zou: but as his anoynt-
 ynge techiþ zou alle pingis/ and it is trewe: & it is not les-
 ynge/ and as he tauzte zou: dwelle zee in hym/ and now zee
 litil

Joon .i.

litil sones dwelle zee in hym: pat whan he schal appeer · w
haue triste · & be not confoundide of hym in his compnge/ zif
zee witen for he is iuste · wite zee for & eche pat doih rixtwel
nes · is borne of hym//

C^m 3^m



Szee what maner charite he fadir zaeue to vs pat we
be nampde he sones of god · & be/ for his ping he
worlde knewe not vs: for it knewe not hym/ moſte
dere nowe we ben he sones of god: & zit it apper
ide not what we schulen be/ we witen for whanne he schal ap
pere: we schulen be liche to hym · for we schulen ſe hym as he
is/ and eche man pat haþ his hope in hym: makih hym ſelf
holý · as & he is holý/ eche man pat doih ſynne: doþ & wickid
neſſe · & ſynne is wickidneſſe/ and zee witen/ for he apperide
pat he ſchulde do atwey ſynnes: & ſynne is not in hym/ eche
man pat dwellih in hym: ſynneþ not/ and eche pat ſynneþ ſeeþ
not hym: ne knewe hym/ litil sones no man deceyue zou/ he
pat doih rixtwelneſſe: is iuſte · as & he is iuſte/ he pat doih
ſynne: is of he deuyl · for he deuyl ſynneþ at he bigynnynge/
in his ping he ſone of god apperide pat he vndo he werkis of
he deuyl/ eche man pat is borne of god: doih not ſynne · for he
ſeed of god dwellih in hym · & he may not ſynne for he is borne
of god/ in his ping he sones of god ben knowen/ and he sones
of he ſende/ eche man pat is not iuſte: is not of god · & he pat
loueþ not his broþer/ for his is he tellynge pat zee herden at
he bygynnynge: pat zee loue eche oþer/ not as caym pat was
of euyl: & ſlowz his broþer/ and for what ping ſlowe he hym?
for his werkis weren euyl? ſohely his broþeris iuſte/ ¶ Bre
þeren nyl zee wondren: zif he worlde hatih zou/ we witen
for we ben tranſlatide fro deþ to liſ: for we louen breþeren/
he pat loueþ not dwellih in deþ/ eche man pat hatih his bro
þer: is a manqueller & zee witen for eche manqueller haþ
not euerlaſtynge liſ dwellynge in hym/ in his ping we haue
knowen he charite of god: for he puttide his ſoule (or liſ) for
vs:

Joan .i.

vs: & we owen for to putte (our) soulis for bretheren/ he þat
 schal haue þe substaunce of þis worlde: & schal se his broþer
 for to haue nede: & schal close his entaylis fro hym: how
 dwelliþ þe charite of god in hym? my litil sones loue we not
 in worde neþer in tunge: but in treuþe & werke/ in þis þing
 we knowen for we ben of treuþe: & in his siȝte we monestien
 oure hertis/ for zif oure hertis schal reproue vs (or vndir-
 nymme: god is more þan oure herte: & knewe alle þingis/
 moſte dere zif oure herte schal not reproue vs: we haue triſte
 in god/ and what euer we schulen are: we schulen receyue of
 hym: for we kepen his comaundementis: & we done þo þin-
 gis þat ben plesaunt bifore hym/ and þis is þe comaunde-
 ment of hym: þat we bileue in þe name of his sone Ihū c̄ſt: &
 loue eche oþer: as he ȝaue heſte to vs/ and he þat kepith his
 maundementis: dwelliþ in hym & he in hym/ and in þis þing
 we witen for he dwelliþ in vs of þe spirit of whom he ȝaue
 to vs//



Moſte dere nyl ȝee bileue to eche spirit: but proue ȝee
 spiritis zif þei ben of god/ for many falſe prophetis
 wenten oute into þe worlde/ in þis þing þe spirit
 of god is knowen/ eche spirit þat knowelechiþ criſt
 for to haue comen in fleysche: is of god/ & eche spirit þat diſ-
 ſolupþ (or fordois) Ihū: is not of god/ and þis antecriſt of
 whom ȝee herden: for he cometh/ and riȝt now he is in þe
 worlde/ ȝee litil sones ben of god/ and ȝee haue ouercomen
 hym: for he þat is in ȝou is more: þan he þat in þe worlde/
 þei ben of þe worlde: þerfore þei ſpeken of þe worlde: &
 worlde heriþ hem/ we ben of god/ he þat knewe god heriþ vs/
 he þat is not of god: heriþ not vs/ in þis þing we knowen þe
 spirit of treuþe: & þe spirit of erroure/ moſte dere loue we to-
 gedir: for charite is of god/ and eche man þat loueth his bro-
 þer is borne of god & knowiþ god/ he þat loueth not haþ not
 charite: neþer knewe god: for god is charite/ In þis þing þe
 charite

C^m 4^m

Joon .i.

charite of god apperide in vs for god sente his one bigote
 sone into þe worlde: þat we loue by hym/ in þis þing is cha-
 rite: not as we hadden louede god: but for he firste loude us
 & sente his sone helppinge for oure synnes/ ¶ see moſte dere ȝi
 god louede vs: & we omen for to loue eche oþer/ no man ſiȝ
 euer god/ ȝif we louen to gedir: god dwellig in us & þe cha-
 rite of hym is parfite in vs/ in þis þing we knowen for we
 dwellen in hym & he in vs: for of his ſpirit he ȝaue to vs & we
 ſiȝen & witneſſen: for he ſadir ſente his sone ſauour of þe
 worlde/ who euer ſchal knowelache for ih̄c is þe sone of god
 & we haue knowen & bileuen to þe charite þat god hab in vs/
 god is charite/ & he þat dwellig in charite: dwellig in god &
 god in hym/ in þis þing is þe parfite charite of god wiþ vs
 þat we haue triſte in þe day of doom/ for as he is: & we ben in
 þis worlde/ drede is not in charite: but parfite charite: ſendip
 oute drede: for drede hab peyne/ forſoþe he þat dredip: is not
 parfite in charite/ þerfore loue we god: for he former louede
 vs/ ȝif any man ſchal ſeye for I loue god & ſchal hate his
 broþer: he is a liet/ ſoþely he þat louep not his broþer whiche
 he ſeep: howe may he loue god whom he ſeep not? & we haue
 þis precepte of god: þat he þat louep god: loue & his broþer//

C 5



The man þat bileueþ for Ih̄c is c̄ſt: is borne of
 god, and eche man þat louep hym þat gendrip:
 louep hym þat is borne of hym/ in þis þing we
 knowen for we louen þe children of god: whanne
 we louen god & done his maundementis/ ſoþely þis is charite
 of god: þat we kepe þe maundementis & his maundementis
 ben not greuous/ for alle þing þat is borne of god: ouercomeþ
 þe worlde/ and þis is þe victorie þat ouercomeþ þe worlde:
 oure ſeiþ/ forſoþe who is it þat ouercomeþ þe worlde: no but
 he þat bileueþ for Ih̄c is þe sone of god/ þis is Ih̄c criſt þat
 came by water & bloode/ not in water onely: but in water &
 blood/ and þe ſpirit is he þat witneſſep/ for criſt is treuþe/
 for

Joon .i.

for þre ben þat zyuen witnessynge in heuene · þe fadir þe worde (or sone) & þe holy goste: & þes þre ben one/ and þre ben þat zyuen witnessynge in erþe: þe spirit water & blood · & þes þre ben one/ zif we receyuen witnessynge of men: þe witnessynge of god is more/ for þis is þe witnessynge of god þat is more: for he witnesside of his sone/ he þat bileueþ into þe sone of god: haþ witnessynge of god in hym/ he þat bileueþ not to þe sone · makith hym a lier · for he bileueþ not in þe witnessynge þat god witnesside of his sone · þis is þe witnessynge · for god zawe to vs euerlastyng lijf: & þis lijf is in his sone/ he þat haþ þe sone: haþ & lijf/ he þat haþ not þe sone of god: haþ not lijf// ¶ I write to zou þes þingis: þat zee wite for zee haue euerlastyng lijf: þe whiche bileuen in þe name of god: dis sone/ and þis is þe tristie þat we haue to god · for what euer þing we schulen are vþ his wille: he schal here vs/ and we witen for he herith vs: what euer þing we schulen are/ we witen for we haue þe aringis: whiche we aren of hym/ he þat woot his broþer for to synne a synne not to þe deþ: are he · & lijf schal be zouen to hym · synnyng not to þe deþ/ þer is a synne to deþ/ not for it I seye þat any preye/ eche wickidnesse is synne: & þer is synne to deþ/ we witen for eche man þat is borne of god: synneþ not/ but þe generacon of god kepith hym: & þe wickide touchith hym not/ we witen for we ben of god: & al þe worlde is putte in wickide/ and we witen for þe sone of god came & cloþide slepche for cause of vs · & suffride & roos azen fro deade men · & took vs to: & zawe to vs witte þat we knowe verrey god · & be in þe verrey sone of hym · þis is verrey god: & euerlastyng lijf/ litil sones kepe zou fro simulacris (or co-ueytise)//

ye secounde pistel of Ioon

C^m 1^m



The eldre (man) to þe chosen lady & to
 hire children: þe whiche I loue in
 treuþe/ and not I al one: but & alle
 men þat knewen treuþe/ for þe treuþe
 þat dwelliþ in zou: & wiþ zou schal be
 into wiþ outen ende/ grace be wiþ zou.
 mercy & pees of god þe fadir: & of Ihu
 crist þe sone of þe fadir: in treuþe &
 charite/ I ioyzede ful myche: for I sonde of þi sones goinge
 in treuþe: as we receyueden maundement of þe fadir/ and
 nowe I preye þee lady: not as wrytynge a newe maundement
 to þee: but þat þat we hadden at þe bygynnyng: þat we loue
 eche oþer/ and þis is charite: þat we walke vp his maunde-
 mentis/ soþely þis is þe comaundement þat as zee herden at
 þe bygynnyng: in hym walke zee/ for many deceyuours wen-
 ten oute into þe worlde: whiche knowelechen not Ihu crist for
 to haue come in flesche/ þis is deceyuour & antecrist/ se zee
 zoure self: lest zee leesen þe þingis þat zee haue wrouztes:
 but þat zee receyue ful mede/ wityng þat eche man þat goiþ
 alweye & dwelliþ not in þe techynge of crist: haþ not god/ he þat
 dwelliþ in þe techynge: haþ & þe sone & þe fadir/ zif any man
 cometh to zou: & bryngiþ not þis techynge: nyl zee receyue
 hym into hous: neþer zee schulen seye to hym heyl/ soþely he
 þat seiþ to hym hayle: comuneþ wiþ his euyl werkis/ lo I bi-
 fore seyde to zou: þat zee be not confoundide in þe day of oure
 lorde Ihu crist/ I haupng mo þingis for to write to zou:
 wolde not by parchemyn & yncke/ soþely I hope me to com-
 ynge to zou: & speke mouþe to mouþe: þat zoure ioye be ful/
 þe sones (or douztris) of þi suster chosen greten þee wel/ þe
 grace of god wiþ þee amen//

þe

ye priddde pistel of Ioon



He eldre man to gayus moste dere: whom C^m 1^m

I loue in treuþe/ moste dere of alle þingis I make preper · þee for to entre & fare welsumly: as þi soule doiþ welsumly/ I ioyzede ful gretely · breþeren comynge & witnessynge berynge to þi treuþe: as þou walkist in treuþe/ I haue not more grace of þes þingis:

þan þat I here my sones for to walke in treuþe/ moste dere þou doiþ feiþfully: what euer þou wirchist into breþeren/ & þis þing into pilgrymes: whiche zilden witnessynge to þi charite in sizte of þe chirche: whom þou wel doinge ledist forþ worþily to god/ soþely for his name þei wenten forþ: no þing takynge of heþen men/ þerfore we owen for to receyue suche maner (men): þat we be euen wirchers of treuþe/ I schulde haue write parauenture to þe chirche: but þis diotrepes þat loueþ for to bere primacie in hem · receyueþ not vs/ for þis þing zif I schal come: I schal monest his werkis whiche he doiþ garrynge (or chydyng) into vs/ wiþ euyl wordis/ and as þes þingis sufficien not to hym · neþer he receyueþ breþeren · & forbediþ hem þat receyuen: & castiþ oute of þe chirche/ moste dere nyl þou sue euyl þing: but þat þat is gode þing/ he þat doiþ wel · is of god/ he þat doiþ euyl seeþ hym not/ witnessynge is zolden to demetrie of alle men: & of treuþe it self/ but & we beren witnessynge/ and þou hast knowen: for our witnessynge is trewe/ I had many þingis for to write to þee: but I wolde not write to þee by incke & penne/ forsoþe I hope anone for to se þee: & we schulen speke mouþe to mouþe/ pees to þee/ frendes greten þee wel/ grete þou frendis by name//

RR

þe

ye pistil of Jude.

C^m 1^m



Udas þe seruaunt of Ihu crist broþer
forsoþe of James · to þes louede þat
ben in god þe fadir & of Ihu crist kepte
& clepide: mercy to zou & pees & charite
þe fulfildē/ moſte dere I makynge al
byſynes of writynge to zou of zoure
comoune helpe · had nede for to write
to zou · preyynge for to ſtriue vpon þe
ſeiþ ones bitaken of ſeyntis/ ſoþely ſummen pryueli entre-
den · þat ſum tyme weren biſore writen into þis doom/ vn-
pitous men ouerturnynge þe grace of oure god into lechē-
rie · & denyinge þe al one lordſchip · & oure lorde Ihu crist/
ſoþely I wole to gedit moneste zou: witynge ones alle þingis/
for ihc ſauynge his puple of þe lande of egipte: þe ſecounde
tyme loſte hem þat bileueden not/ ſoþely aungels þat kepten
not his pryncchode · but forſoken his hous: þe reſerupde into
doom of greet god · in euerlaſtyngē bondis vnder dirkenesse/
as ſodom & gomor · & nyȝ cooſtide cytees on liche maner
doinge fornycacon · & goinge aweye aftir oþer fleysche: ben
made enſauple · ſuſteynynge peyne of euerlaſtyngē ſijr/ alſo
& þes þat defoulen ſoþely þe fleysche · forſoþe diſpiſen lorde-
ſchypynge: forſoþe blaſfemen mageſte/ whanne mychael þe
archaungel diſputynge wiȝ þe deuyl · ſtofe of moyſes body:
he was not hardy for to ȝyue doom of blaſfemye: but ſeyde ·
þe lorde comaundide to þee/ fforſoþe þes blaſfemen what euer
þingis þei ſoþely vnknewen/ ſoþely what euer þingis þei hane
knownen · kyndely as doumbe beestis: in þes þei ben corrupte//

Jude



W to hem pat wenten þe weye of cayme · & by er- C^m 2^m
 rour of balaam for mede ben sched oute · & per-
 ischiden in þe azenseyinge of chore/ þes ben in here
 metis · filþes (or defoulynges) feestynge to gedir/
 wiþ outen drede feedynge hem self/ cloudis wiþ outen water
 borne aboute of wyndes · heruest trees wiþ outen fruyte ·
 twyes deade drawen vp by þe roote · wawes of þe wilde (or
 wood) see · froþinge oute here confusiouns · errynge sterres (or
 fallynge doune) to whom þe tempest of dirkeness is kepte
 into wiþ outen ende/ forsoþe enos þe seueneþ fro adam pro-
 peciede of þes · seyinge/ lo þe lorde comen in his holy hou-
 sande · for to deme azenes alle men · & for to reprove alle vn-
 pitouse men · & alle þe werkis of þe unpitoe of hem · by whiche
 þei diden unpitously · & of alle harde þingis þat unpitous syn-
 ners hane spoken azenes god/ þes ben grucchers pleyynyng (or
 ful of pleyntis) wandrynge vp here desires/ and þe mounþ of
 hem spekith pride · wondrynge (or worschippynge) persones by
 cause of wyunnyng/ forsoþe zee moste dere · be zee myndeful
 of þe wordis · whiche ben bifore seyde of apostlis of oure lorde
 Ihu crist/ þe whiche seyde to zou · for in þe laste tymes þere
 schulen come scorneris · wandrynge vp here desiris · not in
 pitee/ þes ben þe whiche departen hem self beestly · not hau-
 ynge spirit/ forsoþe zee moste dere aboue bildynge zoure self
 to zoure moste holy feiþ · in þe holy gost preyynge · kepe zoure
 self in þe loue of god · abidyng þe mercy of oure lorde Ihu
 crist · into lijf euerlastynge/ and soþely reprove zee þes men
 dempde · forsoþe saue zee hem · raupschynge of þe sijt/ soþely do
 zee mercy to oþer in drede of god · hatynge & þe ilke defoulide
 coot · þe whiche is slepshely/ forsoþe to hym þat is myzty for
 to kepe to gedir zou wiþ outen synne · & for to ordeyne bifore
 þe sijt of his glorie zou vnwemmyde · in gladyng (or ioying)
 wiþ outen forþ · in þe comynge of oure lorde Ihu crist · to god
 al one oure sayerour · by ihu oure lorde · glorie & magnify-
 inge

Jude

inge · empire (or grete lordeschip) · & power bifore alle worl-
dis · & now into worldis of worldis amen

ye pistil to romayns.

C^m 1^m



Dul seruaunt of Ihu crist · clepide apos-
tle · departide into he euuangelie of god ·
he whiche he bihizte bifore by his pro-
phetis in he holy scriptures of his sone ·
he whiche is made to hym of he seed of
dauid astir sleysche · he whiche is pre-
destynate or before ordeynede by grace ·
he sone of god in vertue · astir he spirit
of halowynge of he azen risynge of deade men · of Ihu crist
oure lorde · by whom we haue receyuyde grace & apostilhedede
(or state of apostle) · to obersche to he seif in alle folkis for his
name · in whiche & zee ben clepide of Ihu crist/ to alle pat ben
at rome · he louede of god clepide holy · grace to zou & pees of
god oure fadir · & of he lorde Ihu crist// ¶ firste sopely I do
paukyngis to my god by Ihu crist for zou alle/ for oure seif is
schewe in al he worlde/ forsope god is a witnesse to me · to
whom I serue in my spirit · in he gospel of his sone · for wif-
outen ceesynge I make mynde of zou euermore in my preyers ·
zif by any maner astirwarde · sumtyme I haue esy (or spedy)
weye in he wille of god · of comynge to zou/ forsope I desire
for to se zou · pat I zyue to zou sum þing of spiritual grace to
zou to be consermyde · pat is to seye for to be confortide to ge-
dir in zou · be pat seif pat is to gedir zoure & myn (or of sche
to oþer)/ sopely breheren I nyl zou for to vnknowe · pat ofte I
purpose for to come to zow · & I am forbeden to zit pat I haue
sum fruyte in zou · as & in oþer folkis/ to grekis & barbaryns
(or heþen men) to wisemen & to vnwisemen I am dettoure · so
pat

to romayns

þat is in me is reedy for to euangelize & to þou þat ben at
 rome/forsoþe I schame not þe gospel/ for it is of þe vertue of
 god into helpe to eche man byleuyng: to þe iewe firste & to
 þe greek/ soþely þe riztwesnesse of God is schewide in it of
 seif into seif: as it is writen/forsoþe a iuste man liueþ of seif/
 forsoþe þe wrappe of god is schewide fro heuene vpon al vn-
 pitee & vnrihtwesnesse of þo men þat wiþholden (or holden
 abak) þe treuþe of god in vnrihtwesnesse/for þat þatis knowen
 of god: is schewide (or made open) to hem/ forsoþe god schew-
 ide to hem * for þe vnuyfible þingis of hym * of þe creature of
 þe worlde * by þo þingis þat ben made * vnderstonnen ben bi-
 holden * & þe euerlastyng vertue of hym & þe godhede: so þat
 þei ben vnercusable/ for whanne þei hadden god: þei glorifie-
 den not as god * or diden þankyngis/ but þei vanyschiden in
 here þouztis: & þe vnwise herte of hem is dirkide (or made
 dirke)/soþely þei sepyng hem self for to be wisemen: ben made
 foolis/ and þei chaungiden þe glorie of god vncorruptible *
 (þat may not die ne be pepride): into þe lickenesse of an ymage
 or corruptible man * & of briddis & of foure footide beestis * &
 of serpentis/ for whiche þing god bitoke hem into þe desires of
 here herte into vncleennesse: þat þei punysche wiþ wrongis
 (or dispitis) * here bodies in hem self/þe whiche men chaungi-
 den þe treuþe of god into leesyng * & herieden & serueden to a
 creature: rater þan to þe creatoure (þat is maker of nouzt) þat
 is bleside into worldis (or wiþ outen ende) amen (or so be it)/
 þerfore god bitoke hem into passiouns of euyl fame (or schen-
 schip)/for whi þe wymmen of hem chaungiden þe kyndely vse
 into þat vse þat is azenes kynde/ also forsoþe & þe malis (or
 men) * þe kyndely vse of wymmen forsaken: brennedden in here
 desiris togedir * malis into malis wirchyng filþehede * & re-
 ceuyng in hem self þe mede (or hire) þat bihouede of here er-
 rou/ and as þei proueden not for to haue god in knowyng:
 god bitoke hem into a reprouable wit: þat þei do þo þingis þat
 accorden not (or bisemen not) * hem fulfilde wiþ al wickidnesse *
malice *

to romayns

malice · fornyeacōn · coueytise · waywarnesse · ful of enuye ·
man sleingis · stryfe · gyle · euyl wille · pryuey bachbiters (or
sowers of discorde) · detractours (or open bachbiters) · hateful to
god · wrongeful dispisers · proude hyze (ouermeasure) synders
of euyl þingis · not obeschynge to sadir & modir · vnwise · vn-
couenable in berynge wip oute forþ · wip ouden affeccon (or
loue) · wip ouden bonde of pees · wip ouden mercy/ þe whiche
whanne þei hadden knowe þe ryztwelnesse of god vnderstoden
for þei þat done suche þingis · ben worþi of deþ/ not onely þei
þat done þo þingis · but also þei þat consenten to men doinge//

C^m 2^m



Or whiche þing þou art vnexcusable · þou eche man
þat demest/ soþely in what þing þou demest anoter
man · þou condempnest þi self/ forsoþe þou dost þe
same þingis · whiche þou demest/ soþely we witen
for þe doom of god is vptreue into hem þat done suche þingis/
gestiþ þou man forsoþe þat demest hem þat done suche þingis ·
& þou doste hem · for þou schal ascape þe doom of god/ wher
þou dispisest þe riches of his godenesse · & patience & longe
abidyng · vnknewest þou for þe benygnyte (or good wille)
of god leedip þee to penaunce/ forsoþe astir þin hardenesse &
vnpentaunte herte · þou tresourist to þee wrappe into þe day
of wrappe & schewyng of þe ryztful doom of god · þat schal
zilde to eche man astir his werkis/ soþely to hem þat vp pa-
cience of goode werke · glorie & honoure & vncorruptcon · to hem
seekyng euerlastyng lijf/ forsoþe to hem þat ben of strife & þat
assenten not treuþe · but bileuen to wickidnesse · wrappe & in-
dignacon · tribulacōn & angwische into eche soule of man wirch-
yng euyl · of Jewe firste & of greke/ soþely glorie & honoure
& pees to eche man wirchyng good þing · to Jewe firste & to
greke/ for accepcon of persones (þat is to putte one bifore ano-
þer wip ouden deserte) · it is anentis god/ forsoþe who euer syn-
nen wip ouden lawe · schulen perische wip oute lawe/ and who
euer in þe lawe synnen · schulen be demyde by þe lawe/ forsoþe
þe

to romayns

he herers of lawe ben not iuste anentis god: but he doers of
 lawe schulen be made iuste/ forsoþe whanne heþen men þat
 haue not lawe done kyndely (or by strengþe of kynde) þo þingis
 þat ben of þe lawe · þei not haupnge suche maner lawe · ben
 lawe to hem self: þat schewen þe werke of lawe writen in here
 hertis/ þe conscience of hem zildynge to hem a witnessynge ·
 & bitwixe hem self of þouztis accusynge · or also defendynge ·
 in þe day whan god schal deme þe pryuey þingis of men: by
 my gospel by Ihu crist/ forsoþe zif þou art namyde a iewe &
 residist in þe lawe · & hast glorie in god · & hast knowe his wille ·
 & þou lernyde by þe lawe · prouest more profitable þingis ·
 tristenyt þi self for to be a leder of blynde men · þe lizte of hem
 þat ben in dirkeness · a techet of vnwise men · a mayster of
 zonge children · haupnge þe fourme of science (or kunnyng) · &
 of treuþe in þe lawe/ þerfore þou þat techist anoper · techist not
 þi self: þou þat prechist to not stele: stelest/ þou þat seyst to not
 do lecherie: doste lecherie/ þou þat wlatist ydolis (or mau-
 metis): doste sacrilegie (þat is þeste of holy þingis)/ þou þat
 gloriest in þe lawe by brekynge of þe lawe · unworschipist (or
 dispisist) god/ forsoþe þe name of god by þou is blasfemyde
 amonge heþen men: as it is writen/ soþely circumcision pro-
 fitiþ: zif þou kepe þe lawe/ soþely zif þou be a trespassour of þe
 lawe: þi circumcision is made prepucie (or custom of heþen
 men)/ þerfore zif prepucie (or custom of heþen men) kepe riz-
 twesse of þe lawe: wher his prepucie schal not berettide into
 circumcision? and þe prepucie þat is of kynde fulfyllynge þe
 lawe · schal deme þee þat by lettre & circumcision art trespas-
 our of þe lawe/ forsoþe not he þat is a iewe in oppyn · ne þe
 circumcision þat is in þe fleysche in oppyn: but he þat is a iewe
 in hidde · & þe circumcision of herte in spirit · not in lettre:
 whos prepsynge is not of men: but of god//

Therefore

to romayns

C^m 3^m



Therefore what is more to a iewe: or what profite of
circumcision: myche: by al maner/ firste sohely for
he spekyngis of god: ben bitaken to hem/ what
sohely zif summe of hem bileueden not: wher he
vnbileue of hem hap aboydide he seiþ of god: fer be it/ forsoþe
god is trewe (or soþfast): sohely eche man a lier (or vnstable)
as it is writen/ þat þou be iustified (or founden trewe) in þi
wordis: & ouercome whanne þou art demyde/ forsoþe zif oure
wickidnesse comende he riztwesnes of god: what schulen we
sepe: wher god is wickide þat bryngiþ in wrap: vp man I
sepe/ fer be it/ ellis howe schal god deme þis worlde: forsoþe
zif treuþe of god hap aboundide (or ben plentiuous) in my leef-
ynge into þe glorie of hym: what & zit am I demede as a syn-
ner: and not as we be blasfemyde: & as summe seyn vs for to
sepe/ do we euyl þingis þat gode þingis come: whos dampna-
con is iuste/ wheþer þerfore passen we hem: nay: sohely we
hane schewide by skyle: Jewes & grekis alle for to be vndir
synne: as it is writen/ for þere is not any man iuste: þer is not
a man vndirfondynge: neþer seekynge god/ alle bowiden
awepe: to gedir þei ben made vnprofitable: þer is not þat doiþ
good þing: þer is not til to one/ a sepulcre openynge is þe
prote of hem: wiþ here tungis þei diden gylngely (or treche-
rouslly): þe venym of eddris (þat is clepide) aspis: vndre here
lippis/ þe mouþ of whom is ful of cursynge (or wariynge) &
bittirnesse: þe feet of hem (ben) swifte to scheed oute blood/
contricon (or defoulynge to gedir) & infelicite (or cursidnesse)
in þe weyes of hem: & þei knewen not þe weye of pees: þe drede
of god is not bifore here yzen/ forsoþe we witen for what euer
þingis þe lawe spekiþ it spekiþ to hem þat ben in þe lawe/ þat
eche mouþ be stoppide & eche worlde be made sujet to god: for
of þe werkis of lawe: eche fleytsche (þat is mankynde) schal not
be iustificede bifore hym/ forsoþe by þe lawe is knowynge of
synne/ forsoþe nowte wiþouten þe lawe: þe riztwesnesse of god
is

to romayns

is schewide witnesside of þe lawe & prophetis/ soþely þe rízt-
wesnesse of god is by feiþ of Ihu crist · on alle þat bileuen into
hym/ forsoþe þer is not diffynnycon (or departyng)/ for alle
men synned · & hane nede to þe glorie of god · þei iustifiede
frely by his grace: by þe redempcon (or azenbyng) þat is
in Ihu crist · whom god purposide (or ordeynyde) an helper
by feiþ in his blood to þe schewyng of his ríztwesnes · for re-
myssion of bifore going synnes · in þe sustentacon (or beryng
vp) of god · to þe schewyng of his ríztwesnesse in his tyme ·
þat he be iuste & iustifyng hym · þat is of þe feiþ of Ihu crist/
where is þerfore þi glorýng · it is excludide (or putte oute)
by what lawe · of dedis doýng · nay/ but by þe lawe of feiþ/
forsoþe we demen a man for to be iustifiede bi feiþ · wíþ outen
werkis of þe lawe/ wheþer of iewes is god onely · wheþer he is
not of heþen · zhis & of heþen/ for soþely one is god · þat ius-
tifyeth circumcisiõ of feiþ · and prepucie (or heþen men) by
feiþ/ þerfore distrúpe we þe lawe by feiþ · fer be it/ but we
staben þe lawe by feiþ//



What þerfore schulen we seye oure fadir abraham vp
þe fleysche for to haue founden · forsoþe zif abra-
ham be iustifiede of þe werkis of lawe: he haþ glo-
rie but not anentis god/ what soþely feiþ þe scrip-
ture/ abraham bileuede and it is rettide to hym to ríztwes-
nesse/ forsoþe to hym þat wirchíþ · mede is not zouen to vp
grace: but by dette/ but to hym þat worchíþ not · forsoþe
bileuyng into hym þat iustifyeth þe wickide man (or vnpi-
tous) his feiþ is rettide to ríztwesnesse · vp þe purposyng
of goddis grace/ as & dauid feiþ · þe blessidenesse of a man to
whom god acceptíþ ríztwesnesse: wíþ outen werkis (of þe
lawe)/ blesside þei whos wickidnesse ben forzouen: & whos
synnes ben coueride (or hid)/ blesside þat man to whom god
rettide not synne/ þerfore þis blessidnesse · dwellíþ it not onely
in circumcisiõ: or also in prepucie (or state of heþen men) ·

C^m 4ⁿ

§ §

forsoþe

to romayns

forsoþe we seyn • for þe feiþ is rettide to abraham to riȝtweſ-
 nesse/ how þerfore is it rettide/ in circumciſiõ or in prepuc-
 cie/ not in circumciſiõ/ but in prepucye/ and he took a ſigne
 of circumciſiõ/ • a markynge (or tokenynge) of riȝtweſneſſe
 of feiþ þat is in prepucye • þat he be ſadir of alle men bileu-
 ynge by prepucye • þat it be rettide & to hem to riȝtweſneſſe/ &
 þat he be ſadir of circumciſiõ/ not onely to hem þat ben of
 circumciſiõ/ but & to hem þat ſuen his ſteppis • of þe feiþ of
 our ſadir abraham þat is in prepucie/ forsoþe not by þe lawe
 is biheſte to abraham or to his ſeede • þat he be þe eyre of þe
 worlde/ but by þe riȝtweſneſſe of feiþ/ ſohely ȝif þei þat ben
 of þe lawe ben eyres/ feiþ is anentiſide (or diſtruyede) • biheſt
 is done away/ forsoþe þe lawe worchip wraþ/ ſohely where þe
 lawe is not/ neher preuariaconi (or treſpaſſynge)/ þerfore of
 þe feiþ/ þat by grace biheſte be ſtable (or ſtedefaſt) to eche
 ſeed • not to þat ſeed onely þat is of þe lawe/ but þat is of þe
 feiþ of abraham • þe whiche is ſadir of vs alle/ as it is writen/
 for I haue ſette þee ſadir of many folkis • biſore god to whom
 þou haſt bileuede • þe whiche god quykeneþ deade men • &
 cleyþ þo þingis þat ben not/ as þo þat ben/ þe whiche (abra-
 ham) azenes hope • bileuede into hope/ þat he ſchulde be made
 ſadir of many folkis • by þat it is ſeyde to hym/ þus ſchal þi
 ſeede be as ſterres of heuene/ & as grauel (or ſonde) • þat is
 in þe bryncke of þe ſee/ and he is not made vnſtedefaſt in þe
 bileue • neher he bihilde his body how nyȝ deade • whanne he
 was almoſt of an hundride ȝeer/ & þe wombe of ſare nyȝ
 deade/ alſo in þe biheſte of god • he doutide not wiȝ vntriſt/
 but he is confortide in bileue • ȝuyng glorie to god • wit-
 ynge moſte fully • for what euer þingis god haþ bihiȝt/ he is
 al miȝty & for to do/ þerfore it is rettide to hym to riȝtweſ-
 nesse/ forsoþe it is not writen onely for hym • for it is rettide
 to hym to riȝtweſneſſe/ but & for vs • to whiche it ſchal be ret-
 tide • bileuynge into hym þat reȝide oure lorde Ihu criſt fro
 deade (ſpiritis) þe whiche is bitaken for oure ſynnes/ & roos
 azen for oure iuſtiſynge//

Therefore

to romayns

C^m 5^m



Therefore we iustificide of feiþ: haue pees at god by
 oure lorde Ihu crist/ by whom we haue accesse (or
 nyȝ goinge to) • by feiþ into his grace • in whiche we
 stonden & haue glorie • in þe hope of glorie of goddis
 sones/ forsoþe not onely: but & we glorien in tribulacoñs • wit-
 ynge þat tribulacoñ worchih paciencē: soþely paciencē prou-
 ynge/ forsoþe prouynge hope/ forsoþe hope confoundih not • for
 þe charite of god is spred abroad in oure hertis by þe holy gost
 þat is ȝouen to vs/ wherto soþely diede crist for wickide men •
 whanne we weren zit sijk (or vnstable by tyme) / soþely vnnē þis
 dieþ any man for þe iuste/ for whi for þe good: summan parauen-
 ture dar die: forsoþe god comendih his charite in vs/ for zit
 whanne we weren zit synners by tyme • crist is deade for vs:
 myche more now we iustificide in his blood • schulen be saaf fro
 wrap bi hym/ soþely zit whanne we weren enemyes • we ben re-
 counseylide to god by deē of his sone: myche more we re-
 counseylide schulen be saaf in þe lijf of hym/ forsoþe not onely
 but & we glorien in god by oure lorde Ihu crist: by whom we
 haue receyuyde nowwe recounseylynge (or acordynge)/ þerfore
 as by one man synne entride into his worlde • & by synne
 deē: so deē passið forþ into alle men • in whiche man alle
 men synneden/ soþely til to þe lawe: synne was in þe worlde/
 forsoþe synne was not wiȝtide (or rettide): whan lawe was
 not/ but deē regnyde fro adam • til to moyses • also into hem
 þat synneden not in licnesse of trespassynge of adam • þe whiche
 is fourme (or licknesse) of one to comynge/ but not as gilde
 (or trespasse): so & þe gilde/ soþely zit þourgh þe gilde of one
 manne ben deade: myche more þe grace of god & zifte in þe
 grace of one man Ihu crist • haþ aboundide into many men/
 and not as by one synne: so & by zifte/ for whi soþely dome of
 one into condemnacoñ: grace forsoþe of manne giltis (or
 trespassyngis) into iustificacoñ/ forsoþe zit in þe gilde of one
 deē regnyde þoruȝ one: myche more men takynge plente of
 grace

to romayns

grace & zuynghe & ryztwefnesse in lijf: schulen regne by one
 Jhū crist/ herfore as by þe gilte of one into alle men into con-
 dempnacoñ: so & bi þe ryztwefnesse of one into alle men into
 iustifyinge of lijf/ soþely as bi obedience of one man * many
 ben ordeynede synners: so & by obedience of one * manye
 schulen be ordeynede iuste/ forsoþe þe lawe entride þat gilte
 schulde be plentyuouse/ soþely where gilte was plentyuouse: &
 grace aboundide (or was plentyuouse)/ þat as synne regnyde
 into deþ: so & grace regnyde by ryztwefnesse into euer lastynghe
 lijf: by Jhū cñt oure lorde//

C^m 6^m



herfore what schulen we seye * schulen we dwelle
 in synne: þat grace be plenteuous: fer be it/ soþely
 we þat ben deade bi synne: how schulen we lyue
 zit herinne: wher breþeren zee vnknowen * for
 whiche euer we ben baptiside or cristenyde in ihū cñt * in his
 deeh we ben baptiside/ soþely we ben to gedir biriede wiþ hym
 by cristendome into deþ * þat as cñt roos fro deade (spiritis) by
 glorie of þe fadir: so & we walke in þe newenesse of lijf/ forsoþe
 zif we to gedir plauntide * ben made to þe licknesse of his deþ:
 also & we schul be of risynghe azen/ witynghe þat oure olde man
 is to gedir crucifiede * þat þe body of synne be destruyede: þat
 we serue no more to synne/ soþely he þat is deade to synne: is
 iustificede fro synne/ forsoþe zif we ben deade wiþ cñt: we bi-
 leuen þat also we schulen lyue to gedir wiþ hym/ witynghe for
 cñt risynghe azen fro deade (spiritis): now dieþ not: deþ schal no
 more lordeschip to hym/ forsoþe þat he is deade to synne: he is
 deade ones/ soþely þat he lyueþ: he lyueþ to god/ so & zou
 deme zou for to be deade soþely to synne: forsoþe lyuynghe to
 god in Jhū crist oure lorde/ herfore regne not synne in zou
 deadely bodye: þat zee obescþe to his coueytyngis/ for neþer
 zyue zee zoure membres armours of wickidnesse to synne:
 but zif zee zoure self to god * as of deade men lyuynghe * & zoure
 membrs armours of ryztwefnesse to god/ forsoþe synne schal
 not

to romayns

not lordeschip to zou/ sohely zee ben not vndre þe lawe:
 but vndre grace/ what þerfore? schulen we synne for we ben
 not vndre þe lawe: but vndre grace? fer be it/ witen zee not
 for to whom zee zyuen zou seruauntis fer to obescþe: zee ben
 seruauntis to þat þing to whom zee haue obescþide · oþer of
 synne to deþ · oþer of obedience to riztwesnesse/ sohely I do
 þankyngis to god · þat zee weren seruauntis of synne · forsoþe
 zee hane obescþide of herte into þe fourme of techynges: in
 whiche zee ben bitaken/ forsoþe zee delyueride fro synne · ben
 made seruauntis of riztwesnesse// ¶ I seye mannes þing · for þe
 infirmyte (or vnstabilenes) of oure fleysche/ sohely as zee hane
 zouen zoure membris for to serue to vncleennesse & wickidnesse:
 so nowe zyue zee zoure membris for to serue to riztwesnes
 into holynes/ forsoþe whanne zee were seruauntis of synne:
 zee weren fre of riztwesnesse/ þerfore what fruyte hadden zee
 þanne in þo þingis · in whiche zee schamen nowes? nowe þer-
 fore þe ende of hem is deþ/ forsoþe nowe zee delyueride fro
 synne · made sohely seruauntis to god: haue zoure fruyte into
 holynesse · þe ende forsoþe euerlastynghe lijf/ treuely þe hijres
 of synne: deþ/ þe grace of god: euerlastynghe lijf · in crist Ihu
 oure lorde//



Beþeren wher zee vnknowen · forsoþe I speek to
 men wytynghe þe lawe/ for þe lawe haþ lordeschip
 in a man: how longe tyme it lyueþ/ for whi þat
 womman þat is vndir an housbonde is bounden to
 þe lawe · lyuynghe þe housbonde/ sohely zif hire housbonde be
 deade: sche is delyueride (or vnbounden) fro þe lawe of þe
 man/ þerfore lyuynghe þe man · sche schal be clepide auoutresse:
 zif sche schal be wiþ an oþer man/ forsoþe zif hire housbonde
 be deade: sche is delyueride fro lawe of þe man · þat sche
 be not auoutresse: zif sche schal be wiþ an oþer man/ treuely
 beþeren & zee made deade to þe lawe þoruþ þe bode of crist:
 þat zee be an oþeris · þat roos azen fro deade (spiritis) · þat
 we

to romayns

we bere fruyte to god/ forsoþe whanne we weren in flesche.
 passiouns of synnes þat weren by þe lawe wrouzten in oure
 membris: þat þei schulden bere fruyte to deþ/ now forsoþe we
 ben vnbounde fro þe lawe of deþ in whiche we weren/ so þat
 we serue in newenesse of spirit & not in oldenesse of lettre/
 what þerfore schule we seye? þe lawe is synne? fer be it/ but
 I knewe not synne: no but by þe lawe/ for whi I wiste not co-
 ueptynge for to be synne: no but þe lawe seyde: þou schalt not
 couepte/ forsoþe occasiõ: synne by þe maundement hap
 wrouzte in me al coueptynge (or coueptise)/ soþely wiþ outen
 þe lawe: synne was deade/ forsoþe I lyuede wiþ outen þe
 lawe sum tyme/ but whanne þe comaundement had comen:
 synne lyuede azen/ soþely I am deade & þe comaundement
 is founden to me þat was to lijf: þis þing for to be to deþ/ for
 why synne & occasiõ taken by þe comaundement deceyude
 me: & bi it slowe me/ and so þe lawe soþely is holy & þe com-
 aundement holy: & iuste & good/ þerfore þat þat is good to me
 is made deþ? fer be it/ but þat synne apperide (or be knowen):
 synne þourz gode þing wrouzte deþ to me: þat þere be made
 synne synnyng ouer maner (or mesure) by comaundement/
 soþely we witen for þe lawe is spiritual (or godly) forsoþe I
 am fleschely: solde vndir synne/ soþely I vnderstonde not þat:
 þat I wirche/ soþely I do not þe good þing þat I wole: but I
 do þe ilke euyl þing þat I hate/ forsoþe zif I do þat þing þat
 I wole not: I consente to þe lawe: for it is good/ now soþely
 I worche not þat þing now: but þat synne þat dwelliþ in me/
 soþely I woot for in me: þat is in my flesche dwelliþ no good/
 for wille lijf to: to me: treuely for to þourme good þing
 I synde not/ forsoþe I do not þe ilke good þing þat I wole/
 but I do þe ilke þing þat I wole not/ soþely zif I do þat þing
 þat I wole not: I wirche not it: but þe synne þat dwelliþ in
 me/ þerfore þe lawe is good to me: willynge for to do good
 þing: for euyl þing lijf to me/ þerfore þe lawe is good to me
 willynge/ forsoþe I delite togedir þe lawe of god: vp þe inner
 man/

to romayns

man/ sohely I see anoper lawe in my membris: azenfytynge
to he lawe of my soule: & makynge me captife in he lawe of
synne: hat is in my membris/ I a woful man: who schal de-
lyuer me: fro he body of his synne/ forsoke he grace of god:
by Ihū crist oure lorde/ herfore I myself by resoun of he soule:
serue to he lawe of god: sohely by my slepche: to he lawe of
synne//



Herfore nowe no þing of dampnacoñ: is to hem þat
ben in Ihū crist: he whiche wandren not astir he
slepche/ forsoke spirit of liif in crist Ihū: hap dely-
ueride me fro lawe of synne & deþ/ for whi þat þat
was vnpossible to he lawe: in what þing it was seek (or freel
by slepche) god sendynge his sone into he likenesse of slepche
of synne: of synne he dampnyde synne in slepche/ þat he iust-
fyng of lawe were fulfild in vs: þat not astir he slepche
wandren: but astir he spirit/ forsoke þei þat ben astir he
slepche: saueren þo þingis þat ben astir he slepche/ but þei
þat ben astir he spirit: feelen þo þingis þat ben of he spirit/
forwhi he prudence of slepche: is deþ/ forsoke he prudence of
spirit: liif & pees/ for he wisdom of slepche: is enemye to
god/ forsoke it is not sujet to he lawe of god: sohely neher it
may/ forsoke þei þat ben in slepche: mowne not plese to god/
sohely zee ben not in slepche: but in spirit: neþeles zif he
spirit of god dwelliþ in zou/ forsoke zif any hap not he spirit
of crist: þis is not his/ forsoke zif crist is in zou: sohely he body
is deade for synne: but he spirit lyueþ for iustfyng/ for zif
he spirit of hym þat reyside Ihū crist fro deade (spiritis) dwell-
iþ in zou: he þat reyside Ihū crist fro deade spiritis: schal
quyken & zoure deadely bodies: for he spirit of hym dwellynge
in zou/ herfore breþeren we ben dettours: not to he slepche:
þat we lyue astir he slepche/ forsoke zif zee schulen lyue astir
he slepche: zee schulen dye/ forsoke zif zee by spirit schulen
slee he dedis of slepche: zee schulen lyue/ sohely who euer ben
ledde

C^m 8^m

to romayns

ledde by þe spirit of god: þes ben þe sones of god: forsoþe zee
 hane not taken eftesone þe spirit of seruage in drede: but zee
 haue taken þe spirit of adopcion of sones · (þat is to be sones
 of god by grace) · in whiche spirit we crien abba fadir/ forsoþe
 þe ilke spirit zildih witnessynge to oure spirit: þat we ben þe
 sones of god/ forsoþe zif sones: & eynes/ soþely zif eyns of god:
 treuely euen eyns of cñ/ zif neþeles we to gedir suffren: þat
 & we ben glorifiede to gedir/ treuely ¶ deme þat passouns of
 þis tyme ben not euen worþ: to þe glorie to comynge þat
 schal be schewide in vs/ for whi þe abydyng of creature · (þat
 is man) · abidih þe schewynge of þe sones of god/ soþely þe
 creature is sujet to vanyte · not willynge: but for hym þat su-
 gettide it (or made it sujet) in hope/ for & þe ilke creature
 schal be delyueride fro seruage of corrupcion: into liberte of
 glorie of þe sones of god/ soþely we witen · þat eche creature
 inforowih & chidih: (or worchih wih angwische) til zit/ forsoþe
 not onely it: but & we oure self haunge þe firste fruytis of
 þe spirit · & we oure self sorowen wihinne vs þe adopcion of
 goddis sones: (þat is wih greet mournynge desiren þe staat of
 goddis sones by grace) · abydyng þe azen byinge of oure body/
 soþely by hope: we ben made saaf/ forsoþe þe hope þat is seyn:
 is not hope/ for whi · what hopih a man þat þing þat he seep/
 forsoþe zif we hopen þat þing þat we seen not: we abiden by
 pacience/ also & þe spirit helpih oure infirmyte (or vnstidest-
 nes)/ forwhi what we schulen preye as it bihoueh · we witen
 not: but þe ilke spirit ariþ for vs wih sorowynge þat motwe
 not be tolde oute/ forsoþe þe þat seekih þe hertis · woot what
 þe spirit desirih · for astir god · (þat is at goddis wille) he ariþ
 for holy men/ forsoþe we witen for to men louynge god · alle
 þingis worchen to gedir into good þing to hem · þat astir pur-
 pos ben clepide seyntis/ for whi & whom he wiste bifore: & he
 bifore ordeynede by grace · for to be made liche of þe ymage
 of his sone · þat he be þe firste bygoten in manye breþeren/
 soþely whom he bifore ordeynede to blis: & hem he clepide: &
 whom

to romayns

whom he clepide & hem he iustifiede/ soþely whom he iustifiede & hem he glorifiede/ what þerfore schulen we seye to þes þingis: ȝif god for vs who azenes vs/ þe whiche also sparide not to his owne sone/ but for vs alle bitoke hym/ how also ȝaue he not to vs alle þing wiþ hym/ who schal accuse azenes þe chosen sones of god/ god þat iustificþ: who is þat condempnyþ/ Ihesu crist þat is deade/ ȝhe þe whiche & roos azen/ þe whiche is on þe rizt halfe of god: & þe whiche preyeth for vs/ who þerfore schal departe vs fro þe charite of god: tribulaciō or angwische or hungre: or nakidnesse: or persecuciō: or perel: or swerde/ as it is writen/ for we ben slayne al day for þee: we ben gesside as scheep of slauzter/ but in alle þes þingis we ouercomen: for hym þat louede vs/ soþely I am certayne: for neþer deþ: neþer lijf: neþer aungels: neþer principalis: neþer vertues: neþer potestatis: neþer present þingis: neþer þingis to comynge: neþer strengþe: neþer heȝþe: neþer depnesse: neþer oþer creature: schal moue departe vs fro þe charite of god: þat is in crist Ihesu oure lorde//



Deyne treuþe in crist Ihesu: I lize not: my conscience berynge witnessynge to me in þe holy gost: for grete heuynesse is to me: & contynuel sorowe to myn herte/ forsoþe I my self desiride for to be curside (or departide) fro crist for my breþeren: þat ben cosyns astir þe fleysche: þat ben israelitis (or of isrl) whos adopciō is of sones & glorie & testament & ȝuyngge of lawe: & scrupþe & bihestis: whos ben þe faderis: & of whom crist astir þe fleysche: þat is god aboue alle þingis: blesside into worldis/ amen/ soþely not þat þe worde of god haþ fallen doune: (or faylide vnfulfide)/ soþely not alle þat ben of isrl: þes ben isrlitis (or sones of iacob)/ neþer þei þat ben þe seeðe of abraham alle ben sones: but in ysaac: seed schal be clepide to þee/ þat is to seye: not þei þat ben sones of þe fleysche: ben sones

C^m 9^m

to romayns

of god: but hei þat ben sones of biheste: ben demyde in seed
of bihest/ soþely þis is þe worde of bihest/ vp þis tyme I schal
come: & a sone schal be to fare/ forsoþe onely sche: but & re-
becca of one liggyng by haupng two sones of ysaac oure fa-
dir/ soþely whanne hei weren not zit borne: oþer hadden done
any of good or euyl: þat þe purpos of god schulde dwelle vp
þe eleccioun/ not of werkis: but of god clepyng þat is seyde
to hym: for þe more schal serue to þe lesse: as it is writen: I
louede Jacob/ forsoþe esau I had in hate/ what þerfore schu-
len we seye: wher wickidnesse be anentis god: fer be it/ for-
soþe he seih to moyse/ I schal haue mercy to whom I schal
haue mercy: & I schal ȝyue mercy to whom I schal haue
mercy/ þerfor it is not neþer of man willyng neþer rennyng:
but of god haupng mercy/ forsoþe þe scripture seih to pha-
rao/ for into þis þing I haue stired þee: þat I schewe in þee
my vertue: & þat my name be tolde in al erþe/ þerfore of
whom god wole he haþ mercy: & of whom god wole he endu-
riþ (or hardenyþ)/ and so þou seist to me/ what þing is zit
souzt: soþely who wiþstondih þis wille: O man who art þou:
þe whiche answerist to god: wher a potte or made þing: seih
to hym þat made it: what hast þou made me to: wher a potter
of clepe haþ not power of þe same gobet: for to make soþely
one vessel into honoure: anoþer forsoþe into dispite (or lowe of-
fice): þat zif god willynge for to schewe wrappe & for to make
power knowen: sustenyde in grete pacience þe vessels of wra-
þþe able into perdicō (or dāpnacōn): þat he schulde schewe
þe richessis of his glorie: into vessels of mercy: þe whiche he
made redy into glorie/ and whiche he clepide not onely of
iewes: but also of heþen men as he seih in osee/ I schal clepe
not my puple: my puple: & not my louede: my louede: & not
haupng mercy: haupng mercy/ and it schal be in place:
where it is seyde not zee my puple: here þei schulen be clepide
þe sones of luyng god/ forsoþe ysaie crieh for isrl/ zif þe
nowmbre of isrl schal be as þe grauel of þe see: þe relyues
schulen

to romayns

schulen be made saaf/ forsoþe a worde endynge & abreggynge
in equyte/ for þe lorde schal make a worde breggide (or made
schorte) vpon al erþe/ and as ysaie bifore seyde/ no but god
had leste to vs seede/ we hadden ben made as sodom · & we
hadden ben lijk as gomor/ þerfore what schulen we seye/ þat
heþen men þat sieden not ríztwefnesse/ haue cauhte ríztwef-
nesse þat is of seih/ forsoþe ísrl supnge þe lawe of ríztwefnesse/
came not partíely into þe lawe of ríztwefnesse/ why/ for not
of seih/ but as of werkis/ soþely þei offendiden into þe snoon of
offencon (or spurnynge) · as it is writen/ lo I putte a snoon of
offencon in syon/ & a snoon of sclaundre/ þat eche þat schal bi-
leue into it/ schal not be confoundide (or schente)//



Beheren soþely þe wille of myn herte & my bisech-
ynge is made to god for hem into helpe/ forsoþe I
bere witnessynge to hem for þei haue loue of god/ but not of kunnyng/ soþely þei vnknotwpyng goddis
ríztwefnesse/ & seekyng for to make slídefast here owne/ ben
not suget to þe ríztwefnesse of god/ forsoþe þe ende of þe lawe
ēst/ to ríztwefnesse to eche man bileupnge/ soþely moytes · for
þe man þat schal do ríztwefnesse þat is of þe lawe/ schal lyue
in it/ forsoþe þe ríztwefnesse þat is of þe bileue/ seih þus/ seye
þou not in þin herte · who schal slepyze into heuene · þat is to
seye for to leede doune crist/ or who schal go doune into dep-
nesse (of helle) · þat is for to azen clepe crist fro deade (spiri-
tis) but what seih þe scripture/ þe worde is nyz in þi mouþ/ &
& in þin herte/ þat is þe worde of bileue/ þe whiche we pre-
chen/ þat zif þou knoweleche in þi mouþ þe lorde Ihu ēst · &
bileuest in þin herte þat god reylíde hym fro deade (spiritis)/
þou schalt be saaf/ forsoþe by herte we bileuen to ríztwefnesse/
by mouþ soþely knowelechynge is made to helpe/ soþely þe
scripture seih/ eche þat bileueþ into hym/ schal not be con-
foundide/ soþely þer is no distyncon of Jewe & greek/ forwhi
þe same lorde of alle/ ríche into alle þat inclepen hym/ forsoþe
eche

C^m 10^m

to romayns

eche man who euer schal inclepe þe name of þe lordes: schal be
 saaf/ how þerfore schulen þei inclepe hym: into whom þei
 haue not bileuyde: or how schulen þei bileue to hym: whom
 þei herden not: how forsoþe schulen þei here wiþ outen pre-
 chynge: or howe schulen þei preche: no but zif þei ben sente:
 (þei ben sente of god þat in werke & worde suen crist) as it is
 writen/ how sayre þe seet of men euangelizynge pees: of pre-
 chynge good þingis: but not alle men obetschen to þe gospel/
 forsoþe þaie seiþ/ lorde who bileuede to oure herynge: þer-
 fore seiþ of herynge: herynge forsoþe by þe worde of crist/ but
 I seye wher þei herden not: and soþely þe worde of hem wente
 oute into al erþe: & into þe endis of þe roundenesse of þe erþe
 here wordis/ but I seye/ wher Iscr̃t knewe not: firste moyse
 seiþ/ I schal leede zou to eneupe to not a folc: into an vnwise
 folc: I schal sende zou into wrapþe/ forsoþe þaie dar & seiþ/
 I am founden of men not sekynge me/ opynly I apperide to
 hem: þat ariden not me/ forsoþe to iscr̃t he seiþ/ alday I streypte
 oute myn handis to a puple not bileuyng to me: but azenfey-
 inge//

C^m 11^m



herfore I seye wher god haþ putte away his puple:
 fer be it/ for whi & I am of israelite of þe seede of
 abraham of þe lynage of beniamyn/ þe lorde putte
 not away his puple: þe whiche he bifore wiste/ wher
 zee witen not in helie what þe scripture seiþ: how he preyed
 god azenes iscr̃t/ lorde þei haue slayne þi prophetis: þei haue
 vndirdoluen þin auters: & I am lestte al one: & þei seken my
 lijf/ but what seiþ goddis answere to hym/ I haue lestte to me
 seuene þousande of men: þat haue not bowide here knees bi-
 fore baal/ so þerfore & in þis tyme: þe relifes ben made saaf:
 by þe chesynge of þe grace of god/ for zif by þe grace of god:
 nowe not of werkis/ ellis grace is not nowe grace/ what þer-
 fore: iscr̃t haþ not geten þat þat he souzte/ forsoþe eliccon haþ
 geten/ soþely þe oþer ben blyndide: as it is writen/ he zaued to
 hem

to romayns

hem a spirit of compunccon · yzen pat hei seen not · & eris pat
 hei here not · til into his day / and daupd seih / be he borde of hem
 made bifore hem into a gnare & into cacchyng & into sclau-
 dre · & into zildynge azen to hem / be he yzen of hem made dirke ·
 pat hei se not · and incroke algatis he bac of hem / perfore I
 seye wher hei offendiden so · pat hei schulen falle doune · fet be
 it / but by gylte of hem helpe is made to heben men · pat hei sue
 hem / pat zif he gylte of hem ben richeffis of he worlde · & he mun-
 yschynge (or makynge lesse) of hem · ben richeffis of heben men ·
 how myche more he plente of hem · sohely I seye to zou heben
 men / how longe sohely I am apostle of heben men · I schal ho-
 noure my mynysterie (or seruyce) zif on any maner I styre my
 slepche for to solowe · & I make summe of hem saaf / forsope zif
 he loos of hem is recounseplynge of he worlde · what he takynge
 vp of hem · no but lijf of deade men · for zif he sacrifice (or litil
 parte of fastynge) be holy · & hool gobet / and zif he root be holy ·
 & he braunchis / pat zif any of he braunchis ben broken · hou
 sohely whanne hou were a wilde olyue tree · art sette amonge
 hem · & art made selowe of he root & of fatnesse & of he olyue tree ·
 nyl hou glorie azenes he braunchis / for zif hou gloriest · hou
 berest not he root · but he root hee / perfore hou seist / he braun-
 chis ben broken pat I be infette / wel / for vnbileue he braun-
 chis hen broken · forsope hou stondist by seih / nyl hou sauer
 hize hing but drede hou / forsope zif god sparide not kyndely
 braunchis · lesse paraenture he spare not hee / perfore se he
 godenesse & he seertenesse of god / sohely he seertenesse into hem
 pat sellen doune · sohely he godenes of god in hee · zif hou
 schalt dwelle in godenesse / ellis & hou schalt be kitte doune /
 but & hei schulen be infette · schulen not dwelle in vnbileue /
 forsope god is myzty · effesone for to infette hem / for whi zif
 hou art kitte doune of he kyndely wilde olyue tree · forsope
 breperen I nyl zou vnknowe his mysterie · pat zee be not wise
 to zoure self / for blyndenesse hap fallen of party in isrl · til he
 plente of heben men entride · & so al isrl schulde be made saaf
 as

to romayns

as it is writen/ he schal come of syon pat schal delyuer & turne
 away: vnpytee of iacob/ and his testament to hem of me:
 whanne I schal do away here synnes/ sohely by þe gospel
 enemyes for zou: forsoþe moste derworþ by þe eleccō. for fa-
 deris/ sohely þe ziftis & clepyng of god: ben wip outen for-
 þinkyng (or reuokynge)/ sohely as sumtyme & zee bileueden
 not to god: nowe forsoþe zee haue gete mercy for þe vnbeleue
 of hem: so & þes nowe bileueden not into zoure mercy: þat &
 þei gete mercy/ forsoþe god closide to gedir alle þingis in vnbi-
 leue: þat he haue mercy on alle/ ¶ **W**he hizenesse (or depnesse)
 of þe richessis of wisdom & kunnyng of god/ how incompre-
 hensibile ben his domes: & his weyes vnsercheable/ forsoþe
 who knewe þe witte of god: or who was his counseyler or who
 former 3aue to hym: & it schal be quytte azen to hym: for of
 hym & by hym & in hym ben alle þingis: to hym honoure &
 glorie into worldis amen//

C^m 12^m



And so breþeren I biseche zou by þe mercy of god:
 þat zee 3yue zoure bodyes a lyuynge oost (or sacri-
 fice) holy plesynge to god: zoure seruyce reson-
 able/ and nyl zee be confourmyde (or made lyk) to
 þis worlde: but be zee refourmyde in newenesse of zoure witte:
 þat zee proue whiche is þe wille of god: good & wel plesynge
 & parfite/ forsoþe I seye by þe grace þat is zouen to me: to alle
 þat ben amonge zou: for to not sauer (or kunne) more þanne
 it bihoueh for to kunne: but for to kunne to sobrenesse/ and
 to eche man as god haþ departide þe mesure of seiþ/ forsoþe as
 in one body we haue many membris: sohely alle þe membris
 hane not þe same acte (or dede) so we ben manye: one body in
 crist/ eche forsoþe membris: þe toþer of anoþer/ þerfore hau-
 ynge ziftis dyuersynge by þe grace þat is zouen to vs: oþer
 prophete by resoun of seiþ: oþer mynystrie or seruyce in
 mynystrynge/ oþer be þat techiþ in techynge: be þat siþer
 softely in exhortacon (or monestynge)/ be þat 3yueþ in sym-
 plenets:

to romayns

pleness · he þat is bifore (or souereyn) in bisynes · he þat haþ
 mercy in gladenesse · loue wiþ outen seynynge · hatynge euyl ·
 cleuyng (or faste drawynge) to good þing · louynge to gedir
 þe charite of breþerhede · comynge to gedir in honoure · not
 slowe in bisynesse · feruent (or brennyng) in spirit · seruyng
 to þe lorde · ioyinge in hope · pacient in tribulacō · bise in
 preyer · comunyng to þe nedis of seyntis · luyng (or kepyng)
 hospitalite · (þat is herborynge of pore men) blesse þee men pur-
 luyng þou · blesse þee & nyl þee curse (or warie) / for to ioye wiþ
 men ioyinge · for to wepe wiþ men wepyng / felyng þe same
 þing to gedir not saueryng (or kunnyng) hize þingis · but con-
 sentynge to meke þingis / nyl þee be prudent anentis þoure self ·
 to no man zildynge euyl for euyl / purueyinge good þingis ·
 not onely bifore god · but also bifore alle men / zif it may be
 done · þat is of þou · haupng pees wiþ alle men / þee most dere
 breþeren not defendynge (or vengynge) þoure self · but ȝyue
 þee place to ire (or wrappe) / forsoþe it is writen / þe lorde seiþ /
 to me vengeaunce · & I schal zilde aȝen / but zif þin enemye
 schal hungre · fede þou hym / zif he þristiþ · ȝyue þou drynke to
 hym / forsoþe þou doinge þes þingis · schalt gedir to gedir colis
 on his hede / nyl þou be ouercomen of euyl þing · but ouercome
 þou euyl in gode þing //



Every soule (or luyng man) · be subet to hizer pow-
 ers / forsoþe þer is not power · no but of god / soþely
 þo þingis þat ben of god · ben ordeynede / and so þe
 þat aȝenstondith þe ordynaunce of god / forsoþe þei
 þat aȝenstonden · geten to hem self dampnaciō / for whi pryn-
 ces ben not to þe drede of gode werke · but of euyl / soþely
 wolte þou not drede power · do þou gode þing · & þou schalt
 haue preysyng of it / forsoþe he is þe mynysire of god · to þee
 into good / soþely zif þou doste euyl þing · drede þou / for not
 wiþ outen cause he berith þe swerde / for he is þe mynysire of
 god · venger into wrappe · to hym þat doith euyl þing / and
 þerfore

to romayns

þerfore by nelle be ȝee quiet: not onely for wrapþe: but & for
 conscience/ soþely þerfore & ȝee ȝyuen tributis/ þei hem þe impo-
 sithis of god: for þis same þing seruyng/ þerfore ȝilde ȝee to
 alle men: detris/ to whom tribute: tribute/ to whom tol (or
 custom for þingis borne aboute): tol (or such custom)/ to whom
 dedde: dedde/ to whom honoure: honoure/ to no man owe ȝee
 any þing: no but þat ȝee loue to gedir/ soþely he þat loueþ his
 neyȝbore: haþ fulfild þe lawe/ for whi þou schalt do no le-
 cherie: þou schalt not slee: þou schalt not stele: þou schalt not
 sepe false witnessynge: þou schalt not coueyte þe þing of þi
 neyȝbore/ and ȝif þer be any oþer maundement: it is in-
 floride (or encloside) in þis worde/ þou schalt loue þi neyȝe-
 bore as þi self/ þe loue of neyȝbore: worchþ not euyl/ þer-
 fore loue is plente (or fulfyllynge) of lawe// ¶ And we wit-
 ynge þis tyme: for houre is now: vs to rise of sleep/ soþely
 nowe oure helpe is neer: þan whanne we bileueden/ þe nyȝte
 twente bifore: forsoþe þe day schal neȝte/ þerfore caste we
 awoye þe werkis of dirkeness: & be we cloþide þe armes of
 liȝte: as in day wandre we honestly/ not in ofte etyngis &
 drunkenesse: not in couchis & vnchastitees not in instryues
 & in enuye: but be ȝee cloþide þe lorde Ihu cñ and do ȝee not
 þe cure (or bisynesse) of slepliche in desiris

C^o 14^o



Forsoþe take ȝee a siȝk man in bileue: not in decep-
 tacons (or dispitelous) of þouȝtis/ soþely an oþer
 bileueþ hym for to ete alle þingis/ forsoþe he þat is
 siȝk (or vnstidfast): ete he wortis (or potage)/ he
 þat etih dispise not þe man not etynge/ and he þat etih not:
 deme not þe man etynge/ soþely god haþ taken hym/ who art
 þou þat demest an oþer seruaunt: to his lorde he stonðih or
 fallih doune/ forsoþe he schal stonde/ forsoþe þe lorde is myȝty
 for to ordeyne hym: (or make stidfast) for whi an oþer demeth
 a day bitwire þe day: an oþer demeth eche day/ eche man a-
 bounde (or be plenteuous) in his witte/ he þat sauerih (or vn-
 dirstondih

to romayns

dirfiondiþ) þe day: vndirfiondiþ to þe lorde/ and he þat etih · etih
 to þe lorde: for he doiþ þankynge to þe lorde/ and he þat etih
 not: etih not to þe lorde · & doiþ þankynge to god/ forsoþe no
 man of vs lyueþ to hym self: & no man dieþ to hym self/ soþely
 wher we lyuen: we lyuen to þe lorde/ wher we dien: we dien
 to þe lorde/ þerfore wher we lyuen or dien we ben of þe lorde/
 in þis þing soþely crist is deade & roos azen: þat he be lorde of
 quycke & of deade/ forsoþe what demest þou þi broþer? or whi
 dispisist þou þi broþer? forsoþe alle we schulen stonde bifore þe
 trone of crist/ I lyue seiþ þe lorde: for to me eche knee schal be
 bowide: & eche tunge schal knoweleche to god/ and so eche of
 vs · schal zilde resoun to god for hym self/ þerfore no more
 deme we to gedir (or eche oþer) but more deme zee þis þing ·
 þat zee putte not hurtynge (or sclaundre) to a broþer/ I woot
 & triste in þe lorde Ihu · for no þing is comoune (or vnclene)
 by hym: no but to hym þat demeth any þing to be vnclene/
 soþely zif þi broþer be made sory in conscience for mete: now
 þou walkist not attir charite/ nyl þou þourgh þi mete lese
 hym: for whom crist diede/ þerfore be not oure gode þing blas-
 femyde (or dispiside)/ soþely þe rewe of god is not mete &
 drynke: but rihtwefnesse & pees & ioye in þe holy gost/ forsoþe
 he þat in þis þing serueþ crist: plesih to god · & is prouyde to
 men/ and so sue we þo þingis þat ben of pees: & kepe we to-
 gedir þo þingis þat ben of edificacō · (þat is to bilde soulis to
 heuene) nyl þou for mete distruye þe werke of god/ soþely alle
 þingis ben clene: but it is euyl to þe man þat etih by offend-
 ynge (or sclaundre): or is made siþk (or vnstidfast)/ þou þat
 hast seiþ anentis þi self: haue þou bifore/ bleside is he þat
 demeth not (or dampnyþ not) hym self · in þat þing þat he
 proueth/ forsoþe he þat demeth zif he ete: is dampnyde/ for it is
 not of seiþ/ forsoþe alle þing þat is not of seiþ: is synne//

to romayns

C^o 15^m



Forsope we sadder owen for to susteyne (or here vp)
 þe sebleneste of sijk men or vnslad in seif: & not
 plesse to oure self/ eche of vs plesse to his neyzebore
 into good to edificacōn/ and forsope crist pleside not
 to hym self: but as it is writen/ þe reprovēs (or schenschipis)
 of men dispisyng þee: sellen on me/ forsope what euer þingis
 ben writen: þe ben writen to oure techyng/ þat bi pacience &
 comforte of scripturis: we haue hope/ forsope god of pacience
 & solace (or comforte) ȝyue to ȝou for to vnderstonde þe same
 þing eche into oþer after Ihu crist: þat ȝee of one wille (or
 wit) · wiþ one mouþ worship god & þe fadir of oure lorde Ihu
 crist/ for whiche þing take ȝee to gedir: as & cō took ȝou into
 honoure of god/ soþely I seye Ihu crist for to haue be a myny-
 stre of circumcisiōn for þe treuþe of god: for to conferme þe bi-
 hestis of faderis/ soþely heþen men for to honoure god vpon mer-
 cy: as it is writen/ herfore lorde I schal knoweleche to þee in he-
 þen men: & I schal syng to þi name/ and esteſone he seif/ glade
 (or ioie) ȝee heþen men wiþ his puple/ and esteſone/ alle heþen
 men preyse ȝee þe lorde: & alle puples magnyfie ȝee hym/ and es-
 tesone ysaie seif/ her schal be a root of Jesse: & heþen men schu-
 len hope into hym · þat schal rise for to gouerne heþen men/
 forsope god of hope · fulfil ȝou in al ioie & pees in bileuyng:
 þat ȝee abounde in hope & vertue of þe holy gost// ¶ Soþely
 breþeren & I my self am certeyn of ȝou: for & ȝee ȝoure self ben
 ful of loue · ȝee fulfilde wiþ al science (or kunnyng): so þat
 ȝee mowne moneste eche oþer/ soþely breþeren more hardily
 I write to ȝou of partye · as aȝen bryngyng ȝou into mynde ·
 for þe grace þat is ȝouen to me of god: þat I be þe mynystre
 of crist Ihu in heþen men/ I halowynge þe gospel of god þat
 þe offeryng of heþen men be made accepte & halowide in þe
 holy gost/ herfore I haue glorie in crist Ihu to god/ forsope I dar
 not speke any þing of þo þingis: þe whiche cō make not by me:
 into obedience of heþen men in worde & dedis: in vertue of to-
 kenes

to romayns

kenes & grete wondris • in vertue of þe holy gost: so þat from
 irlm̄ by cumpas til to hillirik: I haue fulfild þe gospel of crist/
 forsoþe so I haue prechide þis gospel • not where erst was na-
 myde • leste I bilde vpon oþeris grounde: but as it is writen/
 for to whom it is not tolde of hym: þei schulen se/ and þei þat
 herden not schulen vnderstonde/ for whiche þing I was lettide
 ful myche for to come to zou: & I am forbeden til into zit/ for-
 soþe now I not haupnge forþer place in þes cuntrees: soþely
 haupnge coueytise of comynge to zou • of many zeeris now
 goinge bifore • whan I schal bygynne for to passe into spayne:
 I hope þat I passynge forþe schal se zou/ and of zou schal be
 ledde þidir: zif I schal vse zou firste in partye/ þerfore now
 I schal passe forþ to irlm̄: for to mynystre to seyntis/ forsoþe
 macedonye & acaye prouede for to make sum collaçon (or ge-
 derynge) of money into pore men of seyntis • þat ben in irlm̄/
 soþely it pleside to hem: & þei ben dettours of hem/ for whi zif
 heþen men ben made parteners of here gostly þingis: þei owen
 & in fleyschely þingis for to mynystre to hem/ þerfore whanne
 I schal ende þis þing & assigne hem þis fruyte: by zou I schal
 passe into spayne/ forsoþe I woot þat I comynge to zou schal
 come: in þe aboundaunce (or plente) of þe blessynge of crist/ þer-
 fore breþeren I biseche zou by oure lorde Ihu crist • & by cha-
 rite of þe holy gost: þat zee helpe me in zoure preyers: for me
 to þe lorde • þat I be delyueride fro þe vntrewe men þat ben
 in Judee: & þat þe offerynge of my seruyce be acceptide in
 Irlm̄ to seyntis/ þat I come to zou in ioyze by þe wille of god:
 & þat I be refrechide wip zou/ soþely god of pees be wip zou
 alle amen//



Orsoþe breþeren I comende to zou seþen oure suster
 þat is in þe seruyce of þe chirche: þat is cencris: þat
 zee receyue hire in þe lorde worþily to seyntis: & þat
 zee stonde nyȝ (or helpe) hire: in what euer nede (or
 þing) sche schal nede of zou/ forsoþe & sche stode nyȝ (or helpide)
 to

C^m 16^m

to romayns

to manye: & to myself/ salute (or grete) zee prisca & aquyla myn
 helpers in Ihu crist: he whiche vnder puttiden here neckis for
 my soule (or lijf)/ to whom not I al one do hankyngis: but &
 alle chirchis of heben men/ and grete zee wel pere homely
 chirche/ gretih wel ephenete louede to me: pat is he firste of asie
 in crist Ihu/ gretih wel mary: he whiche haf traueylide myche
 in vs/ gretih wel adronyk & Julian my cosyns & myn euen cap-
 tifes (or prisouners): he whiche ben noble amonge he apostlis:
 & he whiche weren bifore me in crist/ gretih wel ampliete: moſte
 derworh to me in he lorde/ gretih wel urban oure helper in
 crist Ihu: & stacchen my louede/ gretih wel appellem he noble
 in crist/ gretih wel hem pat ben aristoblis hous/ gretih wel he-
 rodien my cosyn/ gretih wel hem pat ben at narcisies hous:
 pat ben in he lorde/ gretih wel tryphenam & tryphonam: he
 whiche wymmen traueylen in he lorde/ gretih wel perfida
 moſte derworhe womman: pat haf myche traueylide in he
 lorde/ gretih wel ruphus chofen in he lorde: & his modir & myn/
 gretih wel ansicrete: flegoncia: hermen: patroban: herman:
 and breheren pat ben wih hem/ gretih wel sylologus & Julian
 & venerum & his suster: & lympiades: and alle he seyntis pat ben
 wih hem/ gretih wel to gedir in holy cosse/ alle he chirchis of
 crist grete zou wel// ¶ Forsope breheren I preye zou pat zee as-
 pie hem pat maken discencons & hurtyngis (or sclaunderis):
 bifidis he doctryne: pat zee haue lernyde: & bowe he away fro
 hem/ sohely suche men seruen not to he lorde crist: but to here
 wombe/ and by swete wordis & blessingis deceyuen he hertis of
 innocent men/ sohely zoure obedience is puplischide into euery
 place/ herfore I ioye in zou: but I wole zou for to be wise in
 good hing: & symple in euyl hing/ forsope god of pees defoule
 sathanas vnder zoure feet swiftly/ he grace of oure lorde ihu
 crist wih zou/ tymothe myn helper gretih zou wel: & also lu-
 cys & Iason & sosipater my cosyns/ I he pridde grete zou wel:
 pat haue write his epistle in he lorde/ gayus myn herberger
 gretih zou wel: and quartus broher/ he grace of oure lorde
 Ihu

to romayns

Ihū crist: wiþ zou alle amen/ forsoþe to hym þat is myȝty to conferme zou by my gospel & prechyng of Ihū crist by þe reuelacon of myſterie holden ſtille þat is not ſchewide in tymes euerlaſtyng: þe whiche myſterie is now made oppyn by ſcriptures of prophetis: by þe comaundement of god wiþ outen bygynnyng & endyng: to þe obedience of feiþ in alle heþen men: þe myſterie knowen to god al one wiſe by Ihū cʃt: to whom honoure & glorie into worldis of worldes amen//

ye firſte piſtel to corrintheis



Dul clepide apoſtle of Ihū crist by þe wille of god: & ſoſtynes broþer: to þe chirche of god þat is at corrynthe: to þe haloſwide in criſt Ihū: clepide ſeyntis: wiþ alle þat inelepen þe name of oure lorde Ihū crist in eche place of hem & oure: grace to zou & pees of god oure fadir: & of þe lorde Ihū crist/ I do þankyngis to

C^m 1^m

my god euermore for zou: in þe grace of god þat is zouen to zou in Ihū crist: for in alle þingis zee ben riche in hym: in eche worde & in eche kunnyng (or ſcience): as þe witneſſyng of cʃt is confermyde in zou: ſo þat noþing ſayle to zou in any grace: abydyng þe reuelacon (or ſchewyng) of oure lorde Ihū crist/ þe whiche & ſchal conferme zou til into þe ende wiþ outen cryme (or greet ſynne): in þe day of þe comyng of oure lorde Ihū cʃt//

¶ Forſoþe god (is) trewe: by whom zee ben clepide into ſelowſchip of his ſone Ihū crist oure lorde/ ſoþely breþeren I biſeche zou by þe name of oure lorde Ihū crist: þat zee alle ſeye þe ſame þing: & þat ſciſmes (or dyuſiouns) diſſenciouns (or diſcordis) be not amonge zou/ ſoþely be zee parſite in þe ſame witte: & in þe ſame

DE PE CRISTENHEIT . . .

Want hantwike: welcke hantwike is significe (or tolde) te
 me: of hem dat her is dore: der dore den amange you/ for
 sake I here besing: dat crist is welck: welcke I am of poul
 welcke I of appella: want I of apelas (dat is petre): for
 sake I of crist: welck crist is begeride: welck poul is crucifice
 der you: open den you baptide in de name of poul: I do
 bantwike in god: dat I baptide te man of you: mo but cris-
 tus: & gurus: leide any man here dat you den baptide in my
 name: welck: I baptide de jous of femer (a woman)/ but
 I want not dat I baptide any oter: der crist stete me not for
 te baptide: but der te ewangelise: (or greeke de gospel)/ not in
 wisdom of wunde: dat de crist of crist te not wende alwey/ for
 de wunde of de crist: is sely welck te man perrichinge/ for-
 sake te hem dat den made dard: dat is te here te us: it is de ver-
 tue of god: welck it is wisdom: I schal leide de wisdom of wise-
 men: & I schal reueren de prudencie of prudent men/ wher is
 de willeman: wher is de wicker (or man of lawe): wher is de
 purchaser of his wunde: wher god had not made de wisdom
 of his wunde: welcke (or dard) for why for in de wisdom of
 god: de wunde leide not god de wisdom/ it pleide to god for
 te make men dat dard: de de sely of prechinge: for a
 times seken selys: & greekis seken wisdom: forloke we pre-
 chen crist crucifice te times selys schandere: te heben men
 selys sely forloke te hem clepde times & greekis crist de ver-
 tue of god & de wisdom of god: for dat dat is sely hing of god:
 is wiser han men & dat is sely hing (or steel) of god: is stronger
 han men: forloke te see soute clepunge brekeren: for not
 manpe wisemen astir de selysche: not many mysty: not many
 noble: but god cheers de hingis dat ben seltis of de worlde:
 dat he confounde wise men: and god cheers de sely hingis (or
 steel) of de worlde: dat he confounde de stronge hingis/ and
 god cheers de vnnoble hingis: & dispisable hingis of de worlde:
 & de hingis dat ben not: dat he schulde distrupe de hingis dat
 ben/ dat eche selysche (or man) glorie not in his sizte/ forloke
 of

to ye corrintheis . I .

of hym zee ben in crist Jhu . he whiche is made to vs wisdom & ryztwefnesse & holynesse & azen byinge / hat as it is writen . he hat glorieþ . glorie in he lorde //



AND I breheren whan I came to zou : came not in hizenesse of worde (or wisdom) tellynge (or schewyng) to zou he witnessyng of crist / soþely I schewede (or demyde) me not . me for to wite (or kunne) any þing amonge zou : no but crist Jhu . & hym crucifiede / and I in sekenesse & drede & myche tremblyng was anentis zou : & my worde & my prechyng not in persuable (or sutel glosyng) wordes of mannes wisdom : but in schewyng of spirit & vertue . þat zoure seiþ be not in wisdom of men : but in vertue of god / forsoþe we speken wisdom amonge parfite men / forsoþe not wisdom of þis worlde . neþer of prynces of þis worlde þat be distrupede : but we speken he wisdom of god he whiche is hid in mysterie (or pryuate) . he whiche (wisdom) god bifore ordeynede bifore worldis into oure glorie . he whiche no man of he prynces of þis worlde knewe / for zif þei hadden knowe : þei schulen neuer haue crucifiede he lorde of glorie / but as it is writen / he yze siþe not . ne he ere herde . neþer it steyzede into he herte of man . what þingis god made reedy bifore : to hem þat louen hym / forsoþe god schewide to vs by his spirit / forsoþe he spirit sekþ alle þingis : zhe he depe þingis of god / soþely who of men woot what þingis ben of man : no but he spirit of man þat is in hym : so & what þingis ben of god . no man knoweþ : no but he spirit of god / forsoþe we haue not receyuyde he spirit of þis worlde : but he spirit þat is of god . þat we wite what þingis ben zouen to vs of god / he whiche þingis we speken . not in tauzte wordis of mannes wisdom : but in doctryne of he spirit comparissonnyng spiritual þingis to gofily men / forsoþe a besily man perceyueþ not þo þingis þat ben of he spirit of god / soþely it is soly to hym . & he may not vnderstone . for he is examynyde (or assayde) gofily / forsoþe

C^m 2^m

to ye corrintheis .i.

soþe a spiritual man demey alle þingis: & he is demyde (or dampnyde) of no man as it is writen/ who soþely knewe þe witte or þe lorde: or who tauzte hym: for why we haue þe witte of crist//

C^m 3^m



And breþeren I myzt not speke to zou as to spiritual men: but as to fleyschely/ as to litil children in cōst. I zaue to zou mylke drynke: not mete/ soþely zee myzte not zit vnderstonde: but neher nowe soþely zee moʷne: for zit zee ben fleyschely/ whanne enyue & strife is amonge zou: wher zee ben not fleyschely: & astir man zee gon: for whanne summe seip/ I soþely am of poul: anoter forsoþe I am of appollo: wher zee ben not men: what þerfore is appollo: what forsoþe poul: þei ben mynystris (or seruauntis) of hym to whom zee haue bileuede: & to eche man as god haþ zouen/ I plauntide: appollo watride: but god gafe encrefynge/ and to neher he þat plauntip is any þing: neher he þat moystip: but god þat zyueþ encrefynge/ forsoþe he þat plauntip & he þat moystip: ben any þing/ eche schal take his propre hijre: astir his traueyl/ for we ben þe helpers of god: zee ben þe erþe tilyinge of god: zee ben þe bildynge of god/ astir þe grace of god þat is zouen to me as a wise carpenter I sette þe foundement/ forsoþe anoter bildip aboue/ soþely eche man se how: & what þingis he bildip vpon/ soþely no man may sette any oþer foundement biʷdis þat is sette: þe whiche is cōst I hē/ forsoþe zif any man bilde ouer vpon þis foundement: golde siluer: precious stone: stikkis: hay: stoble: euery mannes werke schal be schewide in sijr/ what maner it is: þe sijr schal proue/ zif þe werke of any man schal dwelle: þe whiche he bildip vpon: he schal receyue mede/ zif any mannes werke schal brenne: it schal suffre payrynge/ forsoþe he schal be saaf: so neþeles as by sijr// ¶ Lite not zee for zee ben þe temple of god: & þe spirit of god dwellip in zou: forsoþe zif any schal defoule þe temple of god: god schal dispayle (or distrupe) hym/ forsoþe þe temple

to ye corrintheis .I.

ple of god is holp: he whiche zee ben/ no man deceyue hym-
self/ zif any man amonge zou is seen to be wise in his worlde:
be he made a fool: pat he be wise/ forsoþe he wisdom of his
worlde: is foly anentis god/ forsoþe it is writen/ I schal cacche
wise men in here wisdom (or futel gile)/ and este/ þe lorde haþ
knowen þe þouztis of wisemen: for þei ben veyne/ and so no
man glorie in men/ forsoþe alle þingis ben zoure: oþer poul:
oþer appollo: oþer cephas (þat is petre) oþer þe worlde: oþer lijf
oþer deeth: oþer þingis present: oþer þingis to comynge/ forsoþe
alle þingis ben zoure: zee forsoþe of crist: crist soþely of god//

S a man gesse (or deme) vs as mynystis of cōt & dis-
penders of þe mynysteris of god/ nowe it is souzte
here amonge þe dispenders: pat a man be founden
trewe/ forsoþe to me it is for þe leste þing: pat I be
demyde of zou or of mannes day/ but neþer I deme myself/
soþely I am noþing gilty to my self: but not in his þing I am
iustifiede/ forsoþe he þat demeth me is þe lorde/ & nyl zee deme
bifore þe tyme: til þat þe lorde come: þe whiche & schal lizten
þe hidde þingis of dirkenessis: & schal schewe þe counseylis of
hertis: & þanne prepynges schal be to eche man of god//
¶ Soþely breþeren his þing I haue transfiguride into me & in
appollo: pat in vs zee lerne: leste þat ouer þat it is writen: one
azenes anoter be inblowen (wih pride) for anoter man/ who
forsoþe demeth þee? what soþely hast þou: pat þou hast not
receyuyde: what gloriest þou as þou haddist not receyuede:
nowe zee ben fulfild: nowe zee ben made riche/ zee reg-
nen wihouten vs: & I wolde zou regne: pat & we regnyde
wih zou/ soþely I wene þat god schewide vs þe laste apostlis:
& made redy to þe deþ: for we ben made a spectacle to þe worlde
& to aungels & to men/ we foolis for crist: zee forsoþe prudent
in crist/ we slyk: zee forsoþe stronge/ zee noble: we forsoþe vn-
noble/ til into his houre & we hungren & þristen: & ben nakide:
& ben smytten wih buffetis: & we ben vnstable & we traueplen

C^m 4^m

to ye corrintheis .I.

worchynge wiþ oure handis/ we ben curside & we blessen/ we
suffren persecucoñ: & we susteynen (or abiden) longe/ we ben
blasfemyde: & we bisechen/ as clenstyngis of his worlde we ben
made: þe paryngis (or oute castyngis) of alle þingis til zit/ I
wryte not þes þingis þat I confounde zou: but I amonestie (or
warne) as my moste derworþ sones// ¶ for whi zif zee haue ten
þousande of litil maystris in cñst Jhū: but not many faderis/ for
why in cñst Jhū I haue gendride zou: by þe gospel/ þerfore I
preye zou be zee folowers of me: as & I of cñst/ þerfore I sente
to zou tymothe: þat is my moste derworþ sone & feiþful in þe
lorde: þe whiche schal monestie zou (or teche) my weyes þat
ben in cñst Jhū: as I teche euery where in eche chirche/ as I
be not to come to zou: so summe ben inblowen (wiþ pride) I
schal come to zou soone zif god schal wole/ and I schal knowe
not þe worde of hem þat ben inblowen (wiþ pride): but þe
vertue: soþely þe rewme of god is not in worde: but in vertue/
what wole zee? þal I come to zou in a zerde: or in charite &
in spirit of debonernesse (or myldenesse)//

C^m 5^m



Aloute (or al maner) fornycacon is herde amonge
zou: & suche fornycacon what maner neþer amonge
þehen men so þat summan haue þe wiue of his fa-
dir/ and zee ben bolne wiþ pride: & not more had-
den weyllynge: þat he þat dide þis werke: be taken aweye fro
þe mydle of zou/ soþely I absent in body but present in spirit:
nowe haþ demyde as present in þe name of oure lorde Jhū cñst:
hym þat þus haþ wrouzte/ zou & my spirit gederide to gedit
wiþ þe vertue of þe lorde Jhū: for to bitake suche a man to
sathanas: into þe perischynge of fleysche: þat þe spirit be saaf
in þe day of oure lorde Jhū crist/ zoure glorpyng is not good/
witen zee not for a litil sourdowz corumpiþ al þe gobet: clense
zee oute olde sourdowz: þat zee be newe spryngyng to gedit
as zee ben þerfe (or wiþ outhen sour þing)/ forsoþe cñst is offryde
oure paske/ and so ete we/ not in olde sourdowz: neþer in
sourdowz

to ye corrintheis .i.

fourdowz of malice & waywardenesse/ but in herse þingis of
clennesse & treuþe// I wrote to zou in a pistel þat zee ben not
mengide wiþ lecchours/ soþely not wiþ lecchours of þis worlde.
or coueytouse men. or rauenours or wiþ men seruyng to ydo-
lis: ellis zee schulden haue gon oute of þis worlde/ nowe soþely
I wrote to zou for to not be mengide (or comoune not)/ zif he
þat is namyde a broþer amonge zou is a lecchoure. or couey-
touse. or seruyng to ydolis. or curser. or ful of drunken-
nesse. or rauenour: wiþ suche neþer take mete/ forsoþe what
to me. for to deme of hem þat ben wiþ outhen forþ. wher zee
deme not of hem þat ben wiþinne. for why god schal deme
hem þat ben wiþ outhen forþ/ do zee awei euyþ þing of zoure
self//



Ar any of zou haupnge a cause azenes anoper. be
demyde at wickide men: & not at seyntis (or holy
men). wher zee witen not for seyntis schulen deme
of þis worlde. and zif þe worlde be demyde in zou.
ben zee vnworþi þat demen of lesse þingis. witen zee not for
we schulen deme aungelis. how myche more worldely þingis.
þerfore zif zee schulen haue worldely nedis. ordeyne zee þe
contemptible men. (or of litil reputaçon) þat ben in þe chirche
for to deme/ I seye to zoure schame/ so þer is not any wise
man þat maye deme bitwixe a broþer & his broþer. but a bro-
þer wiþ broþer stryueþ in doom. & þat anentis vnseifful men/
nowe forsoþe trespas is algatis in zou. for zee haue domes a-
monge zou/ whi more taken zee not wronge. whi not more
suffre zee fraude. but & zee done wronge. & frauden (or bi-
gilen). & þat to breþeren/ wher zee witen not for wickide men
schulen not welde þe kyngdom of god. nyl zee erre/ neþer lec-
chours. neþer men seruyng to ydolis. neþer auouters. neþer
nescþe. neþer lecchouris (or men þat done synne of sodom). ne-
þer þeeses. neþer coueytouse men (or nygardis). neþer men
ful of drunkennesse. neþer cursers. neþer rauenours. schulen
welde

C^m 6^m

to ye corrintheis .I.

welde þe kyngdom of god/ and soþely þes þingis zee weren
sum tyme/ but zee ben waschen · but zee ben halowide · but
zee ben iustificide in þe name of oure lorde Ihu crist: and in þe
spirit of oure god// ¶ Alle þingis ben leueful to me: but I vn-
dre no mans power schal be brouzte doune/ mete to þe wombe:
& þe wombe to metis: forsoþe god schal destruye & þis & þat/
soþely þe body not to fornycacon: but to þe lorde · & þe lorde
to þe body/ forsoþe & god reyside þe lorde: & schal reyse vs in
his vertue// ¶ Witen zee not for zoure bodyes ben membris
of cōst: þerfore takynge þe membris of cōst · schal I make hem þe
membris of an hoore: fer be it/ wher zee witen not: for þe þat
cleueþ to an hoore · is made one body: soþely he seiþ/ þer schu-
len be two in one fleysche/ forsoþe he þat cleueþ to god: is one
spirit/ flee zee fornycacon/ al synne what euer synne a man
schal do: is wiþ outhen þe body/ forsoþe he þat doiþ fornycacon:
synnes into his bodye/ wher zee witen not: for zoure membris
ben þe temple of þe holy gost · þat is in zou · whom zee haue
of god: and zee ben not zoure owne/ forsoþe zee ben bouzte
wiþ greet prise/ glorie zee & here zee god in zoure body//

C^m 7^m



Drsoþe of whiche þingis zee haue writen to me: it is
good to a man to touche not a womman/ soþely for
fornycacōn · eche man haue his owne wiif: and eche
womman haue hire housbonde/ þe housbonde zilde
dette to þe wiif: also soþely & þe wife to þe housbonde/ þe wom-
man haþ not power of hire body: but þe housbonde/ also for-
soþe & þe housbonde haþ not power of his body: but þe wom-
man/ nyl zee defraude to gedir · no but paraenture of con-
sent to a tyme: þat zee zyue tente to preper/ and este turne zee
azen into þe same þing: lestie sathanas tempte zou for zoure
incontynence/ forsoþe I seye þis þing vþ indulgence (or for-
zyuenesse): not vþ þe comaundement/ soþely I wole alle men
to be as myself/ but eche man haþ his propre zifte of god/
soþely anoper þus: but anoper þus/ forsoþe to not weddide &
widowis

to ye corrintheis .i.

widowis it is good to hem: zif þei dwellen so * & as I/ for zif þei conteynen not hem self * (or ben not chaste): be þei weddide/ forsoþe it is better for to be weddide: þan for to be brente/ forsoþe to hem þat ben ioynede in matrymonye: I comaunde not I but þe lorde: þe wife for to not departe fro þe housbonde/ þat zif sche schal departe: for to dwelle vnweddide * or for to be recounseylide to hire housbonde/ and þe housbonde forsake not þe wiif/ for whi to oþer I seye: not þe lorde/ zif any broþer haue an vnseifful wiif * & sche consentiþ for to dwelle wiþ hym/ leue he (or forsake he) hir not/ and zif þe womman haþ an housbonde vnseifful * & þis consentiþ for to dwelle wiþ hir: leue sche not þe housbonde/ forsoþe þe vnseifful housbonde is halowide by þe seifful womman: & þe vnseifful womman is halowide by þe seifful housbonde/ elles zoure chylþren weren vnclene: nowe forsoþe þei ben holy/ þat zif þe vnseifful departiþ: departe he/ forsoþe þe broþer (or suster) is not suget to seruage/ in suche forsoþe god clepide vs in pees/ soþely wher of wiste þou womman * zif þou schalt make þe man saaf: or wher of wiste þou man * zif þou schalt make þe womman saaf: not but as þe lorde haþ departide to eche/ as god haþ clepide eche man: & so go he/ and as I teche in alle chirchis/ summan circumcidide is clepide: brynge he not to prepuce/ summan is clepide in prepuce: be he not circumcidide/ circumcisioun is nouzt * & prepuce is nouzt: but þe keepynge of þe comaundementis of god/ eche man in what clepyng he is clepide: in þat dwelle he/ þou seruaunt art clepide: be it not to charge to þee/ but zif þou mayste be free: more vse þou/ he þat in þe lorde is clepide seruaunt: is fre man of þe lorde/ also & he þat fre man is clepide * is þe seruaunt of crist/ wiþ prise zee ben bouzt: nyl zee be made seruauntis of men/ eche man þerfore in what clepyng he is clepide: in þat dwelle he anentis god// ¶ Forsoþe of virgyns I haue not precept of god/ soþely I gyue counseyl as haupnge mercy of þe lorde þat I be trewe/ þerfore I gesse (or deme) þis þing for to be good for
present

to ye corrintheis .i.

present nede: for it is gode to a man for to be so/ pou art bounden to wijs: nyl pou seek vnbyndynge/ pou art vnbounden fro a wijs: nyl pou seek a wijs/ forsoþe zif pou hast taken a wife: pou hast not synnede/ and zif a mayden be weddide: sche synnyde not/ neþeles suche schulen haue tribulacon of flesche/ forsoþe I spare zou/ and so breþeren I seye þis þing: þe tyme is schorte/ þe toher is þat & þei þat haue wifes: be as not haupnge/ and þei þat wepen: as not wepynge/ and þei þat ioyen: as not ioyinge/ and þei þat bien: as not haupnge/ and þei þat vsen þis worlde: as þei þat vsen it not/ forsoþe þe fygure of þis worlde passih/ forsoþe I wole zou for to be wiþ outhen bisynesse/ soþely þe þat is wiþ outhen wijs: is bisie what þingis ben of þe lorde: how he schal plese to god/ forsoþe þe þat is wiþ a wijs is bisie what þingis ben of þe worlde: how he schal plese þe wife: & he is departide/ and a womman vnweddide & a mayden: þenkih what þingis ben of þe lorde: þat sche be holy in body & spirit/ forsoþe sche þat is weddide: þenkih what þingis ben of þe worlde: how sche may plese hire housbonde// Soþely I seye þes þingis to zoure profite: not þat I caste to zou a snare: but to þat þat is honest & zyueþ facultee (or besynesse) wiþ outhen lettynge: for to biseche to þe lorde/ soþely zif any deme hym self for to be seyn foul on his virgyn: þat sche is wel olde: & so it bihoueh þat it be done: do sche what sche wole: he synneþ not: zif sche be weddide/ for whi he haþ ordeynede stable (or fidefast) in herte: not haupnge nede: but haupnge power of his wille: & haþ demyde in his herte þis þing: for to kepe þe virgyn: doih wel/ þerfore þe þat ioyneþ his virgyn in matrymonye: doih wel/ and þe þat ioyneþ not doih better/ þe womman is bounden to þe lawe: how myche tyme hire housbonde lyueþ/ þat zif hire housbonde schal slepe (þat is die): sche is delyueride fro þe lawe: be sche weddide to whom sche wole onely in þe lorde/ forsoþe sche schal be more bleside: zif sche schal dwelle þus after my counseyl/ forsoþe I wene þat I haue þe spirit of god//

Forsoþe

to ye corrintheis .i.



Forsope of þes þingis þat ben offride to ydolis (þat
ben symulacris made to mannes lickenesse:) we
witen for alle we haue kunnyng/sohely science (or
kunnyng) inblowip (wip pride): charite edifieþ/
forsope zif any man gesse (or deme) hym for to wite any þing:
he haþ not knowen how it bihoueh hym for to kunne/ forsope
zif any man loueh god: þis is knowen of hym/ forsope of metis
þat ben offride to ydolis: we witen for an ydol is no þing in
þe worlde: & þat here is no god no but one/ for whi & zif þer
ben þat ben seyde goddis: oþer in heuene: oþer in erþe: forsope
þer ben many goddis & many lordis: neþeles to vs is one god
þe fadir: of whom alle þingis: & we in hym: & one lorde ihū
crist: by whom alle þingis: & we bi hym: but not in alle men is
kunnyng/sohely summe wip conscience of ydol: til nowe eten
as þing offride to ydolis: & here conscience is vncleane: whanne
it is sijk/ mete comendip vs not to god/ neþer forsope we schu-
len not ete: neþer zif we eten: we schulen abounde/ se zee for-
sope lestie parauenture þis zoure licence (or leue) be made
hurtynge (or sclaundre) to sijk men (or freel)/ sohely zif any
man schal se hym þat haþ kunnyng: restyng in a place where
ydolis ben worschipide: wher his conscience siþ it is sijk schal
not be edifiede for to ete þingis offride to ydolis: & þe sijk bro-
þer for whom crist diede: schal perische in þi kunnyng/ for-
sope þus zee synnyng into breþeren: & smytynge here sijk
conscience: synnen in crist/ wherfore zif mete sclaundre my bro-
þer: I schal not ete flesche: into wip outhen ende: lestie I
sclaundre my broþer//

C^m 8^m



Wher I am not free: am I not apostle: wher I siþe
not crist ihū oure lorde: wher zee ben not my werke
in þe lorde: and þou z to oþer I am not apostle: but
neþeles to zou I am/ for whi zee ben þe signacle (or
litol signe) of myn apostlehed in þe lorde/ my defense to hem þat
aren

C^m 9^m

to ye corrintheis .i.

aren me: is his/wher we hane not power for to leede aboute a
 womman suster . as & oher apostlis & breheren of he lorde . &
 cephas (hat is petre) / or I alone & barnabas . hane not power
 for to worche hes þingis / who firtis (or holdiþ knyzthode) any
 tyme wiþ his owne soudis / who plauntiþ a vynezerde . & etih
 not of his frupte / who feediþ (or lesowiþ) a floce . & etih not
 of he mylke of he floce / wher astir man I seye hes þingis / for
 soþe it is writen in he lawe of moyse / þou schalt not bynde he
 mouþ of he ore þrescheynge (or traueþlynge) wheþer of oren is
 charge to god / wheþer for vs soþely he seiþ hes þingis / for
 why for vs þei ben writen . for he þat erih . oweþ to eren in
 hope / and he þat þreschiþ (or traueþliþ) . in hope for to per
 seyue fruptis / forsoþe zif we sowen spiritual þingis to zou: is
 it grete zif we repen zoure fleyschely þingis / zif oher ben pat
 teners of oure power . whi not raper we / but we vfen not his
 power . but we susteynen (or sustren) alle þingis . þat we zyue
 not lettynge (or sclaundre) to he euuangelie of cñ / witen zee
 not for þei þat worchen in he sacrarie (hat is place where holy
 þingis ben kepte) / eten þo þingis þat ben of he sacrarie . & þo
 þat seruen to he auter . taken parte wiþ he auter / so & he lorde
 ordeþnynde to hem þat tellen he gospel . for to lyue on he gos
 pel / forsoþe I vside noon of hes þingis / soþely I wrote not
 hes þingis . þat þei be done so in me / forsoþe it is gode to me
 more for to dye . þan any man auoyde my glorie / for whi zif I
 schal preche he gospel . glorie is not to me / forsoþe nede liþ to
 me / forsoþe woo to me . zif I schal not euuangelise / forsoþe zif
 I willynge do þis þing . I haue mede / soþely zif azenes my
 wille . dispensacon is bitaken to me / what þerfore is myn hire
 (or mede) / þat I prechynge he gospel . putte he gospel wiþ
 outhen spense takynge (or sustenaunce) / þerfore þat I mytste
 not my power in he gospel / for whi when I was fre of alle
 men . I made me seruaunt of alle men . þat I schulde wyne
 mo men / and to iewes I am made as a iewe . þat I schulde
 wyne iewes / to hem þat ben vndre he lawe . as I were vndre
 he

to ye corrintheis .i.

he lawe · whan I was not vndre he lawe · þat I schulde wynne
 hem þat weren vndir he lawe · to hem þat weren wiþ outh
 lawe · as I were wiþ outh lawe · whanne I was not wiþ ou-
 ten lawe of god · but I was in he lawe of crist · þat I schulde
 wynne hem þat weren wiþ outh he lawe / I am made sijk to
 sijk men · þat I schulde wynne sijk men / to alle men I am
 made alle þingis · þat I schulde make alle men saaf / forsoþe I
 do alle þingis for he gospel · þat I be made partener of it //
 ¶ Witen zee not þat þei þat rennen in a furlonge · alle forsoþe
 rennen · but one takith he prise / so renne zee · þat zee take / eche
 man þat strifeth in sichte · absteneth hym fro alle þingis / and þei
 forsoþe þat þei take a corruptible crowne · we forsoþe vncor-
 rupte / herfore I renne so · not as into vncerteyn þing · þus I
 sikt not as betynge he eyre · but I chastise my bodie & brynge
 it into seruage · lest þat parauenture whanne I haue prechide to
 oþer · I my self be made reprouable //

S
 Dhely breþeren I nyl zou for to vnknowe · for alle
 oure faderis weren vndre a cloude / and alle passiden
 þe see · & alle ben baptiside in moyse · in he cloude
 & in he see / and alle eten he same spiritual breed · &
 alle drunken he same spiritual drynke / forsoþe þei drunken of
 he spiritual · a soon solowynge hem / forsoþe he soon was crist ·
 but not in ful manye of hem · it was wel plesant to god / for
 whi þei ben castedowne in he deserte / forsoþe þes þingis ben done
 in fygure of vs · þat we be not coueyters of euylis · as & þei
 coueytiden / neþer be zee made ydolaters (þat is worschipers
 of false matremetis) · as summe of hem · as it is writen / he pu-
 ple satte for to ete & drynke · & þei haue risen vp for to pleye /
 neþer do we fornyfacoñ · as summe of hem diden fornyfacoñ ·
 & þre & twenty housandis sellen · (or dieden) in one day / neþer
 tempte we crist as summe of hem temptiden · and perischiden
 of serpentis / neþer grucche zee as summe of hem grucchiden ·
 and þei perischiden of he waster (or distrayer) / forsoþe alle þes

p p

þingis

C^m 10^m

to ye corrintheis .i.

þingis sellen to hem in figure/ soþely þei ben writen to oure
 correccō (or amēdyngē): into whom þe endis of þe worlde
 hane come// ¶ And so þe þat geſſiþ hym for to ſtonde: ſe þe þat
 he falle not/ temptacō take not zou: no but mannes/ forſoþe
 god is trewe þe whiche ſchal not ſuffre zou for to be temptide:
 ouer þat þat zee moſtne/ but he ſchal make wiþ þe temptacō
 alſo purueaunte: þat zee moſtne ſuſteyne// ¶ ¶ Therfore zee
 moſt derworþe to me: flee zee fro þe worſchippyngē of ydolis/
 as to prudente men I ſpeec: zee zou ſelf deme þat þing þat I
 ſeye/ þe cuppe of bleſſyngē þe whiche we bleſſen: wher it is not
 þe comunyngē of eſtis blode/ and þe breed þe whiche we bre-
 ken: wher it is not þe delyngē (or partetakyngē) of þe body of
 þe lordē/ for one breed & one body we manye ben/ alle we þat
 taken part of one breed & of one cuppe// ¶ ¶ Se zee iſt aſtir þe
 flepſche/ wher þei þat eten oſtis (or ſacrifices): ben not parte-
 ners of þe auter/ what herfore ſeye I/ þat þing offride to ydo-
 lis is any þing: or þat þe ydol is any þing/ but þo þingis þat
 heþen men offren: þei offren to deuylis & not to god// ¶ ¶ Forſoþe
 I nyl zou for to be made ſelowis of ſendis/ for zee moſtne not
 drynke þe cuppe of þe lordē: & þe cuppe of ſendis/ zee moſtne
 not be parteners of þe borde of þe lordē: & of þe borde of ſendis/
 wher we ſuen by enuie þe lordē/ wher we ben ſtrenger þan he/
 alle þingis ben leueful to me: but not alle þingis ſpeden/ alle
 þingis ben leueful to me: but not alle þingis edifiē/ no man
 ſeek þat þing þat is his owne: but þat þing þat is of anoper/
 alle þing þat comē in þe bocherie (or in þe plater) ete zee: no
 þing aringe for conſcience/ þe erþe & þe plente of it: is of þe lordē/
 forſoþe zif any of vnſeiþful (or heþen men) clepiþ zou to ſoper:
 & zee wolen go: alle þing þat is ſette to zou ete zee: no þing
 aringe for conſcience/ zif any man ſoþely ſchal ſeye: þis þing
 is offride to ydolis: nyl zee ete for hym þat ſchewide & for con-
 ſcience/ forſoþe I ſeye not þi conſcience: but of anoper/ ſoþely
 wherto is my liberte (or fredom) demyde of anoper mannes
 conſcience/ herfore zif I take parte wiþ grace: what am I
 blaſfemyde .

to ye corrintheis .i.

blasfempde: for þat I do graces (or þankyngis) & herfore wher
zee eten or drynken or done any oþer þing: do zee alle þingis
into þe glorie of god/ be zee wiþ ouden offencon (or ſclaundre)
to ietwes & heþen men: & to þe chirche of god: as & I by alle þin-
gis pleſe to alle men/ not ſeekynge what is profitable to me: but
þat þat to many men: þat þei ben made ſaaf//



Be zee folowers of me: as & I of cēt/ forſoþe breþeren
[I preiſe] zou: þat by alle þingis zee ben myndeful
of me: & as I bitoke to zou my comaundementis
zee kepen/ forſoþe I wole zou for to wite: þat cēt is
þe heed of eche man/ forſoþe þe heed of þe womman: is þe
man/ forſoþe þe heed of cēt: god/ eche man preyngē or prophe-
cyngē: þe heed hilde: defouliþ his heed/ forſoþe eche womman
preyngē or prophecyngē: þe heed not hilde: defouliþ hire
heed/ forſoþe it is one: as zif ſche bemade ballide/ for zif a wom-
man be not veylide (or coueride): be ſche pollide/ for zif it is
ſoule þing to a womman to be pollide or made ballide: veyle
(or hiþe) ſche hire heed/ ſoþely a man ſchal not veyle (or hiþe)
his heed: for he is þe ymage & glorie of god/ ſoþely a womman
is þe glorie of man/ ſoþely a man is not of þe womman:
but þe womman of þe man/ and forſoþe þe man is not made
for þe womman: but þe womman for þe man/ þerefore þe
womman ſchal haue a veyle on hire heed: & for aungels/ neþe-
les neþer þe man wiþ ouden womman: neþer þe womman wiþ
ouden man in þe lorde/ for whi as þe womman of man: ſo & þe
man by womman/ forſoþe alle þingis of god/ zee zoure ſelf
deme/ bicomē (or biſemē) a womman not veylide (or couer-
ide) prey god: neþer þe kynde it ſelf: techiþ vs/ forſoþe þat zif
a man noriſche longe heer: it is euyl ſame (or ſclaundre) to
hym/ but zif a womman noriſche longe heer: it is glorie to
hire for heris ben zouen to hire for veyle (or coueryngē)/ for-
ſoþe zif any man is ſeen for to be ful of ſtriſe amonge zou:
we haue not ſuche cuſtom: neþer þe chirche of god/ ſoþely þis
þing

C^m 11^m

to pe corrintheis .i.

þing I comaunde · not preysynge þat zee come to gedir not into better þing · but into worse/ firste forsoþe zou compynge to gedir into chirche · I here departyngis (or dissenconis) for to be · & of partie I bileue/ for whi it bihoueh heressies for to be · þat þei whiche be prouede · be made knowen to zou/ þerfore zou compynge to gedir into one · nowe it is not for to ete to lordis soper/ forsoþe eche man bifore takþ his soper for to ete/ and soperly anoper is hungry · anoper forsoþe is drunken/ wher zee hane not housis for to ete & drynke · or zee dispisen þe chirche of god · & confounden hem þat hane not/ what schal I seye to zou/ I preysse zou · in þis þing I preysse zou not// ¶ forsoþe I haue taken of þe lorde þat þing þe whiche & I haue bitaken to zou/ for þe lorde Ihu · in what nyzt he was bitrayede · tooke breed & doinge graces (or þankis) · he brake & seyde take zee & ete zee · þis is my body · þe whiche schal be bitrayede for zou/ do zee þis þing into my mynde/ also he took þe cuppe aftir he hadde soupede · seyng · þis cuppe is þe newe testament in my blood/ do zee þis þing · how ofte euer zee schulen drynke into my mynde/ soperly how ofte euer zee schulen ete þis breede & drynke þe cuppe · zee schulen schetwe þe deef of þe lorde · til he come/ and so who euer schal ete þe breed or drynke þe cuppe of þe lorde vntworþily he schal be gilty of þe body & blood of þe lorde/ forsoþe proue a man hym self · & so ete he of þe ilke breed & drynke of þe cuppe/ forsoþe he þat etith & drynkith vntworþily · etith & drynkith doom (or dampnacō) to hym · not wisely demynge þe body of þe lorde/ þerfore amonge zou many sick & vnstronge or feble · and many slepen (or dien)/ for zif we demyden wisely oure self · forsoþe we schulen not be demyde/ soperly þe while we ben demyde of þe lorde · we ben chastiside · þat we be not dampnyde wih þis worlde/ and so my breþeren whan zee comen to gedir for to ete · abide zee to gedir/ zif any man hungriþ · ete he at home · þat he come not to gedir into doom/ soperly I schal dispose oþer þingis · whanne I schal come//

Forsoþe

to ye corrintheis .I.



C^m 12^m

Forsoke þe spiritual þingis · breþeren I nyl zou for
to vnknoʷe/ soþely zee witen for whanne zee weren
heþen men: as zee weren ledde goinge to dounge
symulacris/ þerfore I make knowen to zou þat no
man spekyng in þe spirit of god: seiþ departyng fro Ihu/ and
no man maye seye þe lorde ihu is: no but in þe holy gost/ soþe-
ly departyng of graces ben: forsoke þe same spirit/ and de-
partynges of seruynges: forsoke þe same lorde/ and depart-
ynges of worschippynge ben: forsoke þe same god þat worchiph
alle þingis in alle þingis/ forsoke to eche man þe schewyng
of spirit is zouen to profite/ to anoþer forsoke bi spirit: þe worde
of wisdom is zouen/ to anoþer soþely: þe worde of kunnyng
astir þe same spirit/ seiþ to anoþer: grace & helþes in one spi-
rit to anoþer: þe worchyng of vertues/ to anoþer prophecie/
to anoþer discrecon (or verrey knowyng) of spiritis/ to ano-
þer kyndis of tungis (or langagis)/ to anoþer interpretyng
(or expounyng) of wordis/ forsoke alle þes þingis one in þe
same spirit worchiph: departyng to eche by hem self as he wole//
¶ Soþely as þer is one body & haþ many membris · forsoke
alle þe membris of þe body whanne þei ben manye: ben one
body: so & eñ/ and soþely in one spirit alle we ben baptiside in-
to one body: oþir ieiwes · oþer heþen men · oþer seruauntis ·
oþir fre: and alle we hane drunken in one spirit/ for whi & þe
body is not one membre: but manye/ zif þe foot schal seye: for
I am not þe hande · I am not of þe body: not þerfore is it not
of þe body/ and zif þe ere schal seye: for I am not þe yze · I am
not of þe body/ not þerfore it is not of þe body/ zif al þe body be
þe yze: where is helyng/ and zif al þe body be helyng: where
is smellyng? now forsoke god has putte membris: & eche of hem
in þe body as he wolde/ þat zif alle weren one membre: where þe
body? but now soþely many membris: soþely one body/ forsoke
þe yze schal not now seye to þe hande: I haue no nede of þi
werke/ or este þe hede to þe feet: zee ben not necessarie to me/ but
myche

to ye corinthiis .i.

myche more þo þat ben seen for to be more lyk (or liker) membris of þe body: ben more nedeful and to þem þat we gesien ſe to be vnnobler membris of þe body: we ſpoken more honoure in cumpas/ and þo membris þat ben vnboned: haue more bonede/ forſoþe oure boned membris of none þane nebe: but god tempide þe body ȝuyng more worſchip to it to whom it ſayliþ þat debate be not in þe body: but þat þe membris be biſe into þe ſame þing for eche oþer/ and ȝif one membre ſuffiþ any þing/ alle membris ſuffren þer wiþ/ oþer ȝif one membre glorieþ/ alle membris iopen togedir/ forſoþe ȝee ben þe body of criſt/ and membris of membre/ and ſoþely god putte ſumme in þe churche/ firſte apoſtliſ/ þe ſecounde tyme prophetiſ/ þe priuie techers aſtirwarde vertues/ aſtirwarde graces of helyngiſ/ gouernayliſ (or gouernyngeſ) kyndiſ of langagiſ/ interpretaconſ of wordiſ/ wher alle ben apoſtliſ/ wher alle prophetiſ/ wher alle techers/ wher alle vertues/ wher alle men haue grace of helyngiſ/ wher alle ſpeken wiþ langagiſ/ wher alle interprete (or expounen)/ forſoþe ſue ȝee þe better goſtly ȝiftiſ/ and ȝit I ſchewe to ȝow a more excellent (or worþi) weye//

C^m 13^m



Zif I ſpeke wiþ tungiſ of men & aungeliſ/ ſoþely I haue no charite: I am made as braſſe ſounyng/ or a ſymbal tynkynge/ and ȝif I haue propheete & haue knowen alle myſteries & al kunnyng or ſcience/ & ȝif I haue al ſeiþ/ ſo þat I ouerbere hilliſ (fro o place into an oþer)/ forſoþe ȝif I ſchal not haue charite: I am nouȝt/ and ȝif I ſchal departe alle my goodiſ into metiſ of pore men/ & ȝif I ſchal bitake my body/ ſo þat I brenne/ forſoþe ȝif I ſchal not haue charite: it proſiteþ to me no þing/ charite iſ patient/ it iſ benyngne (or of good wille)/ charite enuyeth not/ it doiþ not gile/ it iſ not inblowen (wiþ pride)/ it iſ not ambiciuſ (or coueytoute) of worſchipiſ/ it ſekith not þo þingiſ þat ben here owne/ it iſ not ſtiride to wrapþe/ it þenkiþ not euyl/ it ioyeth not on wickidneſſe/ forſoþe it ioyeth to gedir to treuþe/ it

to ye corrintheis .i.

it suffriþ alle þingis • it bileueþ alle þingis/ it hopiþ alle þingis • it suffeyneth alle þingis/ charite falliþ not doune/ wheþer prophecies schulen be voydide • oþer langagis schulen ceese • oþer science schulen be distrupede/ forsoþe of partie wee hane knowen: and of partie we prophecien/ forsoþe whanne þat schal come þat is parsite: þat þing þat is of partie schal be avoydide/ whanne I was a litil childe: I spac as a litil childe • I vndirstode as a litil childe/ forsoþe whanne I was made a man: I avoydide þo þingis þat weren of a litil childe/ forsoþe we seen now by a myrour in dirkenesse: þanne forsoþe face to face/ now I knowe of partie: þanne forsoþe I schal knowe • as & I am knowen/ nowe forsoþe dwellen seiþ • hope • charite/ þes þre: forsoþe þe more of hem is charite//



See zee charite • loue zee spiritual þingis: nowe forsoþe þat zee prophecie/ forsoþe he þat spekiþ in tunge: spekiþ not to men but to god/ forsoþe no man heriþ/ soþely þe spirit spekiþ mysteries/ forwhi he þat prophecieþ: spekiþ to men to edificaciō • & to monestynge & confortynge/ he þat spekiþ in tunge: edificieþ hym self/ forsoþe he þat prophecieþ: edificieþ þe chirche of god/ forsoþe I wole ȝou alle for to speke in tungis: but more for to prophecye/ for whi he þat prophecieþ: is more þan he þat spekiþ in tungis (or langagis): no but parauenture he interprete (or declare) • þat þe chirche take edificaciōn/ nowe forsoþe breþeren ȝif I schal come to ȝou spekyng in tungis: what schal I profite: no but ȝif I schal speke to ȝou • oþer in reuelaciōs oþer in science • oþer in prophecie • oþer in techynge: neþeles þo þingis þat ben wiþ outen soule (or lijf) ȝpyunge voyces • oþer pipe • oþer harpe • no but ȝif þei schulen ȝyue distynceōn of sounyngis: how schal it be conde þat is songen • oþer þat is harpide? and soþely ȝif þe trumpe ȝife vncerteyn voyce: who schal make hym self redy to þe batayle? so & no but zee schulen ȝyue an open worde by tunge: how schal þat þat is seyde be knowen? soþely zee schulen be

C^m 14^m

to ye corrintheis .i.

be spekyng in þe eyre · so many as ben tungis (or langagis) in
 þis worlde · & no þing is wip outhen voyce/ þerfore zif I schal not
 knowe þe vertue of voyce · I schal be to hym to whom I schal
 speke a barbar (or not vnderstonde) · & he þat spekiþ to me a
 barbar/ so & zee for zee ben louers of spiritis · to þe edificacōn
 of þe chirche: seeke þat zee be plenteouse/ & þerfore he þat spe-
 kiþ in tunge · prepe he þat he interprete (or expounde)/ for whi
 zif I prepe in tunge my spirit prepeþ/ forsoþe my mynde or re-
 son: is wip outhen fruyte/ þerfore what þing is? I schal prepe
 in spirit: I schal prepe in mynde (or resounde)/ I schal sepe psalme
 in spirit: I schal sepe psalme in mynde (or resounde)/ for whi zif
 þou schalt blesse in spirit: who fulfilliþ þe place of an ydiot (or
 vnderide) man: how schal he sepe amen vpon þe blessinge · for
 he woot not what þou seyst/ for whi þou soþely dost wel graces
 (or þankyngis) but an oþer man is not edifiede// ¶ I do graces to
 my god: for I speke in þe langagis of alle zou/ but in þe chirche
 I wole speke syue wordis in my witte þat I teche oþer men: þan
 ten þousande of wordis in tunge// ¶ Breþeren nyl zee be
 made chyldren in wittis: but in malice be zee litil/ forsoþe in
 wittis be zee parasite/ soþely in þe lawe it is writen/ for in oþer
 tungis & in oþer lippis I schal speke to þis puple · & neþer so it
 schal here me seiþ þe lorde/ and so langagis ben into token ·
 not to seiþful men: but to men outh of þe seiþ/ forsoþe prophe-
 cies not to men outh of þe seiþ: but to seiþful men/ þerfore zif
 al þe chirche come togedir into one · & alle men speken in tungis ·
 soþely zif ydiotis entren (or men outh of þe seiþ): wher þei seyn
 not · what ben zee wode? forsoþe zif alle men propheeten · for-
 soþe zif any vnseiþful man or ydiot entre: he is conuyt of
 alle · he is wisely demyde of alle/ forsoþe he hidde þingis of his
 herte ben knowen/ and so he fallynge doune into þe face: schal
 worschip god · schewinge verreyly þat god is in zou/ þerfore
 breþeren what is [] whanne zee comen to gedir · eche of zou
 haþ a psalme · he haþ techynge · he haþ apocalips (or reuela-
 cōn) · he haþ tunge · he haþ interpretynge (or expounyng): be
alle

to ye corrintheis .i.

alle þingis done to edificacōn/ wheþer a man spekiþ in tunge
 aftir two or as myche þre & by parties: þat one interprete/ for-
 soþe zif þer be not an interpretour: be he stille (or speke not)
 in þe chirche/ soþely speke he to hym self & to god/ soþely pro-
 phetis two or þre seye: & oþer wisely deme/ þat zif any þing
 schal be schewide to one sittynge: be þe former stille/ forsoþe
 zee moʷne prophecy alle by eche by hym self: þat alle men
 lerne: & alle monest/ and þe spiritis of prophetis: ben sugettis
 to prophetis/ soþely god is not of dissencioun: but of pees/ as &
 in alle chirchis of holy men I preche/ wʷmmen in chirchis be
 stille/ soþely it is not suffride to hem for to speke: but for to be
 suget as þe lawe seiþ/ forsoþe zif þei wolen any þing lerne: at
 home are þei here housbondis/ forsoþe it is foul þing to a wom-
 man: for to speke in þe chirche/ wheþer of ʷou þe worde of god
 came forþ: or to ʷou al one it came: zif any man is seen for
 to be a prophete or spiritual: knowe he þo þingis þat I write
 to ʷou: for þei ben comaundementis of þe lorde/ forsoþe zif any
 man unknowiþ: he schal be unknowen/ and so breþeren loue
 zee for to prophecy: & nyl zee forbede for to speke in tungis/
 forsoþe be alle þingis done honestly & by ordre in ʷou//



Soþely breþeren I make knowen þe gospel to ʷou: þe whiche I haue prechide to ʷou: þe whiche & zee
 haue taken in whiche & zee stonden: by whiche & zee
 ben sauede/ by whiche resounne I haue prechide to
 ʷou zif zee holden: zif zee hane not bileuede ydilly/ forsoþe I
 bitoke to ʷou in þe firste: þat þing þat & I took: for crist was
 deade for oure synnes aftir þe scriptures: & for he was biriede:
 & for he roos azen in þe þridde day aftir scripturis: & for he was
 seen to cephas (þat is petre): & aftir þis þing to elleuene: aftir-
 warde he was seen to mo þan fyue hundride breþeren to gedir:
 of þe whiche many dwellen til to zit/ forsoþe summe haue slepte
 (or diede)/ aftirwarde he was seen to James: aftirwarde to
 alle þe apostlis/ forsoþe at þe laste of alle: he was seene to me:

C^m 15^m

to ye corrintheis .i.

as to a mylborne childe/ forsoþe I am þe lesse of apostlis · þat
am not worþi for to be clepide apostle · for I pursuede þe chirche
of god · forsoþe by þe grace of god · I am þat þing þat I am/
and his grace was not boyde (or hidil) in me · but I traueylide
more plenteuouſly þan alle þei/ forsoþe not I · but þe grace of
god wiþ me/ soþely wheþer I wheþer þei · so we hane prechide ·
& so þei hane bileuede/ forsoþe zif cñ is prechide · þat he roos
azen fro deade (spiritis)/ how seyn summe in zou for þe azen
ryſynge of deade men is not/ forsoþe zif þe azen ryſynge of
deade men is not · neþer cñ roos/ soþely zif cñ roos not · oure
prechyng is veyn oure seiþ is veyne/ forsoþe & we ben founden
falle witnessis of god · for we hane seyde witnessynge azenes
god · þat he reyside crist whom he reyside not · zif deade men
risen not azen/ for whi zif deade men risen not azen · neþer cñ
roos azen/ þat zif cñ roos not azen · oure seiþ is veyne/ forsoþe
zit zee ben in zoure synnes/ þerfore þei þat slepten (or dieden)
in crist · haue perischide/ zif in his lijf onely we ben hoppyng in
crist · we ben more wrecchis þan alle men/ now forsoþe cñ roos
azen fro deade (men) · þe firste fruytis of slepyng (men or di-
yng)/ for soþely by a man deþ · and by a man azen risynge of
deade men/ and as in adam alle men dien · so in crist alle men
schulen be quykenyde/ eche man forsoþe in his ordre/ firste fruy-
tis cñ · astirwarde þei þat ben of cñ · þat byleuen in þe comyng
of crist/ astirwarde an ende/ whanne he schal bitake þe kyngdom
of god & to þe fadir · whanne he schal avoyde al pryncehode · &
power & vertue/ soþely it bihoueþ hym for to regne · til he putte
alle his enemyes vnder his feet/ forsoþe at þe laste þe enemye
deþ schal be destruyede/ forsoþe he haþ made sujet alle þingis
vnder his feet/ forsoþe whanne he seiþ · alle þingis be sugettis to
hym · wiþ outen doute outaken hym þat sugettide alle þingis
to hym/ soþely whanne alle þingis schulen be suget to hym ·
þanne he þe sone schal be suget to hym þat sugettide alle þingis
to hym · þat god be alle þingis in alle þingis/ elles what schulen
þei done þat ben baptiside for deade men · zif in alle maner ·
deade

to ye corrintheis .i.

Deade men risen not azen/ wherto & we ben in perel euery houre/
 echeday I dye/ for zoure glorie breheren/ þe whiche glorie I haue
 in cñst I hūoure lorde/ zif vp man I haue souzten to beestis at eph-
 esy · what profitiþ it to me/ zif deade men risen not azen/ ete
 we & drynke we/ to morn forsoþe we schulen dye/ nyl zee be
 deceyuede/ forsoþe euyl spechis corruppen (or distruyen) gode
 þewis (or vertues)/ awake zee iuste men/ and nyl zee synne/
 forsoþe summe haue ignoraunce of god/ to reuerence I speke to
 zou but summan seiþ/ how schulen deade men rise azen/ or in
 what manner body schulen þei come/ vnwiseman/ þat þing
 þat þou sowest · is not quykenyde/ no but it die firste/ and þat
 þing þat þou sowest · not þe body þat is to come þou sowest/
 but a nakide corne · as of whete or of summe of þe oþer/ for-
 soþe god ȝyueþ to it a body as he wole/ and to eche of seedis
 þe propre body// ¶ not eche sleysche þe same sleysche/ but for-
 soþe anoþer of men · anoþer soþely of beestis · & oþer forsoþe
 of briddis · an oþer forsoþe of fischis/ & heuenely bodies &
 erþely bodies/ but forsoþe anoþer glorie of heuenely bodies/
 an oþer forsoþe of erþely/ anoþer clerenesse of þe sunne · ano-
 þer clerenesse of þe mone/ anoþer clerenesse of sternes/ forsoþe
 a sterne dyuerfþ fro a sterne in clerenesse/ so & þe azen risynge
 of deade men/ it is sowen in corrupciō/ it schal rise in vncor-
 rupciō/ it is sowen in vnnobley/ it schal rise in glorie/ it is
 sowen in infirmyte/ it schal rise in vertue/ it is sowen a beestly
 body/ it schal rise a spiritual body/ zif þer is a beestly body/ þer
 is & a spiritual body as it is writen/ þe firste man adam is made
 into a soule lyuyngē/ and þe laste adam into a spirit quyken-
 ynge/ but not firste þat þat is spiritual/ but þat þat is beestly/
 aftirwarde þat þat is spiritual/ þe firste man of erþe/ erþely/ þe
 secounde man of heuene/ heuenely/ what maner þe erþely
 man/ suche þe erþely men/ and what maner þe heuenely man/
 suche þe heuenely men/ þerfore as we hane borne þe ymage of
 þe erþely man/ bere we & þe ymage of þe heuenely/ breheren
 I seye þis þing/ for sleysche & blood motwne not welde þe kyng-
dom

to ye corrintheis .i.

dom of god · neþer corrupcon ſchal welde incorrupcon/ lo I ſeye to zou myſterie (or pryete) of holy þingis/ forſoþe alle we ſchulen riſe azen: but not alle we ſchulen be inchaungide/ in a moment · in þe ſmytynge of an yze: in þe laſte trumpe/ forſoþe þe trumpe ſchal ſynge: & deade men þat ben in c̃ſt ſchulen riſe azen/ þe firſte incorrupte: & we ſchulen be inchaungide/ forſoþe it bihoueh þis corruptible þing cloþe incorrupcon/ and þis deadely þing: for to cloþe vndeadeþynneſſe/ forſoþe whan þis deadely þing ſchal cloþe vndeadeþynneſſe: þanne ſchal be made þe worde þat is writen/ deþ is ſouþide vp in victorie/ deþ: where is þi victorie: deþ: where is þi pricke: forſoþe þe pricke of deþ: is ſynne/ forſoþe þe vertue of ſynne is lawe/ forſoþe þankynge to god þat ȝaue to vs victorie: by oure lorde Ihu c̃ſt þat was deade for vs/ and ſo my derworþe breþeren · be ȝee ſtedefaſte & vnmouable: beingeplenteuouſe in werke of þe lorde: euermore wytynge þat oure traueyl is not ydil in þe lorde//

C^m 16^m



Eschape of þe colettis (or gederynge of money) · þat ben made into ſeyntis · as I ordeynede in þe chirchis of galathie: ſo & do ȝee by one of þe wike/ eche of zou kepe (or laye vp) at hym ſelf · keepynge þat ſchal plect to hym · þat not whanne I ſchal come: þanne be made colettis/ forſoþe whanne I ſchal be preſent · whom ȝee ſchulen proue by epiſtles · hem I ſchal ſende for to partiſely bere ȝoure grace into irlm/ for ȝif it ſchal be worþi þat & I go: þei ſchulen go wiþ me/ ſoþely I ſchal come to zou: whanne I ſchal paſſe by macedonye/ ſoþely parauenture I ſchal dwelle at zou · or alſo dwelle by wynter: þat & ȝee leede me whidir euer I ſchal go/ ſoþely I wille not now ſe ȝou in paſſynge/ forſoþe I hope ſumwhat of tyme for to dwelle at zou: ȝif god ſchal ſuffre/ forſoþe I ſchal dwelle at ephes: til to wittuntyde/ ſoþely a greet dore & euydent (or open) is openyde to me: & many aduerſaries/ ſoþely ȝif tymothe ſchal come: ſe ȝee þat he be wiþ outh drede at zou/ for he worchith þe werke of þe lorde:

as

to ye corrintheis .i.

as & I/ perfore no man dispise hym/ forsoþe leede zee hym in
pees: þat he come to me/ forsoþe I abide him wiþ breþeren//
I forsoþe I make knowen to zou of appollo: for I preyde hym
myche: þat he schulde come to zou wiþ breþeren/ and soþely it
was not his wille þat he schulde come now/ forsoþe he schal
come whan it schal be able to hym/ wake zee & stonde zee in
seþ: do zee manly: & be zee confortide in þe lorde: and be alle
zoure þingis done in charite/ forsoþe breþeren I biſeche zou: zee
haue knowen þe hous of steuene (þe womman): & of fortu-
naty: & acaye: for þei ben þe firste fruytis of acaye: & into
mynysterie of seyntis: þei hane ordeynyde hem self: þat & zee
ben sugettis to suche: and to eche wirchyng to gedir & trauey-
lynge/ forsoþe I enioye in þe presence of steuene & of fortunate
& acaye: for þei fulfilden þat þing þat saylde to zou/ forsoþe
þei haue fulfild & my spirit & zoure/ perfore knowe zee hem
þat ben suche maner (men)/ alle þe chirches of aspe: greten zou
wel/ aquyla & prisca greten zou myche in þe lorde at whom I
am herboride: with here homely chirche/ alle breþeren greten
zou wel/ grete zee wel to gedir in holy coffe: my gretynge/ by
poulis hande: zif any man loue not oure lorde Ihu crist: be he
curſide maranatha/ þe grace of oure lorde Ihu crist: be wiþ zou/
my charite be wiþ zou alle in Ihu crist oure lorde amen//

ye secoude pistle to corrintheis

C^m 1^m



Dule apostle of Ihu crist · by þe wille of
god & tymothe broþer · to þe chirche of
god þat is at corrynthe · wiþ alle seyntis
þat ben in alle achaye · grace to zou of
god oure fadir · & of þe lord Ihu crist/
bleside (be) god & fadir of oure lord
Ihu crist · fadir of mercyes & god of al
comfort (or solace) · þat comfortiþ vs in
al oure tribulacō · þat & we mowne comforte hem · þat ben
in al pressure (or ouerleyinge) · by þe exortacō (or monest-
yng) · by whiche & we ben monestide of god/ for as passiouns
of crist ben plenteous in vs · so & by crist oure comfort is plente-
uous/ forsoþe wher we ben turblide (or pursuede) for zoure
techynge & helpe · oþer ben comfortide for zoure comfort · oþer
we ben monestyde for zoure monestyng & helpe · þe whiche
wirchis in zou þe suffryng of þe same passiouns · þe whiche &
we suffren · þat oure hope be sadde for zou/ wityng for as zee
ben felotwis of þe passiouns · so zee schulen be & of comforte//
¶ Forsoþe breþeren we wole not zou for to vnwite · of oure
tribulacō þat is done in asie/ for ouer maner we ben greuyde
aboue vertue · so þat it anoyede vs · zhe for to lyue/ but we self
in oure self hadden of deþ þat we be not trystyng in oure self ·
but in god þat reysih deade men/ þe whiche delyueride vs · &
delyuerih fro so grete perels into whom we hopen · for & zit he
schal delyuer helpyng & zou in preyer for vs · þat of þe persons
of many faces · of þat zyuyng þat is in zou · by many parte-
ners · graces (or þankis) ben done to god for vs/ for why oure
glorie is þis · þe wityssyng of oure conscience þat in symple-
ness

to ye corrintheis . 2 .

nessē & clennessē of god · & not in fleschely wisdom: but in þe grace of god · we lyuen in þis worlde/ forsoþe more plenteuouſly to zou/ soþely we writen not oþer þingis: þan þo þat zee hane redde & knowen/ forsoþe I hope þat til to þe ende zee schulen knowe as & zee hane knowen vs of partie/ for we ben zoure glorie: and zee oure · in þe day of oure lorde Ihū cñ/ and in þis tristynge · I wolde firste come to zou · þat zee hadden þe secounde grace: and þat I schulde by zou passe into macedonye/ and este fro macedonye I schulde come to zou: & of zou be ledde into Iudee/ forsoþe whanne I wolde þis þing: wher I vside liztnesse/ or þo þingis þat I þenke: I þenke aftir þe flesche · þat at me be zhe & nay · forsoþe god is trewe · for oure worde þe whiche was at zou · þer is not in it zhe & nay: but in it is is (þat is treuþe)/ soþely Ihū crist þe sone of god · þe whiche is prechide in zou by vs · by me & siluan & tymothe · þer was not in hym zhe & nay: but in hym is was · (þat is stidfast treuþe)/ forsoþe how many euer ben bihestis of god: in hym is · (þat is ben fulfildē)/ þerfore & by hym we seyn amen to god: to oure ioþe/ þe whiche soþely confermē vs wiþ zou in cñ · & þe whiche god anoyntide vs · & þat markide vs · & zæue a wedde (or ernes) of þe spirit of oure hertes/ forsoþe I inclepe god witnesse into my soule: þat I sparynge zou came not ouer corrinthe/ not for we ben lordis of zoure feiþ: but we ben helpers of zoure ioþe/ for whi þourgh bileue zee stonden//



Forsoþe I ordeynye þis ilke þing at me: þat I schulde not come estesone into sorowe to zou/ soþely zif I make zou sory (or heuy): and who is he þat gladiþ me · no but he þat is sorowful of me: and þis same þing I wrote to zou · þat whanne I schal come I haue not sorowe vpon sorowe of hem of whom it bihouede me for to ioþe/ tristynge in zou alle: for my ioþe is of zou alle/ forwhi of myche tribulacon & angwische of herte I wrote to zou by many teeris · þat zee be not sory: but þat zee wite what charite I haue more plenteuouſly

to ye corrintheis .2.

plenteuouſly in zou/forſoþe zif any man haþ made me ſorowful: he haþ not made me ſorowful but of partie · þat I charge (or deſeſe) not zou alle/ his blamyng þat is made of manye ſufficiþ to hym þat is ſuche maner man · ſo þat azenwarde zee zyue me more & comforte to hym/ leſſe parauenture he þat is ſuche maner (man) be ſoupen vp (or diſpeyre): by more greet heuyneſſe/ for whiche þing I biſeche zou · þat zee conferme charite into hym/ forſoþe þerfore I wrote þat I knowe zoure aſſaying · wher in alle þingis zee ben obedient/ forſoþe to whom zee haue any þing zouen: & I/ for whi & I þat I haue zif any þing zaue I haue zouen for zou in þe perſone of criſt · þat we be not deceyuyde of ſathanas/ ſoþely we vnknewen not his þouztis// ¶ Forſoþe whanne I hadde comen to troade for þe goſpel of c̄ſt · & a dore was openyde to me · I hadde not reſte to my ſpirit · for þat I ſonde not my brother tyte: but I ſeyinge to hem farewel: paſſide into macedonye/ þerfore þankyngis to god þat euermore makith vs to haue victorpe in c̄ſt Jhū · & ſchewiþ by vs þe odoure of hys knowynge in eche place/ for we ben þe gode odoure (or ſauour) of c̄ſt to god · in þes þat ben made ſaaf & in þes þat periſchen/ to oþer ſoþely odoure of deþ into deþ · to oþer forſoþe odoure of liif into liif/ and to þes þingis: who ſo able/ ſoþely we ben not as ful many · auoutrynge þe worde of god: but of clenneſſe/ but as of god · biſore god in c̄ſt we ſpeken//

C^m 3^m



Beynne we eſteſone for to comende (or preyſe) oure ſelf · or wher we neden as ſummen preyſynge lettris to zou or of zou/ zee ben oure piſtel · writen in zoure hertis · ye whiche is conde & redde of alle men/ zee made open for zee ben þe piſtel of c̄ſt mynyſtride of vs & writen not of ynke: but by þe ſpirit of quykke god/ not in ſtony tablis: but in ſleyſchely tablis of herte// ¶ Forſoþe we hane not ſuche triſt by c̄ſt to god · not þat we ben ſufficient · for to þenke any þing of vs ſelf as of vs: but oure ſufficiencie is of god/ þe whiche & made

to ye corrintheis .2.

& made vs able mynystris of þe testament: not by lettre • but by spirit/ for þe lettre sleeth: forsoþe þe spirit guykeneth/ for zif þe mynystracon of deþ defourmyde by lettris in stoness in glorie: so þat þe children of isrl myzten not biholde into þe face of moyses • for þe glorie of his chere • þe whiche (glorie) is auoydide: how not more þe mynystracon of spirit schal be in glorie? forwhi zif þe mynystracon of dampnacion is in glorie: myche more þe mynysterie (or seruice) of ryztwelnesse is plenteuous in glorie/ forwhi neþer þat þat was cleer in his partie was glorifiede • for excellent glorie/ soþely zif þat þat is auoydide is by glorie? myche more þat þat dwellith is in glorie/ þerfore we haunþe suche hope: vfen myche triste/ and not as moyses putte a veyle on his face • þat þe children of isrl schulden not biholde into his face: þe whiche veyle is auoydide/ but þe wittis of hem ben astonyede/ soþely til into þis day þe same veyle in redyng of þe olde testament dwellith • not schewide: for in cō it is auoydide/ but til into þis day whan moyses is redde: þe veyle is putte vpon here hertis/ forsoþe whanne isrl schal be conuertide to god: þe veyle schal be done away/ forsoþe þe lorde is a spirit/ forsoþe where is þe spirit of god: þere is liberte/ forsoþe alle we wiþ schewide face: biholdyng þe glorie of þe lorde ben transfourmyde into þe same ymage • fro clerenesse into clerenesse: as of þe spirit of þe lorde//

Therfore we haunþe þis admynystracon (or office) vpon whiche we haue goten mercede: saylen not • but done awaye þe pryueþ þingis of schame • not walkyng in sutel gile • neþer auoutryng þe worde of god • but in schewyng of þe treuþe comendyng oure self to eche conscience of men before god/ for zif also oure gospel be coueride (or hidde): in þes þat perischen it is coueride • in whiche þe god of þis worlde hath blyndide þe soules of men oute of bileue: þat þe liztynge of þe gospel of þe glorie of crist • þat is þe ymage of god invisible schyne not ¶ forsoþe we

C^m 4^m

to ye corrintheis . 2 .

prechen [not] oure self: but Ihu crist oure lorde/ forsope vs
 zoure seruauntis by Ihu/ for god hat seyde he lizte for to
 schyne of dirkeness: he hath inliztide in oure hertis to be il-
 lumynynge of þe science of þe clerenesse of god: into þe face
 of Ihu crist/ forsope we haue þis tresoure in britel vessels: þat
 þe liztnesse be of goddis vertue . & not of vs/ in alle þingis we
 suffren tribulacō: but we ben not made strepte/ we ben made
 pore: but we ben not distrupede/ we suffren persecucō: but
 we ben not forsaken/ we ben made lowe: but we ben not con-
 foundide/ we ben caste doune: but we perischen not/ euermore
 berynge aboute þe mortifynge of Ihu crist in our body: þat
 & þe lijf of Ihu be schetwide in oure bodys/ soþely euermore
 we þat lyuen . ben taken into deþ for Ihu: þat & þe lijf of Ihu
 be schetwide in oure deadely slepche/ þerfore deþ worchis in
 vs: lijf soþely in zou/ forsope haupnge spirit of seih . as it is
 writen/ I haue bileuede for whiche þing I spake: and we bi-
 leuen: for whiche þing & we speken/ witynge for þe þat reyside
 Ihu . schal reyse & vs wih Ihu: and schal ordeyne vs wih zou/
 soþely alle þingis for zou: þat grace beinge plenteuouse by
 many in doynge of þankes: beinge plenteuous into glorie of
 god/ for whiche þing: we saylen not/ but þou z þe ilke þat is
 wih outhen forþ oure man be corruptede: neþeles þat man þat
 is wihine forþ is renevide fro day into day/ forsope þat þat
 is inpresent (or now) . a litil moment lastynge . & lizte (or
 esy) þing of oure tribulacō: worchis ouer maner (or mesure)
 into hizenesse . þe euerlastynge weyze of glorie in vs . vs not
 biholdynge þo þingis þat ben seen: but þo þat ben not seen/
 soþely þo þingis þat ben sene: ben temperal (or duryng but
 schorte tyme/ forsope þo þingis þat ben not seen: ben euer-
 lastynge (or wihouthen ende//

Soþely

to ye corrintheis .2.



Sohely we witen for zif oure erhely hous of his dwell- C^m 5^m
yng be dissoluyde: þat we haue a bildyng of god
an hous not made by handis: everlastyng in he-
venes/ for whi & in þis þing we mournen: coueyt-
yng for to be cloþide aboue oure dwellyng in heuene: zif
neþeles we ben founden cloþide & not nakide/ forwhi & we þat
ben in þis tabernacle: sorowen wiþiñe forþ greuyde for þat
we wolen be dispoylde: but be cloþide aboue: þat þe ilke þing
þat is deadely: be soupen vp of liif/ forsoþe he makith vs into
þis þing is god: þat 3aue to vs a wedde (or ernes) of spirit/
þerfore we beinge hardy algatis & wityng: for þe while we
ben in þis body: we gon in pilgrymage fro þe lorde/ forsoþe
we walken by feiþ: and not by cleer sȳt/ forsoþe we ben hardy
& hane gode wille: more for to bee in pilgrymage fro þe body:
and for to be present to god/ and þerfore we stryuen: wheþer
absent wheþer present: for to plese hym/ forsoþe it bihoueh vs
alle for to be schewide bifore þe trone of crist: þat euery man
receyue (or telle azen) þe propre þingis of þe body as he hap
done: oþer good oþer euyl/ þerfore we wityng þe drede of þe
lorde: softely mouē (or counseplen) to men/ soþely to god
we ben open/ soþely I hope & in 3oure consciences: vs for to be
knowen/ we comenden not oure self esteſone to 3ou: but we
3yue to 3ou occaſiō for to glorie for vs: þat 3ee haue to hem
þat glorien in þe face & not in þe herte/ soþely wheþer we by
mynde (or resoun) passen to god: wher we ben sobre to 3ou:
soþely þe charite of cñt drȳueþ vs gessyng þis þing: for zif
one is deade for alle: þerfore alle ben deade/ and crist diede
for alle: þat & þei þat lyuen: lyue not nowē of hem self: but to
hym þ' diede for hem & roos azen/ and so we fro þis tyme hane
knowen no man astir þe flesche/ and zif we knewen crist astir
þe flesche: but riȳt nowē we hane not knowen/ þerfore zif any
newe creature is in crist: olde þingis haue passide: and lo alle
þingis ben newe made/ forsoþe alle þingis of god: þe whiche
recounseylide

to ye corrintheis .2.

recounseylide vs to hym by crīst · & zaue to vs þe mynysterie
(or seruyce) of recounseylunge to hem þe worlde not rettynge
to hem here giltis · & puttide in vs þe worde of recounseylunge/
þerfore we ben sette in legatie (or message) · as god monest-
ynge by vs/ we bisechen zou for crīst · be zee recounseylide to
god/ god þe fadir made hym þe synne for us · þat is redemp-
con (or sacrifice for synne) · þe whiche knewe not synne · þat
we schulden be made rīztwefnesse of god in hym//

C^m 6^m



Forsoþe we helpynge monestien · þat zee receyue not
þe grace of god in veyne/ soþely he seip/ in tyme
accepte (or wel plesynge) I haue herde þee · & in
day of helpe I haue helpide þee/ lo nowe a tyme
acceptable · lo nowe a daye of helpe/ to no man zyuyng any
offencion (or hurtynge) · þat our mynysterie (or seruyce) benot
reproyde/ but in alle þingis zyue we oure self as mynystris
of god · in myche pacience · in tribulacoñs · & in nedis · in an-
gwischis · in betyngis (or scourgyngis) · in prisoñs · in discen-
ciouns wipīne forþ · in traueylis · in wakynge · in fastynge ·
in chastite · in science (or kunnyng) · in longe abidyng · in
swetnesse in þe holy goſt · in charite not seynge · in worde of
treuþe · in þe vertue of god/ by armours of rīztwefnesse on þe
rīztþalfe & lifteþalf · by glorie & vnnobleþ · by euel fame &
gode fame · as deceyuours · and trewe men/ as þei þ^r ben vn-
known · and known/ as men dyinge · and lo we lyuen/ as
chastifide · and not made deade/ as sorowful · forsoþe euermore
ioyinge/ as haupnge nede (or as nedý men) · forsoþe makynge
ryche/ as no þing haupnge · and weldyng alle þingis · ¶ D
zee corryntheis oure mouþ is open to zou · oure herte is alar-
gide/ be zee not made strepte in vs · but be zee made strepte in
zoure entraylis/ forsoþe we haupnge þe same rewarde · I seye
as to sones · & be zee alargide// ¶ M^yl zee leede zok wip vn-
seipful men/ soþely what partynge (or comunynge) of rīzt-
wefnesse wip wickidnesse/ or what felowschipe of līzt to dirke-
nessis/

to ye corrintheis .2.

nessis/ sodely what acordynge of crist to belial/ or what part of a feiþful (or cōsten man) wip an vnfeiþful (or heþen) but what consent to þe puple of god wip ydolis/ forsoþe zee ben þe temple of quicke god/ as þe lorde seiþ/ for I schal dwelle in hem * & I schal walke & I schal be þe god of hem * & þei schulen be to me a puple/ for whiche þing go zee oute of þe mydle of hem * & be zee departide seiþ þe lorde * & touche zee not vnclene þing/ and I schal receyue zou & I schal be to zou into a fadir/ and zee schulen be to me into sones & douztris * seiþ þe lorde almyȝty//



Therefore moſte derworþ (breþeren) we hauynge þes
 ziftis * clente we vs fro al filþe of fleysche & spirit/ parfitely makynge halowynge in þe drede of þe
 lorde/ take zee vs * we hane hirte no man * we hane
 corrupte no man * we hane bigilide no man/ I ſeye not to zoure
 condempnyng/ forsoþe I ſeyde bifore * þat zee ben in oure
 hertis/ for to die to gedir & lyue to gedir/ myche triſte is to me
 anentis zou/ myche glorpyng is to me for zou/ I am fulſilde
 wip comfort I abounde (or am plenteuous) in ioye/ in al oure
 tribulacon/ for why & whanne we hadden come to macedo-
 nye/ oure fleysche had no reſte * but we ſuffirden al tribula-
 con forsoþe wipouten forþ * ſiȝtyngis/ wipinē forþ dredis/
 but þe þat comfortiþ meke men/ god comfortide & vs in þe
 comyng of tye/ forsoþe not onely in þe comyng of hym/ but
 also in þe comforte bi whiche he comfortide me in zou * tell-
 ynge to vs zoure deſire * zoure wepyng * zoure loue for me/
 ſo þat I ioyede more/ for zif I made zou ſoory in a piſſle/ now
 it rewip not me/ and zif it rewide * I ſeinge þat þouȝ I made
 zou ſoory in þat piſſle at an houre/ now I haue ioye/ not for
 zee weren made ſoroweful/ but for zee weren made ſoroweful
 to penaunce/ ſodely zee ben made ſory aſtir god/ þat in no
 þing payrement zee ſuffre of vs/ forsoþe þat ſorowe þat is
 aſtir god/ worchip penaunce into ſidelaſt helpe/ forsoþe ſo-
 rowe

C^m 7^m

to ye corrintheis .2.

rowe of þe worlde: worchih deh/ lo ſohely þis ſame þing zou
for to be ſorowful aſtir god: how myche biſyneſſe it worchih
in zou/ but defendynge/ but indignaſiō/ but drede/ but deſire/
but loue/ but vengeaunce/ in alle þingis zee haue zouen zoure
ſelf for to be vndefoulide/ in cauſe (or nede)/ þerfore & zif I
wrote to zou/ not for hym þat diide iniurie/ neþer for hym þat
ſuffride/ but for to ſchewe oure biſyneſſe þe whiche we haue to
zou before god/ þerfore we ben comfortide/ forſoþe in oure
comforte more plenteuouſly/ we iopeden more on þe iope of
tyte/ for his ſpirit is fulſilde of alle zou/ and zif I gloriiede any
þing anentis hym of zou I am not confoundide (or ſchamþde)/
but as we hane ſpoken to zou alle þingis in treuþe/ ſo & oure
glorie þat was at tyte/ is made treuþe/ and þe entrapkis of
hym ben more plenteuouſly in zou/ haupnge in mynde þe oþer
dience of zou alle/ how wiþ drede & tremblýge zee receyueden
hym/ I haue iope/ þat in alle þingis I triſte in zou//

C^m 8^m



Reþeren forſoþe we maken knowen to zou þe grace
of god þat is zouen in þe chirche of macedonþe/ &
þat in myche aſſayinge of tribulaſiō/ þe aboun-
daunce (or plente) of þe iope of hem was/ and þe
biþeſt pouert of hem/ was plenteuous into þe richesſes of þe
ſymplenefſe of hem/ I bere witneſſynge to hem vþ vertue (or
powet) & aboue vertue þei weren wiſful wiþ myche moneti-
þng biſchepþng vs þe grace & comunþng of mynþſterie/ þat
is made into holy men/ and not as we hopiden/ but þei zauen
þem ſelf fiſt to þe lorde/ aſtirwarde to vs by þe wille of
god/ ſo þat we preyede tyte þat as he bigan/ ſo & he parfoume
in zou al þis grace/ but as zee abounden in alle þingis/ in
ſeiþ worde & ſcience (or kunþþng) / & al biſyneſſe/ more ouer
& in zoure charite into vs/ þat & to þis grace zee abounde/ I
ſeþe not as comaundyþge/ but by þe biſyneſſe of oþer mē/
alſo prouþþng to gediþ þe gode witte of zoure charite/ ſohely
zee witen þe grace of oure lorde Iþū criſt/ forwhi he was made
nedþ

to ye corrintheis .2.

neddy for vs • whanne he was riche: pat he schulde be made
 riche by his mysseyte (or nedynesse)/ and I ȝyue counseyll in
 his þing/ soþely þis is profitable to ȝou • pat not onely bigun-
 nen for to do: but & for to wolne fro þe former zeer/ nowwe for-
 soþe & in dede parfourme zee • pat as he inwitte (or wille) is
 redy: to be it & of parfourmyng of þat þing þat zee haue/ so-
 þely zif he wille be reedy: it is acceptide astir þat þat it haþ:
 not astir þat þat it haþ not/ forsoþe I wil not it by remyscioun
 (or slouþe) to oþer • forsoþe to ȝou tribulacon/ but euenesse in
 present tyme • ȝoure aboundaunce fulfille þe mysseyte of hem:
 þat & þe aboundaunce of hem: be supplement (or fulfyllinge)
 of mysseyte þat euenesse be made as it is writen/ he þat haþ
 myche aboundide not: and he þat litil had not lesse/ forsoþe I
 do þankyngis to god þat ȝaue þe same bisynesse for ȝou in þe
 herte of tye • for soþely he receyuyde exortacon (or mones-
 tyng)/ but whanne he was bisier: wiþ his wille he wente forþ to
 ȝou/ forsoþe we senten wiþ hym oure broþer: whos preysyng
 is in þe gospel/ by alle chirchis • forsoþe not onely but & he is
 ordeynyde of chirches • þe felowe of oure pilgrymage: into þis
 grace þat is mynystride of vs to þe glorie of þe lorde: and to
 oure ordeynyde wille/ eschewyng þis þing þat no man blame
 (or dispise) vs: in þis plente þat is mynystride of vs to þe glorie
 of þe lorde/ soþely we purueyn gode þingis • not onely bifore
 god: but also bifore alle men/ forsoþe we senten wiþ hem &
 ouer broþer whom we hane prouede in manye þingis ofte for
 to be bisie/ nowwe forsoþe myche bisier in myche triste in ȝou •
 oþer for tye þat is my felowe & in ȝou helper • oþer oure bre-
 þeren apostlis of chirchis • of þe glorie of cñ/ þerfore schewe
 into þe facis of chirchis þe schewyng þat is of ȝoure charite •
 & of oure glorie for ȝou into hem/ forwhy of þe mynysterie þat
 is made into holymen: it is to me of aboundaunce (or plente) •
 for to write to ȝou//

Forsoþe

to ye corrintheis .2.

C^m 9^m



Forsope I woot zoure in wit reedy for þe whiche I
 haue glorie of zou anentis macedonyes. for & acaye
 is reedy fro a zee passide. and zoure loue hap stired
 ful many/ forsope we haue sente breheren. þat þat
 þing þat we glorien in zou. be not abyddide in þis partie/ þat
 as I seyde zee ben redy. lestte whanne macedonyes schulen
 come wiþ me. & schulen fynde zou vnredy. we schamen þat
 I sise zou not in þis substaunce/ þerfore I gesside necessarie
 for to prepe breheren þat þei come bifore to zou. & make reedy
 þis biþizte blessinge. for to be reedy. so as blessinge & not as
 auarice/ þis þing forsope I seye. for he þat towiþ scarsely.
 schal [repe] & scarsely/ and he þat in blessinges. schal repe & of
 blessingis/ eche man as he castide in his herte/ not in heu-
 nesse or of nede/ forsope god loueþ a glad zyuer/ god forsope is
 myzty for to make al grace abounde in zou. þat zee in al þin-
 gis euermore haupnge al sufficiency. abounde into al good
 werke. as it is writen/ he delide abroad. he zawe to pore men.
 his riztwesnes dwelliþ into wiþouten ende into worlde of
 worlde/ forsope he þat mynystryþ seede to þe (man) sowynge
 & schal zyue breede for to ete. and he schal multiplie zoure
 seed & make myche þe encresyngis of fruytis of zoure riztwes-
 nesse/ þat zee in alle þingis made riche abounde into al sym-
 plenesse. þe whiche worchþ by vs doing of þankis to god/ for
 þe mynysterie of þis office. not onely filliþ þo þingis þat say-
 lē to holy men. but also aboundiþ by manye in doinge of
 þankyngis to þe lorde. by prouynge of þe mynysterie. glori-
 fyng god in þe obedience of zoure knowelechyng in þe gos-
 pel of c̄st. & in symplenesse of comunycacon into hem & into
 alle. & in bisechyng of hem for zou. desirynge zou for þe cleer
 grace in zou. I do þankyngis to god vpon þe vnenarrable (or
 þat may not be tolde) ziste of hym/ forsope I poule biseche
 zou by þe homelynesse (or myldenesse) & softenesse (or patience)
 of c̄st. þe whiche toþely in þe face am meke amonge zou. for-
 sope I absent triste in zou//

Forsope

to ye corrintheis .2.



Forsoþe breþeren I preye zou · þat I present be not
hardy by þe ilke tryste in whiche I am gesside for to
be hardy into summe · þe whiche demen vs as we
wandre aftir þe slepliche/ forsoþe we walkynge in
slepliche sizten not (or holden not knyztchode) aftir þe slepliche/
forwhi þe armours of our knyztchode ben not slepshely: but
myzty by god · to þe distruccon of wardyngis (or strengþes)
we distruynginge counseylis & al hizenesse reysynge hym azenes
þe science of god · dryuyng into captyfte al vnderstondynge
into þe seruyce of crist also haupnge in redynesse for to venge al
vnbodience: whanne zoure obediencie schal be fulfild/ se zee
þo þingis þat ben aftir þe face/ zif any man tristeth to hym
self · hym for to be of crist: þenke he þis þing este anentis hym
self · for as he is of crist: so & we/ for whi & zif I schal glorie
any þing more of oure power · þe whiche þe lorde zawe to vs
into edifynginge · & not into zouredistruccon: I schal not schame/
forsoþe þat I be not gesside · as for to seere zou by epistels ·
forwhi þei seyn þe epistels ben heuy (or greuous) · & stronge ·
but þe presence of body sijk · & þe worde contemptible (or wor-
þi for to be dispiside)/ he þat is suche maner man: þenke þis ·
for what maner men we ben absent by epistels: suche maner
of men vs present in dede/ soþely we doren not putte vs
amonge (or comparisoun) vs to summe þat comenden hem
self/ but we metynge (or mesurynge) vs in oure self · & com-
parisounynge oure self to vs/ soþely we schulen not glorie into
ful myche · but aftir þe mesure of reule · by whiche god mesu-
ride to vs þe mesure of strechynge til to zou/ forsoþe not as
we not strechynge to zou · ouer holden vs/ forsoþe vnto zou
we camen in þe gospel of crist · not glorpyng into ful myche
in oþer mennes traueylis/ soþely we haupnge hope of zoure
seif waringe in zou · for to be magnysiede by oure reule in
aboundaunce: also for to preche into þo þingis þat ben bizende
zou · not for to glorie in oþer mennes reule in þes þingis þat

C^m 10^m

to ye corrintheis .2.

ben made redy/ forsoþe he þat glorieþ: glorie in þe lorde/ for-
soþe not he þat comendþ hym self is prouede: but whom god
comendþ or preysþ//

C^m 11^m



Wolde zee schulden susteyne a litil þing of myn vn-
wisdom • but & supporte me (or bere me vp) soþely
I loue zou by þe loue of god/ soþely I haue bihiȝte
(or bicome boinz) for to take zou as a chaste vir-
gyn to a man crist/ forsoþe I drede lestē as þe serpente decey-
uyde eue wiþ his sutel fraude: so zoure wittis be corrupte &
falle doune fro þe symplenesse þat is in crist/ forwhi zif he þat
comeþ prechþ anoter crist whom we prechen not • or zif zee
taken anoter spirit • whom zee receyueden not • or anoter
gospel whiche zee receyueden not: rīȝtly zee schulden sustre/
soþely I wene forto haue done no þing lesse for þe grete apost-
lis/ forwhi þouȝ I be not lernyde in sermoune (or worde) •
but not in science (or kunnyng) forsoþe in alle þingis I am
schewide (or made knowen) to zou/ or wheþer I haue done
synne • mekyng (or makynge lowe) my self þat zee be enhaun-
cyde • for frely I euangelīȝide to zou þe euangelie of god/ I
spuylyde (or made nakide or took ziftis) of oþer chirchis •
takynge soude for zoure seruyce/ and whanne I was anentis
zou & nedide: I was chargous to no man/ forwhi breþeren
þat camen fro macedonye: fulfilden þat þat saylyde to me/
and in alle þingis I haue kepte & schal kepe me wiþ outen
charge to zou/ þe treuþe of cēt is in me • for þis glorie schal
not be broken in me: in þe regiouns of acaye/ whiȝ for I
loue not zou/ god woot/ forsoþe þat þat I do: & I schal do
þat I kitte awei þe occacōn • of hem þat wolen occacōn (or
plente or power) • þat in þe þing þe whiche þei gloriē: þei
ben founden suche & as we/ forwhi suche falsē apostlis ben
treccherous (or gilous werkemen: transfiguryngē hem into
apostlis of cēt/ and not wondre/ soþely þe sathanas trans-
figurþ hym: into an aungel of līȝt/ þerfore it is not greet •
zif

to ye corrintheis .2.

zif his mynystris ben transfiguride as þe mynystris of ryz-
welnesse: whos ende schal be aftir here werkis// ¶ Este I
seye lesse any man deme me vnwise/ ellis take zee me as
vnwise: þat & I haue glorie a litil what/ þat þat I speke I
speke not aftir god * but as into vnwisdom in þis substaunce
of glorie/ forwhy many men glorien aftir þe fleysche: and I
schal glorie/ forsoþe zee suffren gladly vnwise men: whan zee
zoure self ben wise/ soþely zee susteynen zif any man dryue zou
into seruage * zif any man deuoureh * zif any man takeþ * zif
any man is enhauncide by pride * zif any man smytþ zou into
þe face/ aftirs vnnobley I seye: as we weren sijk in þis partie/
in what þing any man dar * in vnwisdom I seye: & I dar/ þei
ben ebreues: & I/ þei ben israelitis: & I/ þei ben þe seed of
abraham: & I/ þei ben þe mynystris of criste: & I/ as lesse wise I
seye: more I/ in ful many traueylis * in prysouns more plen-
teuously * in woundis aboue maner (or ouer mesure) in deþes
ofte tymes/ I receyuede of þe ieiwes: fyue sipes fourty strokis
one lesse/ þries I was beten wip zerdis * ones I was stoned/
þries I made perischynge in schip: nyzt & day I was in dep-
nesse of þe see/ in weyes ofte * in perels of fiodis * in perels of
þeues * in perels of kyn * in perels of heþen men * in perels in
cyte * in perels in desert * in perels in see * in perels in falsse
breþeren/ in trauel in myssepte/ in many wakynge * in hungre
in þirste: in many fastynge/ in colde in nakidnesse/ wip outhen
þingis þat ben wip outhen forþ/ myn eche day wakynge (or
studynge: þe bisynes of alle chirchis/ who is sijk & I am not
sijk/ who is sclauderide: & I am not brent//



Zif it bihoueh for to glorie: I schal glorie in þoþingis
þat ben of myn infirmyte (or freelte) god & þe fadir
of oure lorde Ihu crist * þat is bleside into þe
worldis: woot þat I lize not/ þe prouost (or keper)
of damask of þe kyng of þe folke arethe: kepte þe cyte of da-
mascenes * for to take me/ and by a windowe in a leep I was
leten

C^m 12^m

to ye corrintheis .2.

leten doune by þe walle: & so I scapide his handis/ zif it biho-
ueþ for to glorie: soþely it spedih not/ forsoþe I schal come to
þe visiouns & reuelacoñs of þe lorde/ I woot a man in cñt bfore
fourtene zeer · wher in body wher oute of body · I woot not ·
god woot · suche a man rauyschide to þe þridde heuene/ and I
woot suche a man · wher in body wher oute I noot · god woot ·
for he was rauyschide into paradise · & herde priuey wordis ·
þe whiche it is not leueful: to a man for to speek/ for suche
maner þing I schal glorie: forsoþe for me no þing · no but in
myn infirmytees/ forwhi & zif I schal wolne for to glorie: I
schal not be vnwise/ soþely I schal sepe treupe/ forsoþe I spare:
lesse any man gesse me ouer þat þing þat he seiþ in me: or
heriþ any þing of me/ and lesse þe gretenesse of reuelacoñs en-
haunce in pride: þe pricke of fleysche an aungel of sathanas is
zouen to me · þe whiche buffatih me/ for whiche þing þries I
prepede þe lorde: þat it schulde go away fro me/ and he seyde
to me/ my grace sufficiþ to þee/ forwhi vertue is partitely
made in enfirmyte/ herfore gladelý I schal glorie in myn en-
firmytees: þat þe vertue of cñt dwelle in me/ for whiche þing
I plesse to me infirmytees · in wronge dispisyngis in nedis · in
persecucoñs · in angwischis for crist/ soþely whanne I am sick:
þan I am myzty/ I am made vnwitty: zee constreyneden me/
forsoþe I schulde (or auzte) for to be comendide of zou/ soþely
I diide noþing lesse fro hem þat ben apostlis: aboue maner/
forwhi þou3 I be not: neþeles þe signes of my possilbede ben
made on zou in al patience: and signes (or myracles) & greet
wondris & vertues/ soþely what is it þat zee hadde lesse bfore
oþer chirchis? no but þat I my self greuyde zou not · forzþue
zee to me þis wronge// ¶ lo þis þridde tyme I am redy for to
come to zou: and I schal not be greuous to zou/ forsoþe I
seek not þo þingis þat ben zoure: but zou/ forsoþe neþer sones
owen for to tresoure to fadir & modir [but fadir & modir]
to þe sones/ forsoþe I moste wilfully schal zþue: and my self
schal be ouer zouen for zoure soutilis · þou3 I more louynge:
be

to ye corrintheis .2.

be lesse louyde/ but be it/ I greuede not zou: but whanne I was sutel wise: I toke zou wih gile/ wher I deceyuede zou by any of hem · whom I sente to zou/ I preyede tyte: & I sente wih hym a broher/ wheper tyte bigilide zou/ wheper we gon not in þe same spirit/ wher not & þe same steppis/ sumtyme zee wenen þat we schulen excuse vs anentis zou/ bifore god in c̄st we speken/ forsoþe moſte dere breþeren: alle þingis for zoure edifyinge/ soþely I drede lesse parauenture whanne I schal come: I schal not fynde zou whiche maner I wole: & I schal be founden of zou: whiche maner zee wolen not/ lesse parauenture stryuynges · enuyes · sturdyness · discenciouns · & detracciouns · pryuey spechis of discorde · boluyngis (by pride): debatis ben amonge zou/ lesse estesone whanne I schal come · god make me lowe anentis zou · & I weyle manye of hem þat bifore synned · & diden not penaunce of þe vnclennesse & fornyracō & vnchastite: þat þei hane done//



Dhis priddde tyme I come to zou: and in þe mowþ of two or þre witnessis · euery worde schal stonde/ I seide bifore & I seye bifore as presente twayes · & now absent to hem þat bifore haue synned/ and to alle oþer: for zif I schal I come estesone I schal not spare/ wher zee seeken an experyment (or assayinge) of hym þat spekiþ in me crist: þe whiche is not sijk in zou · but myzty in vs/ forwhi þouȝ he was crucifiede of infirmyte: but he lyueþ of þe vertue of god/ forwhi & we ben sijk in hym: but we schulen lyue by hym of þe vertue of god in vs/ assaye zoure self · zif zee ben in þe feiþ: zee zoure self proue/ wher zee knowen not zoure self · for crist Ihu is in zou: no but zee ben reprobable/ forsoþe I hope for zee knowen for zee ben not reprobable/ soþely we prepen þe lorde: þat zee do no þing of euyl/ not þat we seime prouede: but þat zee do þat þat is gode forsoþe þat we ben reprobable/ forsoþe we mowne no þing azenes treuþe: but for þe

C^m 13^m

to ye corrintheis .2.

þe treuþe/ forsoþe we ioyen for we ben sikk · forsoþe zee ben myzty/ and we preyen þis þing · zoure endynge/ soþely þerfore I absent write þis þing þat I present do not harder astir þe power þe whiche þe lorde zafe to me into edificaciounes · & not into distruccon/ breþeren hens forþwarde ioyze zee · be zee parsite & teche zee vnderstonde zee þe same þing/ haue zee pees · and god of pees & loue · schal be wiþ zou/ grete zee wel to gedir in holy cosse/ þe grace of oure lorde Ihu crist · & þe charite of god · & þe comunynge of þe holy gost be wiþ zou alle amen//

ye pißtel to galatheis

C^m 1^m



Dule apostle not of men neþer by man/ but bi ihu crist · & god þe fadir · þat reyside hym fro deade (men) & alle þe breþeren þat ben wiþ me/ to þe chirchis of galapie/ grace to zou & pees of god þe fadir & oure lorde Ihu crist · þe whiche zaeue hym self for oure synnes · þat he schulde delyuer vs fro þis present weywarde worlde · astir þe wille of god & oure fadir/ to whom is honoure & glorie/ into worldis of worldis amen// ¶ I wondre þat þus so sone zee ben borne ouer fro hym þat clepide zou into þe grace of crist · into anoper gospel · þe whiche is not oper/ no but þer ben summe þat distourblen zou & wollen mynystre þe euangelie of crist/ but þou3 or an aungel of heuene · euuangelize to zou bisidis þat þat we hane euuangelizide to zou/ curside be he/ as I bifore seyde · & nowe eftelone I sepe/ zif any schal euuangelize · out taken þat þat zee hane taken/ curside be he/ now counseyl I to men or to god/ or seek I to

ye piſſel to galatheis

I to pleſe to men/ zif I zit pleſide to men: I were not þe ſer-
uaunt of cſt// ¶ Soþely breþeren I make þe goſpel knowen
to zou: þe whiche is euuangelizide of me: for it is not aſtir
man/ ſoþely neþer I took it of man: neþer lernyde: but by
reuelacioune of Ihu criſt/ forſoþe zee herden my lyuyng ſum-
tyme in iewerie: for ouer maner I purſuede þe chirche of god:
and ſauzte azenes it/ and I profitide in iewerie: aboue many
myn eueneldis in my kyn beinge more aboundauntly louet
(or ſolower) of my ſaderis tradiciouns/ forſoþe whanne I ple-
ſide to hym þat departide me fro þe wombe of my modir: &
clepide by his grace þat he ſchulde ſchewe in me his ſone: þat
I ſchulde preche hym in heþen men: anone I acordide not to
ſleyſche & blood/ neþer I came to irłm to my biſore goers
apoſtliſ: but I wente forþ into arabie: and eſteſone I turnyde
azen to damask/ aſtirwarde aſtir þre zeer I came to irłm for to
ſe petre: and I dwelte anentis hym ſyftene dayes/ forſoþe I
ſize none oþer man of þe apoſtliſ: no but iames þe broþer of
þe lorde/ forſoþe what þingis I write to zou: lo biſore god for
I lize not/ aſtirwarde I came into þe parties of cyrie & cilicie/
forſoþe I was unknowen by face to þe chirchis of Iudee þat
weren in cſt/ onely forſoþe þei hadden herynge: for he þat
purſuede vs ſumtyme: now euangeliziþ þe ſeiþ azenes whiche
he ſauzte ſumtyme/ and in me þei clarifieden god//



Aſtirwarde aſtir fourtene zeer eſteſone I ſleyzede to C^m 2^m
irłm wiþ barnabas & tyte taken to/ forſoþe I ſley-
zede by reuelacioun & to gedit ſeyde (or diſputide)
wiþ hem þe goſpel: þe whiche I preche amonge
heþen men/ forſoþe aſidis honde (or by hem ſelf): to hem þat
weren ſeen for to be ſumwhat: leſte parauenture I ſchulde
renne in beyne (or had runnen)/ but neþer tyte þat was wiþ
me whanne he was heþen was compellide for to be circum-
cidide: but for falſe breþeren vndre brouzten/ þe whiche pry-
uely entreden for to aſpie oure liberte þat we hane in cſt Ihu:
þat

ye pistel

þat þei schulen dryue vs into seruage · to whom neþer at an
 houre we zauen syde of subieccioun · þat þe treuþe of þe gos-
 pel dwelle at zou/ forsoþe of hem þat weren seen for to be
 sumwhat · what maner (men) þei weren sumtyme · it par-
 teyneþ noþing to me/ forsoþe god takih not þe persone of man/
 forsoþe þei þat weren seen for to be sumwhat · no þing to me
 zauen to gedir/ but azenwarde whanne þei hadden seen þat
 þe gospel of prepucie (or heþen men) is bitaken to me · as of
 circumcisioun to petre/ for he þat wrouzte to petre apostilhede
 of circumcisioun · wrouzte & to me amonge heþen men/ and
 whanne þei hadden knowen þe grace of god þat is zouen to me ·
 James & cephas & ioon þe whiche weren seen for to be pilers ·
 zauen to me & barnabas þe rizthandis of felowschip · þat we
 amonge heþen men · þei soþely into circumcisioun · onely þat
 we schulden be myndeful of pore men þat also I was bisie for
 to do þe same þing/ forsoþe whan cephas (or petre) came to
 antioche · I stode azenes hym into his face · for he was reprob-
 able/ forsoþe bifore þat summe camen fro iames · he ete wiþ
 heþen men/ forsoþe whanne þei came · he wiþdrowe & depar-
 tide hym · dredynge hem þat weren of circumcisioun/ and oþer
 consentiden to his seynynge · so þat barnabas was ledde of
 hem into þat seynynge/ but whan I had seen þat þei walkiden
 not rizztly to þe treuþe of þe gospel · I seyde to petre bifore alle
 men/ zif þou siþ þou art a iewe · lyuest heþenly & not iewely ·
 how constreynest þou heþen men for to bicomme iewes · we ben
 iewes of kynde · and not synners of heþen men/ soþely witynge ·
 for a man is not made rizztwise of þe werkis of þe lawe · no
 but by þe seih of ihū crist · & we in ihū crist bileuen · þat we be
 iustificede of þe seih of crist · and not of þe werkis of lawe/ wher-
 fore of þe werkis of lawe eche fleysche (or man) schal not be
 made rizztwise/ þat zif we seekynge for to be iustificede in cōst ·
 & we oure self be founden synners · wher cōst is not mynysire of
 synne · fer be it/ soþely zif I bilde azen þo þingis þat I dis-
 truyede · I make me for to be a trespassour/ forsoþe by þe lawe ·

I am

to galatheis

I am deade to þe lawe: þat I lyue to god/ wif cō I am hidē
chide to þe crosse/ forsoþe I lyue nowe not I: but cō lyueþ in
me/ forsoþe þat I lyue now in fleysche: I lyue in þe feiþ of
goddis sone þe whiche louede me & bitoke hym self for me/ I
caste not away þe grace of god/ forsoþe zif rīztwēnesse is by
þe lawe: crist diede wif outh cause//



See witles men of galathie • who deceyuede zou for C^m 3^m
to not bileue to þe treuþe: bifore whos yzen ihū cō
is dampnyde (or exilide): and in zou crucifiede/ þis
þing onely wole I lerne of zou/ hane zee take þe
spirit of þe werkis of lawe: wher of herynge of bileue: to zee
ben foolis • þat whanne zee bigunnen by spirit: nowe zee ben
endide by fleysche/ zee hane sustride so many þingis wif outhen
cause: neþeles zif wif outhen cause/ þerfore he þat zyueþ to zou
þe spirit & worchþ vertues in zou: wheþer of þe werkis of
lawe • or of herynge of feiþ: as it is writen/ abraham bileuede
to god: and it is rettide to hym to rīztwēnesse/ þerfore knowe
zee • þat þei þat ben of þe feiþ: þei ben sones of abraham/ for-
soþe þe scripture purueyinge • for god iustifiē of feiþ heþen
men tolde bifore to abraham: for in þee alle folkis schulen be
blesside/ þerfore þei þat ben of þe feiþ: schulen be blesside wif
feiþful abraham/ forsoþe who euer ben of þe werkis of lawe:
ben vndir curse/ for it is writen/ curside eche man þat schal
not dwelle in alle þingis þat ben writen in þe book of lawe:
þat he do hem/ forsoþe for no man is made rīztwise in þe lawe
anentis god: it is knowen • for a rīztful man • lyueþ of feiþ/
forsoþe þe lawe is not of bileue • but he þat schal do þo þingis:
schal lyue in hem/ crist delyueride vs fro þe curse of þe lawe •
made for us curs (þat is sacrifice for curs)/ for it is writen/
curside is eche þat hangþ in þi tree/ þat þe blesyng of abra-
ham in heþen men schulde be made in cō ihū þat we take þe
bihest of spirit: by feiþ// ¶ breþeren I seye astir man • neþe-
les no man dispisþ þe confermyde testament of a man: or

to galatheis

þe spirit of his sone into zoure hertis: cryinge abba (þat is fa-
 dir)/ and so now þer is not seruaunt: but sone/ þat zif sone:
 þanne & eyre by god/ but þanne soþely we unknowyng god •
 serueden to hem þat weren not goddis (in kynde)/ now for-
 soþe whanne zee hane knowen god: zhe raper zee ben knowen
 of god: howe ben zee turnyde to gedir estefone • to seek (or
 freel) & nedý elementis • to whiche zee wolen serue estefone:
 zee kepen dayes & monethes & tymes & zeeris/ forsoþe I drede
 zou: lest þe parauenture I haue traueplide in zou wiþ outen
 cause/ be zee as I: for & I as zee/ breþeren I biseche zou: zee
 haue noþing hirte me/ soþely zee witen for by enfirmyte of
 fleysche I haue euangelizide to zou now bifore: and zoure
 temptacioun in my fleysche zee dispisiden not neþer forloken
 but zee receyueden me as an aungel of god • as cñt I hū/ where
 is þerfore zoure blessyng: soþely I bere witnessyng to zou •
 for zif it myzte be done • zee schulden haue putte oute zoure
 yzen: and hane zouen to me/ þerfore am I made enemyes to
 zou • seyinge trewe þing to zou: soþely þei louen zou not
 wel • but þei wolen exclude zou þat zee sue hem/ forsoþe sue
 zee good euermore in goode: & not onely whanne I am pre-
 sent anentis zou/ my litil sones • whom I childe (or bryng
 forþ) by trauel estefone • til crist be fourmyde in zou/ forsoþe I
 wolde now be at zou • & chaunge my voyce • for I am con-
 foundide (or schamyde) in zou// ¶ Seye zee to me þat wolen
 be vnder þe lawe: haue zee not red þe lawe: soþely it is writen/
 for abraham had two sones • one of þe hande mayden • & one
 of þe fre wife/ forsoþe he þat of þe hande mayden: was borne
 attir þe fleysche/ but he þat of þe fre wiif • by azen byhest/ þe
 whiche þingis ben seyd by allegorie/ forsoþe þes þingis ben
 two testamentis/ soþely one in þe mounte syna • gendrynge in
 seruage: þat is agat/ forsoþe syna is an hil in arabie: þe whiche
 is ioynede to it þat now is in irū • & serueþ wiþ hire sones/
 forsoþe þat irū þat is aboue is fre: þe whiche is oure modir/
 forsoþe it is writen/ be glad þou bareyn þat childist not (or þat
 bryngist

to galatheis

oper)/ forsoþe I seye in crist/ wander zee in spirit: & zee schu-
 len not parfourme þe desiris of fleysche/ for þe fleysche coueytis
 azenes þe spirit: soþely þe spirit azenes þe fleysche/ forsoþe
 þes ben aduersaries to hem self to gedir/ þat zee done not þes
 þingis what euer þingis zee wolen/ for zif zee ben ledde by þe
 spirit: zee ben not vnder þe lawe/ forsoþe þe werkis of þe
 fleysche ben open/ þe whiche ben fornicaciō · uncleanness ·
 vnchastite · lecherie · seruyng to ydolis · (or false goddis) ·
 doingis of venym/ enemytees · stryues · enuyes (or solowynge
 in euyl)/ wrappes · chydynge · discenciouns · sectis (or here-
 sies) · enuyes · manslaughter · drunkenness · glotonyes · and
 liche þingis to þes/ þe whiche I preche to zou as I bifore
 seyde · for þei þat done suche þingis: schulen not haue þe
 kyngdom of god// ¶ Forsoþe þe fruyte of þe spirit: is charite ·
 ioye · pees · pacience · benygnyte (or of gode wille) · gode-
 nesse · longe abidynge · mylkenesse · feiþ · temperaunce · con-
 tynence · chastite · azenes suche þingis þe lawe is not/ forsoþe
 þei þat ben of crist: haue crucifiede here fleysche wif vñis &
 concupiscencis (or coueytis)/ zif we lyuen by spirit: by spirit
 walke we/ be we not made coueytouse of veyne glorie to gedir
 stryng to wijn: [] hauyng enuye to
 gedir//



Beperen and zif a man be bifore ocupiede (or
 ouercomen) in any gilte or trespass: zee þat ben
 spiritual · techiþ suche a maner man in spirit of
 softenesse · biholdynge þi self: þat & þou be not
 temptide/ here zee chargis þe toþer of þe toþer: and so zee
 schulen fulfille þe lawe of crist/ forwhi zif any man gessþ hym
 self for to be ouzte whanne he is nouzte: he deceyueþ hym self/
 forsoþe eche man proue his owne werke: and so he schal haue
 glorie onely in hym self · & not in anoþer/ forsoþe eche man
 schal here his owne charge// ¶ Forsoþe þe þat is tauzte by
 worde: comyne to hym þat techiþ hym in alle gode þingis/
 nyl

C^m 6^m

ye pistel to galatheis

npl zee erre: god is not scornede/ forsoþe what þingis a man
schal sowe: and þes þingis he schal reþe/ for he þat soweþ in
his fleþsche: and of þe fleþsche schal reþe corrupcioun/ forsoþe
he þat sowiþ in spirit: of þe spirit schal reþe euerlastyngþe lijf/
forsoþe we doinge good: sayle not/ soþely in his tyme we
schulen reþe: not saylyngþe/ þerfore he while we haue tyme:
wirche we good to alle men: forsoþe moſte to þe houtholde
meyne of þe seiþ// ¶ See zee wiþ what maner lettris I haue
written to zou by myn hande/ soþely who euer wole plese in
fleþsche: þes consþreyneþen zou for to be circumcidide: onely
þat þei suffre not persecuciō of cristis crosse/ forsoþe neþer þei
þat ben circumcidide keþen þe lawe: but þei wolen zou for to
be circumcidide: þat þei glorie in zoure fleþsche/ forsoþe be it
fer to me for to glorie: no but in þe crosse of oure lorde Ihu
crist: by whom þe worlde is crucifiede to me: and I to þe
worlde/ forsoþe in crist Ihu neþer circumcisiō is ouzte worþ:
neþer preþucie (þat is heþen mennes custom): but a netwe
creature/ and who euer schulen sue þis rewle: pees vpon hem
& mercy vpon isrt of god/ fro hens forþ no man be heuy to
me/ forsoþe I bere in my body: þe tokenes of oure lorde Ihu
crist/ þe grace of oure lorde Ihu crist: wiþ zoure spirit breþeren
Amen.

ye pistel to ephesies



Dule apostle of Ihu crist by þe wille of god: to alle holy men at ephesly & seipful in Ihu crist grace to zou & pees of god oure fadir: and of þe lorde Ihu crist/ blesside be god & þe fadir of oure lorde Ihu crist: þat blesside vs in al spiritual: in heuenely þingis in crist: as he chees vs in hym: bifore þe makynge of þe

worlde: þat we schulden be holy & wip outen wemme in his list: in charite/ þe whiche bifore ordeynede vs into þe adopcioñ of sones by Ihu crist into hym: astir þe purpos of his wille: into prepsyng of þe glorie of his grace: in þe whiche he made vs able to his grace in his derworþ sone: in whom we haue azen byinge of his blode: & remyscioun of synnes astir richessis of his grace þat aboundide gretely in vs in al wisdom & prudence: þat he schulde make þe sacrament of his wille knowen to vs astir þe gode plessaunce of hym þat he purposide in hym: in þe dispensacioun of plente of tymes: for to infore alle þingis in crist: þe whiche ben in heuenes & in erþe in hym/ in whom also & we by sorte or grace ben clepide: bifore ordeynede astir þe purpos of hym þat worchis alle þingis astir þe counseyl of his wille: þat we ben into þe prepsyng of his glorie: we þat bifore hopiden in crist/ in whom & zee whanne zee hadden herde þe worde of treuþe: receyueden þe gospel of zoure helpe: in whiche & zee bileuynge: ben markide wip þe holy gost of biheste: þat is wed (or ernes) of zoure heretage into þe redempcioñ of purchasyng: into prepsynge of his glorie/ herfore & I herynge zoure seip þat is in crist Ihu: & louynge into alle seyntis: ceese not doinge þankyngis for zou: makynge mynde of zou in my preys: þat god oure lorde

Ihu

ye piſtel

Ihū criſt ſadir of glorie · ʒpue to ʒou þe ſpirit of wiſdom & of reuelacōn · vnto þe knowyng of him/ þe ʒen of ʒoure herte inliʒtenyde · þat ʒee witen whiche is þe hope of his clepyng · & whiche þe richeſſis of þe glorie of heretage in ſeyntis/ and whiche is þe ouerſemynge greteneſſe · of his vertue into vs · þat hane bileuede · aſtir þe wirchynge of þe myʒte of his vertue · þe whiche wrouzte in criſt reſtyng hym fro deade (men) & ſittyng on his riʒthale in heuenely þingis · aboue eche pryncipate (or power of pryncis) · and poteſtate & vertue · & lordſchypynge · & eche name þat is namyde · not onely in þis worlde but in þe worlde to come/ and made alle þingis ſuget vnder his feet · & ʒaue hym hede vpon al þe chirche þat is þe body of hym · & þe plente of hym · þe whiche alle þingis in alle þingis is fulfild//

C^m 2^m



And whanne ʒee weren deade in ʒoure giltis & ſynnes in whiche ʒee wandren ſumtyme · aſtir þe ſpace (or laſtynge) of þis worlde · aſtir þe pryncce of þe power of þis eyre · of þe ſpirit þat wirchþ now into þe ſones of vntriſte (or vnbileue) in þe whiche we alle lyueden ſumtyme in deſiris of oure fleſche doinge þe wille of fleſche & þouʒtis · & we weren by kynde þe ſones of wrath & oþer/ forſoþe god þat is riche in mercy for his ful myche charite in whiche he louede vs · & whanne we weren deade in ſynnes · he quykentyde vs to gedir in cū · by whos grace ʒee ben ſauede · & to gedir aʒen reſyde · & to gedir made to ſitte in heuenely þingis · in cū Ihū · þat he ſchulde ſchewe in þe worldis comynge ouer þe plenteuous richeſſis of his grace · in godeneſſe vpon vs in cū Ihū/ forſoþe by grace ʒee ben ſauyde by feiþ · and not of ʒou/ ſohely it is þe ʒiſte of god · not of werkis · þat no man glorie/ forſoþe we ben þe makynge of hym · made of nouzt in cū Ihū/ in gode werkis þat god made redy bifore · þat in hem we go/ for whiche þing be ʒee mynde · ful þat ſumtyme ʒee þat weren heþen in fleſche · þe whiche weren

to ephesies

weren seyde prepucie · fro þat þat is seyde circumcisioun in
 fleysche made by hande · þat weren in þat tyme wiþ outen c̃st
 alienyde (or made straunge) fro þe lyuyng of isrl · & herbo-
 ride men (or gestis) of testamentis · not hauynge hope of bi-
 heste · and wiþ outen god in þis worlde/ now forsoþe in crist
 Ihu zee þat weren sumtyme fer · ben made nyz in þe blode of
 c̃st/ forsoþe he is oure pees · þat made boþe one & þe mydel
 wal of a longe wal · vnbyndyng [] enemyes in his fleysche avoy-
 dyng þe lawe & maundementis · by doomes · þat he make two
 (puples) in hym self into a netwe man · makynge pees · þat he
 recounteyl boþe in one body to god by þe crosse · sleinge þe ene-
 mytees in hym self/ and he comynge euangelizide pees to zow
 þat weren fer · and pees to hem þat weren nyz/ for by hym we
 boþe haue nyze comynge in one spirit to þe fadir// ¶ Þerfore
 now zee ben not herboride men & gestis & comelyngis · but zee
 ben cytefeyns of seyntis & þe housholde meyne of god · aboue
 bildide on þe foundement of apostlis · & of prophetis · by þat
 higest corner stoon crist ihu/ in whom eche bildynge made · war-
 iþ an holy temple in þe lorde/ in whom & be zee bildide to ge-
 dir into þe habitacle of god in þe holy gost//



Et grace of his þing I poul þe bounden of c̃st Ihu
 for zow heben men · zif neþeles zee haue herde þe
 dispensaçon of goddis grace þat is zouen to me in
 zow/ for astir reuelacon þe sacrament is made
 knowen to me · as aboue wroot in schorte þing · as zee redynge
 motwe vnderstonde · my prudence in þe mysterie of c̃st þe
 whiche is not knowen to oþer generaçon to þe sones of men ·
 as it is now schewide to his holy apostlis & prophetis in þe spirit ·
 heben men for to be euen eyres · & to gedir bodily · & to gedir
 parteners of his bihest in c̃st Ihu by þe euuangelie · whos my-
 nystre I am made astir þe zifte of goddis grace · þe whiche is
 zouen to me astir þe worchyng of his vertue/ forsoþe to me
 lesse of alle seyntis þis grace is zouen · for to euangelie in be-

C^m 3^m

ye pistel

þen men þe vnsercheable richessis (þat moune not be souzt
oute) of crist/ and for to inlizten alle men · whiche is þe dis-
pensacon of sacrament hid fro worldis/ in god þat made alle
þingis of nouzt/ þat þe mychfolde wisdom of god be knowen
to prynces & potestates in heuenely þingis by þe chirche aftir
þe settyng of worldis · þe whiche he made in c̃st Jhū oure
lorde · in whom we hane trist & nyȝ comynge in trystyng by
þe feiþ of hym// ¶ for whiche þing I are þat zee fayle not in
my tribulaciouns for zou · þat is zoure glorie/ for grace of his
þing I bowe my knees to þe fadir of oure lorde Jhū crist · of
whom eche fadirhede of heuenes & in erþe is nampde · þat he
ȝyue to zou aftir þe richessis of his glorie · vertue for to be
strengþide by his spirit in þe inner man · crist for to dwelle bi
feiþ in zoure hertis/ zee rotide & groundide in charite þat zee
mowne comprehende · wiþ alle seyntis · whiche is þe brede &
lengþe & hizeness & depness · also for to wite þe charite of c̃st
aboue semynge to science · þat zee be fulfild into al þe plente
of god/ forsoþe to hym þat is myȝty for to make alle þingis
more plenteuoussly þan we aren or vnderstonde · aftir þe ver-
tue · þat wircþ in vs · to hym be glorie in þe chirche & in c̃st
Jhū · into alle þe generaconis of þe worlde of worldis amen//

C^m 4^m



And so I bounden in þe lorde biſeche þat zee walke
worþily in þe clepyng in whiche zee ben clepide ·
wiþ al mekenesse · & myldeneſſe · wiþ patience ſup-
portyng to gedir in charite · biſie for to kepe vnyte
of ſpirit in þe bonde of pees one body & one ſpirit as zee ben
clepide in one hope of zoure clepyng/ one lorde one feiþ one
baptym one god & fadir of alle · þe whiche is aboue alle men ·
& by alle þingis & in vs alle// ¶ to eche of vs grace is zouen
aftir þe meſure of þe ȝyuyng of crist/ for which þing he feiþ/
he ſleyzinge into hiȝe ledde captiſtee captiſe · (or priſonnyng
priſonnyde) · he ȝaue ȝiftis to men/ forsoþe þat he aſſendide
what is it/ no but for & he diſcendide firſte into þe lower par-
ties

to ephesies

ties of þe erþe/ he it is þat come doune · & þat ſteþede vpon
 alle heuenes · þat he ſchulde fulfille alle þingis/ & he zaue
 ſumme ſohely apoſtliſ · ſumme forſoþe prophetis · oþer for-
 ſoþe euangeliftis · oþer forſoþe ſcheperdis & techers · to þe ſul
 endyng of ſeyntis into þe werke of mynyſterie · into þe edifi-
 cacoñ of c̄ſtis body · til we rennen alle in vnyte of ſeiþ & of
 knowyng of goddis ſone in a parfite man: into þe meſure of
 age of þe plente of c̄ſt// ¶ þat we be not nowe litil children
 mouyng as wawis · & be borne aboute wiþ al wynde of tech-
 yng in þe waywardeneſſe of men in ſutel witte: to þe decey-
 uynge of errour/ forſoþe we doinge treuþe in charite: ware
 in hym by alle þingis · þat is criſt þe heed/ of whom al þe body
 ſette to gedir & bounden to gedir by eche ioynture of vndir-
 ſeruyng · vþ worchyng into þe meſure of eche membre:
 makih encreeſyng of þe body · into þe edificacoñ of it in cha-
 rite// ¶ herfore þis þing I ſeþe & witneſſe it in þe lorde: þat
 zee walke not nowe as & heþen men walken in þe vanyte of
 here witte in dirkenenſſis · hauyng vndirſtondyng dirkenyde ·
 alienyde (or made ſer) fro þe liſt of god · by ignoraunce (or
 vnkunynge) þat is in hem: for þe blyndenelle of here herte/
 þei diſpeyryng bitoken hem ſelf to vchafite: into þe wir-
 chyng of al vnclenneſſe in coueytiſe/ forſoþe zee hane not ſo
 lernyde criſt: zif neþeles zee herden hym: & ben tauzte in hym
 as is treuþe in Jhū/ do zee aweye aftir þe firſte lyuyng þe
 olde man þat is corrupte aftir þe deſiris of errour/ forſoþe be
 zee renewide by ſpirit of zoure mynde: & cloþe zee þe newe
 man · þat aftir god is made of nowzte in rihtweſneſſe & holy-
 neſſe of treuþe/ for whiche þing zee puttyng aweye leeſyng/
 ſpeke treuþe eche man wiþ his neyzebore: for we ben mem-
 bres to gedir/ be zee wroþe: & nyl zee ſynne/ þe ſunne falle
 not doune: on zoure wraþ/ nyl zee zyue ſtede to þe deuel/ he
 þat ſtale: nowe ſtele he not/ more forſoþe trauel he in wirch-
 yng wiþ his handis þat þat is gode þing: þat he haue wherof
 he ſchal zyue to a man ſuffryng nede/ eche euyl worde go not
 oute

to ephesies

in whom is lecherie: but he zee fulfildē wiþ þe holy goſt ſpekynge to zoure ſelf in pſalmes & ymynes & ſpiritual ſongis: ſingynge & ſeyinge pſalme in zoure hertis to þe lorde/ euer- more doinge þankyngis for alle þingis in þe name of oure lorde Jhū cſt: to god & þe fadir/ zee ſuget to gedir in þe drede of criſt// ¶ We wymmen ſugettis to here men (or houſbondis) as to þe lorde: for þe man is heed of þe womman: as cſt is heed of þe chirche/ he is ſaueour of his body but as þe chirche is ſuget to criſt: ſo & wymmen to here houſbondis in alle þingis/ men loue zee zoure wiſes: as & criſt louede þe chirche: & zæue hym ſelf for it: þat he ſchulde make it holy: clentyngē it wiþ þe waſchynge ſtoon of water: in worde of liſt/ þat he zpye þe chirche glorious to hym ſelf: not haupnge wemme (or reuelynge) or any ſuche þingis: but þat it be holy & unde- foulide/ ſo & men ſchulen loue here wiſes: as here owne bodyes/ he þat loueþ his wiſf: loueþ hym ſelf/ forſoþe no man hatide euer his fleysche: but noriſchiþ & foſteriþ it: as & cſt doþ þe chirche/ for we ben membris of his body: of his fleysche & of his bones/ for þis þing a man ſchal forſake his fadir & modir: & he ſchal cleue to his wiſf/ and þei ſchulen be two in one fleysche/ forſoþe þis ſacrament is greet/ forſoþe I ſeye in cſt & in þe chirche/ neþeles & zee alle: eche man loue his wiſf as hym ſelf/ forſoþe þe wiſf drede hire houſbonde//



Somes obefche zee to zoure fadir & modir in þe lorde/ forſoþe þis þing is iuſt (or riȝtful)/ honoure þou þi fadir & modir: þat is þe firſte maundement in bi- heſt: þat it wel be to þee: & þat þou be longe lpyynge on þe erþe/ and zee faderis nyl zee terre zoure ſones to wraþ: but noriſche zee hem in þe diſcipline & correccioun (or chaſtiſynge) of þe lorde/ ſeruauntis obefche zee to fleysche- ly lordis wiþ drede & tremblyngē in ſymplenefſe of zoure herte: as to criſt/ not ſeruyngē at yze as pleſynge to men: but as ſeruauntis of cſt doinge þe wille of god of intwitte (or re- ſoune)

C^m 6^m

ye pistel to ephesies

loune) wiþ good wille: scrupnge as to þe lorde & not to men/
wityng þat eche man what euer gode þing he schal do: þis he
schal receyue of þe lorde/ wheþer seruaunt wheþer fre man/
and see lordis do þe same þingis to hem forȝyunge manasus/
witynge for here lorde & zoure is in heuenes: & takynge of
persones is not anentis god// ¶ here astirwarde breþeren be
see comfortide in þe lorde · & in þe myzte of his vertue/ cloþe
zou wiþ þe armour of god þat see mowne stonde azenes aspi-
yngis (or assaylyngis) of þe deupl/ for stryunge is not to vs
azenes fleshe & blood · but azenes þe prynces & potestatis ·
azenes gouernours of þe worlde · of þes dirkeness/ azenes
spiritual þingis of wickidnesse: in heuenely þingis/ þerfore
take see þe armour of god · þat see mowne azenstonde in þe
euyl day · & in alle þingis stonde see parfite/ þerfore stonde see
girde aboute zoure lendis in soþefastnesse · & cloþide þe hau-
bircoun of ristwefnesse · & þe feet schod in makynge reedy of þe
gospel of pees/ in alle þingis takynge þe schelde of feiþ · in þe
whiche see mowne quenche al þe firy dartis of þe werste
enemy/ and take see þe helme of helpe & þe swerde of þe gost ·
þat is þe worde of god · by al preyer & bisechyng · preying
al tyme in spirit & in hym wakynge in al bisynesse · & bisech-
ynge for al holy & for me: þat worde be zouen to me in open-
ynge of my mouþ · wiþ triste for to make knowen þe mysterie
of þe gospel/ for whiche I am sette in legatie (or message) in
his cheyne: so þat in it I be hardie for to speke as it bihouep
me/ forsoþe þat & see wite what þingis ben aboute me · what
I schal do: titycus my moste dere broþer & trewe mynystre in
þe lorde schal make alle þingis knowen to zou whom I sente
to zou into þis same þing þat see knowe what þingis ben
aboute vs · þat he comforte zoure hertis/ pees to breþeren &
charite wiþ feiþ of god oure fadir: & of þe lorde Ihu cñ/ grace
wiþ alle men þat loue oure lorde Ihu cñ: in uncorrupcioun
amen//

þe

ye pistel to philipenses



Dul & tymothe seruauntis of Ihu c̄st to C^m 1^m

alle þe holy men in c̄st Ihu þat ben at philippis wiþ bischopis & dekenes · grace to zou & pees of god oure fadir · & of þe lorde Ihu crist/ I do þankyngis to my god · in al mynde of zou euer · more in alle my preyers for alle zou wiþ ioye · makyng a bisechyng on

zoure comynyng in þe gospel of crist · fro þe firste day to nowe · trisyng þis ilke þing · for he þat bigan in zou a gode werke · schal parfourme til into þe day of Ihu c̄st/ as it is iuste to me for to feel þis þing for zou alle for þat I haue zou in herte & in my bondis · & in defendyng & confermyng of þe gospel · alle zou for to be felowis of my ioye/ for god is a wit · nesse to me how I coueyte zou alle · in þe bowels of Ihu crist/ and þis þing I preye þat zoure charite be plenteuouse more & more in science (or kunnyng) & in al witte · þat zee proue better þingis · þat zee be clene & wiþ outhen offence in þe day of crist/ fulfild wiþ þe fruyte of ryztwelnesse bi Ihu c̄st · into þe preysyng & glorie of god// forsoþe breþeren I wole zou for to wite þat þe þingis þat ben aboute me · hane comen more to þe profite of þe gospel · so þat my bondis weren made knowen in c̄st · in eche moothalle & in alle oþer places/ þat mo of breþeren in þe lorde trisyng in my bondis more plenteuously dursten wiþ outhen drede speke þe worde of god/ summe forsoþe & for enuy & stryfe summe forsoþe & for good wille · prechen crist/ summe forsoþe & of charite · wityng for I am putte in þe defense of þe gospel/ forsoþe summe of contencioun or stryfe schewen crist · not clenely gessyng hem for to reyse pressure to my bondis/ what soþely þe while on al maner

pe gylfel

maner after be contentidoun. after be trouble crist is schekende.
 e is his þing I haue ioye: but e in his þing I schal haue ioye/
 Wherfor I want þat his þing schal come to me into helpe by
 youre prayers e by anthemyzinge of þe spirit of Jhu crist:
 alme myn aduysinge e hope: for in no þing I schal be con-
 foundide or schamyde: but in al crist as evermore e now crist
 schal be magnified in my body: after by lif oþer by deþ/ for-
 dyde to me for to haue crist: e for to die mynynge. þat ȝif for
 to lyue in flesche þis is trauel of werke to me: e what I schal
 chese I knowe not. forloþe I am contraynde of two þingis:
 haunþinge desire for to be discuyde (or departide) þe soule
 fro þe body: e for to be with crist: it is myche more better to
 me: forloþe for to dwelle in flesche is needful for ȝou/ and I
 trauynge þis þing: woot þat I schal dwelle: e parfitely
 dwelle to alle ȝou: to youre graue e ioye of feip: þat youre
 þanþynge abounde in crist Jhu in me: by my comynge estelone
 to ȝou/ onely lyue ȝee worthily to þe gospel of crist: þat whete
 I schal come e to ȝou: oþer absent I schal here of ȝou: for ȝee
 stonde in one spirit of one wille transylunge to gedir to þe
 feib of þe gospel: e in no þing be aferde of aduerfaries þe
 whiche is to hem cause of perducoun: forloþe to ȝou cause of
 helpe and his þing of god for it is ȝouen to ȝou for crist: þat
 not onely ȝee be leuen into hym: but also þat ȝee suffren for
 hym haunþinge þe same strife what maner e ȝee liven in me: e
 now ȝee haue herde of me

C^m 2^m



Therefore ȝif any coumfort in crist: ȝif any solace of
 charite: ȝif any felowschip of spirit: ȝif any entaylis
 of mercy doinge: fulfille ȝee my ioye: þat ȝee vnder-
 stonde þe same þing: haunþinge þe same charite of one
 wille: selynge þe same þing: no þing by strife neþer by veyne
 glorie: but in mekenesse demynge hizer to hem self to gedir (or
 eche holdynge oþer in vertue): not eche by hem self biholdynge
 what þingis ben here owne: but þo þingis þat ben of oþer/ for-
 soþe

to philipensis

soþe feele zee þis þing in zou: þe whiche & in cēt Ihū/ þe whiche
whan he was in fourme of god: demyde not raueyne hym
self for to be euen to god: but he mekide hym self: takynge þe
fourme of a seruaunt into lickenesse of men made: & in þibite
founde as a man/ he mekide hym self made obedient vnto
þe deþ: forsoþe to þe deþ of crosse/ for whiche þing & god en-
haunside hym: & zæue to hym a name þat is aboue al name/
þat in þe name of Ihū eche knee be bowide of heuenely þingis
& erþely & hellis/ and eche tunge knoweleche: for þe lorde Ihū
cēt: is in þe glorie of god þe fadir// ¶ And so my moſte der-
worþe as euermore zee hane obeschide not onely in my pre-
ſence: but myche more nowe in myn abſence wirche zee wiþ
drede & tremblynge zoure helpe/ forsoþe it is god þat worchip
in zou: & for to wille: & for to parfourme for gode wille/ for-
soþe do zee alle þingis wiþ outhen grucchyngis & doutyngis:
þat zee be wiþ outhen pleynte: & þe ſymple ſones of god wiþ
outhen reprove in þe mydel of a ſchrewide nacioun & way:
warde/ amonge whom zee ſchynen as zyuers of liȝt in þe
worlde: holdyng to gedir þe worde of liȝt to my glorie in þe
day of cēt/ for I haue not runnen in veyne: neþer in veyne
traueylide/ But & zif I be offride (or ſlayne) vpon þe ſacrifice
& ſeruyce of zoure ſeiþ: I haue ioye & to gedir þanke zou alle/
þe ſame þing forsoþe & zee hane ioye: & to gedir þanke me/
forsoþe I hope in þe lorde Ihū me for to ſende tymothe ſoone
to zou: þat & I be in good intwit (or gladneſſe): þo þingis
knownen þat be at zou/ forsoþe I haue no man ſo of one wille
(or acorde): þat is biſie for zou wiþ clene effecioun (or de-
ſire)/ forsoþe alle men ſeeken þo þingis þat ben here owne:
not þo þat ben of cēt Ihū/ forsoþe knowe zee þe aſape of
hym: for as a ſone to þe fadir: he ſeruyde wiþ me in þe goſ-
pel/ forsoþe I hope me for to ſende hym to zou: anone as I
ſchal ſe what þingis ben aboute me/ ſopely in þe lorde I
triſte: for & I myſelf ſchal come to zou ſoone/ forsoþe I geſſide
it nedeful for to ſende to zou epaphrodite my brother & euer

ye piſſel

wirchir & myn euen knyzt. forſoþe zoure apoſtle & þe ſeruaunt
of my nede/ for ſoþely he deſiride zou alle. & he was ſorowful.
for þat & zee herden hym made ſijk/ forwhi & he was made
ſijk to þe deþ. but god hadde mercy of hym/ forſoþe not onely
of hym. but alſo & of me. leſſe I hadde heueneſſe vpon heue-
neſſe/ þerfore more haſtily I ſente hym. þat hym ſeyn. eſte
zee hane ioþe. & I be wiþ outen heuynneſſe/ and ſo receyue zee
hym wiþ al ioþe in þe lorde. & haue zee ſuche maner men wiþ
honoure/ for whi of þe werke of cñ. vnto þe deþ he wente.
zyuyng his ſoule (þat is liſt). þat he ſchulde fulfille þat þat
ſaylde to zou anentis my ſeruyce//

C^m 3^m



Ensforþewarde my breþeren haue zee ioþe in þe
lorde. for to write to zou þe ſame þingis. forſoþe
to me not ſlowe forſoþe to zou neceſſarie/ ſe zee
houndis. ſe zee euyl werkemen. ſe zee dyuyſioun/
ſoþely we ben circumciſioun þat by ſpirit ſeruen to god. & glo-
rien in cñ Jhū. & not hauynge triſte in þe fleſche/ þouz I
haue triſte & in þe fleſche. zif any oþer man is ſeen for to
triſte in þe fleſche I more. circumcidide in þe eyzthe day. of
þe kynrede of Iſrl. of þe lynage of beniamyn. an ebrue of
ebrues. aſtir þe lawe a phariſe. aſtir loue purſuyng þe chirche
of god. aſtir rihtweſneſſe þat is in þe lawe lyuyng wiþ outen
playnte/ but whiche þingis weren to me wyynnynge. I haue
demyde þes peyryngis for cñ/ neþeles I geſſe alle þingis for
to be peyrement. by þe cleer ſcience of Jhū cñ/ for whom I
made alle þingis peyrement/ and I deme as tordis. þat I
wynne cñ. & þat I be founde in hym. not hauynge my riht-
weſneſſe þat is of þe lawe. but þat þat is of þe ſeiþ of cñ þat
is of god rihtweſneſſe in ſeiþ for to knowe hym & þe vertue of
his riſyng azen. & þe ſelowſchip of his paſſioun. configuride
(or made lijk). to his deþ. zif on any maner I ſchal come (or
renne) azen to þe reſurrecoñ þat is of deade (men)/ not þat
nowe I haue taken. or nowe am parſite/ forſoþe I ſue zif any
maner

to philipensis.

maner I schal comprehende · & in what þing I am compre-
hendide of Ihu cñ/ breþeren I deme me not to haue compre-
hendide/ one þing forsoþe I forzetynge soþely þo þingis þat
ben byþynde · arecchyngge my self forsoþe to þo þingis þat
ben þe former to þe ordeynnde þing: pursue to þe prise of þe
hize clepyngge of god in cñ Ihu/ herfore who euer we ben par-
site: feele we þis þing/ & zif we vnderstonde oþer maner any
þing: & þat þing god schal schewe to zou/ neþeles to what
þing we hane comen · þat we vnderstonde þe same þing: & þat
we parsitely dwelle in þe same reule// ¶ Breþeren be zee my
solowes & wayte zee hem þat walken so: as zee hane oure
fourme/ forsoþe many walken: whom I haue seyde to zou
ofte/ forsoþe now & I wepyngge seye þe enemyes of cristis
croste/ whos ende deþ (or perischynge) whos god is þe wombe/
& glorie in confusioun of hem: þat saueren erþely þingis/ for-
soþe oure lyuynge is in heuenes/ wher of alle we abiden þe
saueour oure lorde Ihu cñ · whiche schal conferme þe body of
oure mekenesse configuride (or made lijk) to þe body of clere-
nes: aftir þe wirchyngge by whiche he may also make alle þin-
gis suget to hym//



And so my breþeren moste derworþ & moste desiride ·
my ioye & my crowne so stonde zee in þe lorde most
dere breþeren/ I preye eucodian · & I biseche syn-
ticen: for to vnderstonde þe same þing in þe lorde/
also I preye & þee german felowe · helpe þou þe ilke (wym-
men) þat traueplen wiþ me in þe gospel wiþ clement & oþer
myn helpers: whos names ben in þe book of lijk/ ioye zee in
þe lorde euermore: este I seye ioye zee/ be zoure temperaunce
(or paciencie) knowen to alle men: þe lorde is nyz/ be zee no
þing bisie: but in al preyer & bisechyngge wiþ doynge of þank-
yngis · be zoure aringis knowen at god/ and þe pees of god
þat passith al witte: kepe zoure hertis & vnderstondyngis · in
cñ Ihu oure lorde// ¶ Afro hensforþ breþeren · what euer þin-
gis

C^m 4^m

ye pistel to colocenses//



Dul apostle of Ihu cñ · by þe wille of C^m 1^m
god · & tymothe broþer · to hem þat
ben at colocence · holy & seithful bre-
þeren in crist Ihu · grace to zou & pees
of god oure fadir · & of þe lorde Ihu
cñ/ we done þankyngis to god & þe
fadir of oure lorde Ihu cñ · euermore
for zou preyinge · we herynge zoure

seih in cñ Ihu · & þe loue þat zee hane into alle holy men for
þe hope þat is kepte to zou in heuenes · þe whiche zee herden
in þe worde of treuþe of þe gospel þat came to zou · as & it is
in al þe worlde · & makih fruyte & warih as in zou of þat day
in whiche zee herden & knewen þe grace in treuþe as zee ler-
neden at epaphras oure euer seruaunt moste derworþ · þe
whiche is a trewe mynystre of Ihu cñ for zou/ þe whiche also
schetwite to vs zoure lyuyng in spirit// herfore & we fro þe
day in whiche we herden · ceesen not for zou preying & aringe
þat zee be fulfild wih þe knowynge of his wille · in al wis-
dom & gostly vnderstandyng þat zee walke worþily to god by
al þe plesynge þingis · makynge fruyte in al good werke · &
waringe in þe science of god/ in al vertue comfortyde astir þe
myzt of his clerenesse in al patience · & longe abidyng wih
ioye/ doinge þankyngis to god þe fadir · þe whiche made vs
worþi into þe parte of sorte of holy men in lizt · þe whiche de-
lyueride vs fro þe power of dirkeness · & translatide into þe
kyngdom of þe sone of his louynge · in whom we haue azen
byinge & remysion of synnes/ þe whiche is þe ymage of god
inuyfible · þe firste bigoten of eche creature/ for in hym al
þingis ben made · in heuenes · & in erþe · visible & inuyfible ·
oþer trones · oþer domynacōnes · oþer potestates/ alle þingis
ben

ye pistel

ben made of nouzt by hym . & in hym . & he is bifore al . & al
 pingis ben in hym / & he is heed of þe body of þe chirche . þe
 whiche is þe bygynnyng (or þe firste þing) of alle . & þe firste
 bigoten of deade (men) . þat he beholdyng prymacie (or þe
 firste dignyte) in alle þingis / for in hym it pleside to gedir al
 plente to inhabite . & by hym al þingis for to be recounseylide
 to hym he plesyng by þe blode of his crosse . oþer þo þingis þat
 ben in erþes . oþer þat ben in heuenes / & whan zee weren sum-
 tyme alienyde (or made straunge) & enemyes by wit in euyl
 werkis . nowe forsoþe he haþ recounseylide zou in þe body of
 his fleysche by deþ . for to haue zou holy . & vnwemmyde . &
 wiþ outhen reprove bifore hym . zif neþeles zee dwellen in þe
 feiþ . foundide & stable & vnmouable fro þe hope of þe gospel
 þat zee hane herde þe whiche is prechide in al creature þat is
 vndir heuene / for whiche I poul am made mynyste . þe whiche
 nowe I haue ioye in passyouns for zou . & fulfille þo þingis þat
 saylen of þe passiouns of crist . in my fleysche for his body þat
 is in þe chirche / of þe whiche I poul am made mynyste (or
 seruaunt) by þe dispensaçon of god þat is zouen to me in zou .
 þat I fulfille þe worde of god . þe mysterie (or pryete) þat
 was hid fro worldis & generaçois / nowe forsoþe it is schewide
 to his seyntis . to whom god wolde make þe richessis knowen
 of þe glorie of þis sacrament in heþen men . þat is crist in zou .
 þe hope of glorie . whom we schewen reprovynge eche man &
 techynge eche man in al wisdom . þat we zyue eche man par-
 site in cēt Ihu / in whiche þing & I traueyl . stryunge by þe
 wirchyng of hym . þat he worchih in me in vertue //

C^m 2^m



Shely I wole zou for to wite . what bisynes I haue
 for zou . & for hem þat ben at laodice . & whiche
 euer sizen not my face in fleysche . þat þe hertis of
 hem ben comfortide tauzte in charite . & into alle
 richessis of plente of undirfondyng . into knowynge of mys-
 terie of god þe fadir of Ihu cēt in whom ben alle tresours hid
 of

to colocenſes

of wiſdom & trience/ forſoþe his þing þat no man deceyue zou
in heyꝛþe of wordis/ for whi & I be abſent in body: but in
ſpirit I am wiþ zou · ioyinge & ſeinge zoure ordre · & þe ſad-
nes of zoure bileue þat is in criſt/ þerfore as zee hane taken
Ihū criſt oure lorde · walke zee in hym · rotide & bildide aboue
in eſt · & confermyde in þe bileue · as & zee hane lernyde
aboundynge in hym in doinge of þankis// ¶ Se zee þat no
man deceyue zou by filoſophie & veyne fallace (or gilous falſe-
hede) · aftir þe tradicoñ of men: vþ elementis of þis worlde
& not aftir eſt/ for in hym dwelliþ bodily al plente of þe god-
hede: & zee ben fulſilde in hym þat is hede of al pryncipate &
power/ in whom & zee ben circumcidide in circumciſioun not
made wiþ handes in nakidneſſe of þe body of fleysche: but in
circumciſioun of criſt/ to gedir biriede to hym in baptyſm: in
whom & zee haue riſen azen by ſeiþ of þe worchyng of god ·
þat reþſide hym fro deade (men)/ and whan zee weren deade
in giltis · & in prepucie of zoure fleysche · he quyknyde to
gedir zou wiþ hym · forzyuynge to zou al giltis · doinge aweye
þat wrptyng of decree (or doom) þat was azens zou · þat
was contrarie to zou/ & he took þat fro þe mydle · picchyng
it to þe croſſe · ſpouþlyng pryncipates & powers led oute triſ-
tily: openly ouercomynge hem in hym ſelf/ þerfore no man
iuge zou in mete or drynke or in party of feſt day or noe-
menye or of ſabotis · þe whiche ben ſchadowe of þingis to
come: forſoþe þe bodye is of eſt// ¶ No man deceyue zou
willynge in mekenes & religion of aungels · þe whiche þingis
he haþ not ſeyn · walkyng veynely · inblowen wiþ witte of his
fleysche · & not holdyng þe heed of whom al þe body by bondis
& ioynyngis to gedir vndre mynyſtride & made: wariþ into þe
encresyng of god/ for zif zee ben deade wiþ criſt fro þe ele-
mentis of þis worlde: what zit as men lyuynge to þe worlde
deme zee? neþer zee ſchulen touche neþer taſte · neþer trete
wiþ handis þo þingis þe whiche al ben into deþ by þe ilke uſe:
aftir preceptis & techyng of men þe whiche ben ſopely hau-
ynge

to colocenles

in dede: alle þingis in þe name of oure lorde Ihu cñ • doinge þankyngis to god þe fadir by hym/ wymmē by zee ſuget to zoure houbondis: as it bihoueh in þe lorde/ men loue zee zoure wiſes & nyl zee be bitter to hem/ ſones obeye zee to fadir & modir: bi alle þingis/ forſoþe þis is wel plesynge to þe lorde/ faderis nyl zee terre zoure ſones to indignaçon: þat þei be not made of litil inwitte (or reſoun)/ ſeruauntis obeye zee by alle þingis to flepſchely lordis/ not ſeruyngē at yze as plesynge to men: but in þe ſymplenēſſe of herte dredynge þe lorde/ what euer zee done • wirche zee of inwitte as to þe lorde: & not to men/ wityngē þat of þe lorde zee ſchulen take retribuçon (or azen zildynge) of heretage/ ſerue zee to þe lorde criſt/ forſoþe he þat doiþ iniurie (or wronge): ſchal receyue þat þat he diide euyl/ & accepçon of perſones is not anentis god//

Erdis þat is iuſte & euen: zyue zee to ſeruauntis • C^m 4^m
wityng þat & zee hane a lorde in heuene/ be zee biſie to preyer • wakynge in it: in doinge of þankyngis/ preyngē to gedir & for vs: þat god open to vs þe dore of worde for to ſpeke þe myſterie of cñ/ for whiche alſo I am bounden þat I ſchewe it: ſo þat it bihoueh me for to ſpeke/ in wiſdom walke zee to hem þat ben wiþ outhen forþ: azen byngē tyme/ zoure worde be ſaueride in ſalte þat is wiſdom: euermore in grace/ þat zee wite how it byhoueh zou for to anſwere to eche man/ titicus my moſte dere broþer & ſeiþful mynyſtre & euen ſeruaunt in þe lorde: ſchal make alle þingis knowen to zou: þat ben aboute me/ whom I ſente to zou to þis ſame þing: þat he knowe what þingis ben aboute zou/ & comforte zoure hertis wiþ honeſtimo moſte dere & ſeiþful broþers: þe whiche is of zou/ þe whiche ſchal make alle þingis þat ben done here: knowen to zou/ ariſtark myn euen captiſe (or pryſonner) wiþ me greteþ zou wel/ and marke þe coſyn of barnabas: of whom zee hane taken maundementis/

ye pistel to colocenſes

zif he ſchal come to zou: receyue zee hym/ & Jhū pat is ſeyde
iuſte: he whiche ben of circumciſioun/ þei al one ben myn
helpers in þe kyngdom of god: þat weren to me in ſolace/
epaphras þat is of zou · gretih̄ zou wel · þe ſeruaunt of Jhū
crist · euer biſie for zou in preyers: þat zee ſtonde parſite & ful
in al þe wille of god/ ſohely I here witneſſynge to hym · þat
he haþ myche traueyl for zou · & for hem þat ben at laodice ·
& þat ben at Jerapolym/ luke þe leche moſte dere & demas:
greten zou wel/ grete zee wel þe breheren þat ben at laodice
& nympham: & þe chirche þat is in his hous/ & whanne þis
piſtle ſchal be redde at zou: do zee þat it be redde in þe chirche
of laodicenſes: & þat is of laodicenſis · be red at zou/ & ſeye
zee to archipp/ ſe þe mynſtre þat þou haſt take of þe lordes:
þat þou fulfille it/ my ſalutacon · by þe hande of poul/ be zee
myndeful of my bondis/ þe grace of oure lord Jhū crist: be
wiþ zou alle amen//

ye firſte piſtle to teſſalonicensis

C^m 1^m



Dul apoſtle & ſiluan & tymothe to þe
chirche of teſſalonicene · in god oure
ſadir & þe lord Jhū crist: grace to zou
& pees/ we done þankyngis to god
euermore for alle zou: makynge mynde
of zou in oure preyers wiþ oute ceſ-
ynge/ we myndeful of zoure werke of
leiþ & traueyl & charite: & ſuſteynynge
of þe hope of þe lord Jhū crist: before þe lord & oure ſadir//
¶ We witynge zee moſte louede breheren of þe lord & oure
cheſynge · for oure goſpel was not at zou in worde onely: but
in vertue & in þe holy goost & in myche plente as zee witen
what

ye firste pistel to tessalonicenses

what maner man we weren in zou · for zou/ and zee ben made
oure solowers: & of þe lorde: receyvinge þe worde in myche
tribulacō · wif ioye of þe holy gost · so þat zee be made fourme
(or ensauple) to al men bileuynge in macedonye & acaye/
forsoþe of zou þe worde of þe lorde is defamyde (or gretely
tolde) · not onely in macedonye & acaye: but in eche place
zoure seiþ þat is to god is parsite/ so þat it is not nede for to
speke to zou any þing/ forsoþe þei schewen of zou what maner
entre we hadden to zou · & how we ben conuertide to god fro
symulacris · for to serue to quicke god & verrey · & for to
abide his sone fro heuenes whom he reyside fro deade (men) ·
Jhu þat delyueride vs fro wrappe to comynge//

EOr whi zee witen breþeren oure entre to zou · for
it was not beyne: but firste we suffride & punischide
wif wrongis as zee witen in philippis: hadde triste
in oure lorde for to speke to zou þe gospel of god ·
in myche bisynesse/ soþely oure exortacō (or techynge) was
not of erreure neþer of vncleynesse · neþer of gile · but as we
ben prouede of god · þat þe gospel schulde be taken to vs: so
we speken/ not as plesynge to men: but to god þat proueth
oure hertis/ forsoþe neþer we weren any tyme in worde of
glosynge: as zee witen/ neþer in occasiō of auarise: god is
witnesse/ neþer seekynge glorie of men neþer of zou neþer of
oper: whanne we myzten be charge to zou of cōstis apostlis/
but we ben made litil in þe mydil of zou · as zif a nurse fostre
hire sones: so we desyrynge zou · coueytynge (or wif greet
loue) wolden bitake to zou not onely þe gospel of god: but
also oure lyues · for zee ben made to vs most derworþ/ for-
soþe breþeren zee ben myndeful of oure traueyl & werynesse
nyzt & day wirchynge þat we schulden not greue any of zou:
prechiden in zou þe euangelie of god/ zee ben witnessis & god
how holily & iustly · & wif outhen pleynte to zou þat bileueden
we weren · as zee weren/ how eche of zou as þe saidir his sones
preyynge

C^m 2^m

to tessalonicens

zee hane euermore gode mynde of vs · desyrnge for to se vs
as we also zou: herfore breheren we hen coumfortide in zou
in al oure nede & tribulacō · by zoure seih/ for nowewelyuen:
zif we stonden in þe lorde/ soþely we doinge of þankynge
mōwe we zilde to god for zou in al ioye · in whiche we ioyen
for zou bifore oure lorde nyzt & day · more plenteuously prey-
inge þat we se zoure face: & fulfille þo þingis þat saylen of
zoure seih/ forsoþe þe same god oure fadir & þe lorde Jhū crī:
dresse oure weye to zou/ forsoþe þe lorde multiplie zou · & make
zoure charite for to abounde into gedit into alle · as & we in
zou · to zoure hertis · to be confermyde wiþ outhen pleynte in
holynesse bifore god & oure fadir in þe comynge of oure lorde
Jhū crīst wiþ alle his seyntis amen//



Therefore breheren hensforþwarde we prepen zou &
bisechen in þe lorde Jhū · þat as zee haue recey-
uede of vs how it bihoueh zou for to go & plese to
god: so & walke zee þat zee abounde more/ soþely
zee witen what comaundementis I haue zouen to zou by þe
lorde Jhū/ forsoþe þis is þe wille of god · zoure makynge
holy · þat zee abstene zou fro fornycacō/ þat eche of zou
kunne welde his vessel in makynge holy (or holynesse) & ho-
noure/ not in passioun of desire: as & folke of kynde þat know-
en not god/ and þat no man ouergo neþer deceyue his broþer
in cause (or nede)/ for þe lorde is venger of alle þes þingis ·
as we bifore seyden to zou: & haue witnesside (or prouede by
autorite)/ soþely god clepide not vs into unclennesse: but into
holynesse/ and so he þat dispisih þes þingis dispisih not man:
but god þat zaue his holy spirit in vs// ¶ Forsoþe of þe cha-
rite of breþerhede: we hadden not nede for to write to zou/
soþely zee zoure self haue lernyd of god: þat zee loue to gedit:
& forsoþe zee done þat into alle breheren in al macedonye/
forsoþe breheren we prepen zou þat zee abounde more & ȝyue
werke (or bisynesse) þat zee be quyet & do zoure nede þat zee
wirche

pe firste piſtel

wirche wiſſe zoure handiſſe: as we have comaundide to zou/ and
 þat zee wandre honeſtly to hem þat ben wiſſe outh: þat of
 no mannes zee deſire any þing/ forſoþe breþeren we wolde
 not zou for to unknowe of men ſleepyng (or dyping) • þat zee
 ben not ſorowful • as & oþer þat haue not hope/ ſoþely zif we
 bileuen þat Ihu was deade & roos azen: ſo & god ſchal leede
 wiſſe hym hem þat ſlepten (or dieden) by Ihu/ ſoþely þis þing
 we ſeyn to zou: in worde of þe lorde/ for we þat lyuen þat ben
 reſidue (or leſte) in þe comyng of þe lorde ſchulen not come
 biſore hem þat ſlepten (or dieden) for he þe lorde in com-
 aundyng & in voyce of þe archaungel & in þe trumpe of god:
 ſchal come doune fro heuene/ and þe deade men þat ben in eſt
 ſchulen riſe azen firſt/ azenwarde we þat lyuen þat ben leſte:
 ſchulen be rauyſchide to gedir wiſſe hem in clouidiſſe • metyng
 to criſt in þe erþe: & ſo euermore we ſchulen be wiſſe þe lorde:
 & ſo be zee coumfortide to gedir in þeſ wordiſſe//

C^m 5^m



Forſoþe breþeren of tymes & momentis: zee nedden
 not þat I write to zou/ alſo zee zoure ſelf diligently
 witen • for þe day of þe lorde as a þeeſ in nyzt/ ſo
 ſchal come/ ſoþely whanne þei ſchulen ſeye pees &
 ſikernesse: þanne ſodeyn perſchynge (or deþ) ſchal come aboue
 to hem • as ſorowe to (a womman) beryng childe: & þei ſchu-
 len not ſcape/ forſoþe breþeren zee ben not in dirkenessiſſe: þat
 þe ilke day as a þeeſ cacche zou/ ſoþely alle zee ben þe ſones
 of lizt: & ſones of day/ we ben not of nyzt: neþer of dirke-
 nessiſſe/ þerfore ſlepe we not as & oþer: but wake & be we ſobre/
 forſoþe þei þat ſlepen: ſlepen in þe nyzt/ and þei þat ben
 drunken: ben drunken in þe nyzt/ forſoþe we þat ben of þe
 day: ben ſobre • cloþide þe haubirionne of feiþ & charite þe
 helme hope of helþe/ for god puttide not vs into wrapþe/ but
 into purchaſyng of helþe by oure lorde Ihu eſt: þat was
 deade for vs/ þat wheþer we waken wheþer we ſlepen: we
 lyue to gedir wiſſe hym/ for whiche þing be zee coumfortide to
 gedir •

to tessalonicenses

gedir · & edisse zee eche oþer as & zee kunne// ¶ forsoþe breþeren we prepen zou þat zee schulen knowe hem þat traueylen amonge zou · & ben bifore to zou in þe lorde · & monessen (or techen) zou; þat zee haue hem more aboundauntly in charite/ for þe werke of hem; haue pees wiþ hem/ forsoþe breþeren we prepen zou · reþroue zee (or chastise) vnquyete men/ comforte zee men of litil herte; receyue zee sick men; be zee pacient to alle men/ se zee þat no man zilde euyl for euyl; but euermore sue zee þat þat is gode to gedir · & into alle men euermore ioyze zee · wiþ outhen ceefynge prepe zee; in alle þingis do zee þankyngis/ forsoþe þis is þe wille of god in cōst Jhū; & in alle zou/ nyl zee quenche þe spirit nyl zee dispise prophetis/ forsoþe proue zee alle þingis · holde zee þat þing þat is gode/ abstene zou fro euyl spice (or lickenesse) forsoþe þe same god of pees make zou holy by alle þingis; þat zoure spirit be kepte hool · & soule & body wiþ outhen pleynte; in þe comynge of oure lorde Jhū cōst/ god is trewe þat clepide zou · þe whiche also schal do/ breþeren prepe zee for vs/ grete zee wel alle breþeren in hooly cosse/ ¶ I coniure zou bi þe lorde þat þis pistle be redde to alle holy breþeren/ þe grace of oure lorde Jhū crist; be wiþ zou alle Amen//

ye secounde pistel to tessalonicenses.



Or soþe breþeren we prepen zou by þe comynge of
oure lorde Ihū c̄st. & oure congregaçon into þe
same þing: þat zee be not mouede sone fro zoure
witte. neþer be zee agast: neþer bi spirit. neþer
by worde. neþer by epistle. as sente by vs. as þe day of þe
lorde be nyȝ. þat no man deceyue zou in any maner/ for no
but departynge aweiȝe (or discençon) schal come firste. & þe
man of synne schal be schewide. þe sone of perdicione þat
is aduersarie & is enhauncide vpon alle þing þat is seyde god
or þat is worschipe. so þat he sitte in þe temple (or into þe
temple) of god: schewynge hymself as he be god/ wher zee
holden not þat zit whanne I was at zou: I seyde þes þingis
to zou) & now what wipholdiþ zee witen: þat he be schewide
in his tyme/ forwhy þe myserie (or pryete) of wickidnesse
worship now/ onely þat he þat holdiþ now. holde: til it be
made of þe myddle/ & þanne þe ilke wickide (man) schal be
schewide: whom þe lorde ihū schal slee wip þe spirit of his
mouȝ: & schal distruye wip þe illumynynge (or schynynge) of
his comynge Ihū schal slee hym whos comynge is astir þe
wirchyng of sathanas. in al vertue. & signes & grete wondris
lizynge (or false). & in al deceyte of wickidnesse to hem þat pe-
rischen/ for þat þei receyueden not þe charite of treuþe: þat
þei schulden be made saaf/ þerfore god schal sende to hem a
wirchyng of errour þat þei bileue to leesyng. þat alle be de-
myde (or dampnyde) þe whiche bileueden not to treuþe: but
consentiden to wickidnesse/ ¶ For soþe we owen for to do þank-
yngis euermore to god for zou breþeren louede of god. þat
god chees vs prymysse (or firste fruytis) into helpe: in ha-
lowynge of spirit & seiþ of treuþe/ in þe whiche & he clepide zou
bi oure gospel: into getynge of þe glorie of oure lorde Ihū c̄st/
and so breþeren stonde zee & holde zee þe tradicoñs (or tech-
yngis) þat zee hane lernede oþer by worde oþer by oure epis-
tel/ for soþe oure lorde Ihū crist hym self & god & oure fadir.

to tessalonicenses.

place/ þe lorde be wiþ zou alle/ my salutacioun by þe hande
of poule: þat is signe in eche epistle I write þus/ þe grace of
oure lorde Jhū c̄st: be wiþ zou alle amen//

þe firste pißtel to tymothe.



Dul apostle of Jhū crist astir þe comaun-
dement of god oure saueoure & Jhū c̄st
oure hope & to tymothe þe louede sone
in þe seiþ: grace & mercy & pees of god
þe fadir & c̄st Jhū oure lorde/ as I
prepede þee þat þou schuldest dwelle at
ephesy whan I wente to macedonye
þat þou schuldist denounse to summe

C^m 1^m

þat þei schulden not teche oþer weye neþer ȝyue tente to fa-
blis & genelogies wiþ outhen endis þe whiche ȝyuen questiouns:
more þan edificacioun of god þat is in þe seiþ/ forsoþe þe
ende of comaundement is charite of clene herte & good con-
science: & seiþ not feynede/ fro whiche þingis summen erryng
ben turnyde to gedir into veyne speche & willynge for to be
techers of þe lawe & not vnderstonnyng neþer what þingis
ben spoken: neþer of what þingis þei affermen// ¶ forsoþe
we witen for þe lawe is good: ȝif any men vse it lawfully/
wityng þis þing & þat þe lawe is not putte to a iuste man: but
to an vniust & not suget & to vnpitouse men & synners & to cur-
side men & defoulide & to fleers of faderis & fleers of moders &
fornycatours & to hem þat trespassen wiþ malis azenes kynde
hem þat putten woundis to men & sellers (or flelers & drawers
aweie of men): lesyng mongers & forsworne/ and ȝif any
þing is contrarie to holsum techynge & þat is astir þe euan-
gelie of þe glorie of blesside god: þe whiche gospel is bitaken
to

to tymothe.

wif schamefastnesse & sobrenesse: ournyng hem self/ not in
wripen heris oþer in golde oþer in margaritis (or peerlis)
oþer precyous cloþes: but þat bicomēs wymmen bihotyng
pitee by gode werkis/ a womman lerne in scilence wif al sub-
ieccoñ/ forsoþe ¶ I suffre not a womman for to teche: neþer for
to haue lordeschip into þe man (or housbonde) · but for to
be in scilence/ forsoþe Adam was firste fourmyde · aftir warde
eue/ and adam was not deceyuede in feiþ: but þe womman
was deceyuede in feiþ · in preuaricacioun (or brekyng) of þe
lawe/ Sopely sche schal be sauede by generacoñ of sones: zif
sche schal dwelle parfitely in feiþ & loue & holynesse wif so-
brenesse//



Faithful worde zif any man desirþ a bischopriche: he desirþ a gode werke/ þerfore it bihoueþ a bi-
schop for to be wiþouten reþroue · & þe housbonde
of one wijs: sobre · prudent · ournyde · chaste hold-
yng hospitalite · techer not zouen to myche wijn · not smyter ·
but temperaunt (or pacient)/ not litigious (or ful of strife or
chydyng)/ not coueytouse · wel rewlýnge his hous · hauyng
sones soget wiþ al chastite/ forsoþe zif any man con not go-
uerne his hous: how schal he haue diligence of þe chirche of
god? not newe conuertide to þe feiþ/ lest he be borne vp into
pride: falle into þe dome (or synne) of þe deuyll/ forsoþe it bi-
houeþ hym for to haue gode witnessyng of hem þat ben wiþ-
outesorþ: þat he falle not into reþroue (or schenschip) & into
þe snare of þe deuyll/ ¶ Also (it bihoueþ) dekenes for to be
chaste not double tungide · not zouen to myche wijn · not so-
lowyng foule wyynyng · hauyng þe mysterie of feiþ in clene
conscience/ & forsoþe he þei prouede firste: þat þei mynystre
so · hauyng no cryme (or greet synne) ¶ Also (it bihoueþ)
wymmen for to be chaste · not bachityng · sobre · feiþful in
alle þingis/ dekenes be þei housbondis of one wijs: þe whiche
(dekenes) gouerne wel here sones & here housis/ sopely þei þat
schulen

C^m 3^m

re: finite: pushed

[illegible][illegible]

to tymothe.

is in þee · þat is zouen to þee by prophete · wiþ puttynge to of þe handis of priſt (or priſthode)/ þenke þou þes þingis · in þes be þou · þat þi profitynge be ſchewide to alle men/ take tente to þi ſelf & doctryne · and be biſie in hem/ ſoþely þou doinge þes þingis · ſchalt make þi ſelf ſaaf · and hem þat heren þee//



Lame þou not an eldre man · but biſeche as fadir · C^m 5^m
 zonge men as breþeren · olde wymmen as mode-
 ris · zonge wymmen as ſiſtris · in al chaſtite/ ho-
 noure þou widowis · þat ben verrey widowis/ for-
 ſoþe zif any widowe haþ ſones or children of ſones (coſyns) ·
 lerne ſche ſiſte for to gouerne hire hous · & chaungeable while
 or eche to oþer zilde to fadir & modir/ ſoþely þis þing is ac-
 ceptide biſore god/ forſoþe ſche þat is a widowe verreyly · &
 deſolate (or diſ-coumfortide) · hope into god · & wake in bi-
 ſechyngis & preyers nyzt & day/ forwhi ſche þat is lyuyn in
 delicis · is deade/ and þis þing comaunde þou þat þei be wiþ
 outhen reþroue/ forſoþe zif any man haue not cure of his owne
 & moſte of his houſholde men · he haþ denyede þe ſeiþ · & is
 worſe þan an vnſeiþful (or heþen man)/ a widowe be not cho-
 ſen of leſſe þan ſixty zeer · þat was wiſf of one houſbonde ·
 hauynge witneſſynge in gode werkis · zif ſche noriſchide ſones ·
 zif ſche receyuede pore men to herborwe · zif ſche haue waſ-
 chen þe feet of holy men · zif ſche vndremynnyſtride to men ſuf-
 fryng tribulacioun · zif ſche ſolowide al gode werke/ forſoþe
 eſchewe zonger widowis · forſoþe whanne þei haue done lec-
 cherie in cō · þei wolen be weddide · hauynge dampnaciō · for
 þei haue made þe ſiſte ſeiþ voyde/ alſo forſoþe & þei ydil ·
 lernen for to enuyroune houſis/ not onely forſoþe ydil · but &
 ful of wordis & curious · ſpekynge what þingis it bihoueþ not/
 þerfore I wole zonger for to be weddide · for to brynge forþ
 ſones · for to be houſwiſes · for to zyue none occaſioun to þe
 aduerſarie · bicauſe of curſide þing/ nowe forſoþe ſumme ben
 turnide abac aftir ſathanas/ ¶ zif any ſeiþful man haþ wi-
 dowis

to tymothe

no doute for we mowne not here aweye any þing/ forsoþe
 haupnge foodis & wiþ what þingis we schulen be cloþide: wiþ
 þes þingis be we payede/ for why þei þat wolen be made
 riche: fallen into temptacioun * & into gnare of þe deuel * &
 many vnprofitable desiris & noyous: þe whiche drenchen men
 into deþ & perdicione/ soþely þe roote of alle euellis: is
 coueytise/ þe whiche summen coueytynge: erreðen fro þe seiþ/
 & bisetten (or grassiden) hem wiþ many sorowis/ forsoþe þou
 man of god: flee þes þingis/ soþely sue þou rihtwesse:
 pitee * seiþ * charite * pacience * myldenesse/ strife þou a gode
 strife of seiþ: cacche euerlastyng lijf: into whiche þou art cle-
 pide * & haste knowelechide a good knowelechyng: bifore
 many witnessis/ I comaunde to þee bifore god þat quykeneþ
 alle þingis eist Ihu * þat zildide a witnessyng vndir pilate of
 pounce: a good confessiõ: þat þou kepe þe comaundement
 wiþ outen wemme irreprehensibill * til into þe comyng of
 oure lorde Ihu crist/ whom þe bleside & al one myzty kyng of
 kyngis & lorde of lordis: schal schewe in his tymes/ þe whiche
 al one hap vndeadelynes: & dwelliþ in lizte to whiche noman
 may come/ whom none of men sise: but neþer may se/ to
 whom glorie & honoure & empire into wiþouten ende amen/
 comaunde þou to þe riche men of þis worlde for to not sauer
 (or vndirsonde) hizely * neþer for to hope in vncerteynte of
 richeffis: but in quycke god þat zyueþ to vs al þingis plen-
 teously for to vse for to do wel * for to be made riche in gode
 werkis * liztely for to zyue * for to comyne * for to tresoure to
 hem self a good foundement * into tyme to comyng: þat þei
 cacche euerlastyng/ þou tymothe * kepe þi depost (or þing bita-
 ken to þee) * eschewyng curside noueltees or voyces * & oppn-
 youns of false name of kunnyng/ þe whiche summe bihot-
 yng: sellen doune aboute þe seiþ/ þe grace of god wiþ þee
 amen//

ye secounde pistel to tymothe

hou herdyst of me: in feiþ in loue in crist Ihu/ kepe þou a gode
deposi (or a þing taken to þi kepyngge office): by þe holy gost
þat dwelliþ in vs/ soþely þou wost þat alle þat ben in aspe
ben turnyde fro me • of whom is phigeliuþ & ermogynes/ þe
lorde ȝyue mercy to þe hous of oneseþore: for ofte he refreþ-
ide me • & schamyde not my cheyne/ but whanne he came to
rome: he souzte me bisily & fonde/ þe lorde ȝyue to hym to
synde mercy of gods: in þat day/ and how greet þingis he my-
nystride to me at ephesþ: þou hast better knowen//



Therefore þou my sone be comfortide in grace þat is
in crist Ihu: & what þingis þou hast herde of me by
many witnessis • bitake þou þes to feiþful men: þe
whiche schulen be able & for to teche oþer men/
trauel þou as a good knyzt of Ihu crist ¶ No man holdyng
knyztþode to god: inuolappiþ hym self with worldely nedis •
þat he plese to hym: to whom he haþ mouede hym self/ forwhi
þe þat striueþ (or fytþ in batayl) • schal not be crownyde: no
but þe þat schal fyt lawefully/ it bihoueþ an erþe tilier for to
receyue firste of þe fruytis/ vnderstonde þou what þingis I
seye/ soþely þe lorde schal ȝyue to þee in alle þingis vnder-
stondyng/ ¶ Be þou myndeful þe lorde Ihu crist for to haue
risen azen fro deade men • of þe seed of dauid: astir my gos-
pel in whiche I traueyl vnto bondis as euyl wirchynges: but
þe worde of god is not bounden/ þerfore I susteyne alle þingis
for þe chosen: þat & þei gete þe helpe þat is in crist Ihu • wiþ
heuenely glorie/ ¶ A tretwe worde forwhi zif we ben togedir
deade: & we schulen lyue to gedir/ zif we schulen susteyne: &
we schulen regne togedir/ zif we schulen denye: & he schal
denye vs/ zif we bileuen not: he dwelliþ feiþful • he may not
denye hym self/ forsoþe þes þingis I monest witnessyngge bifore
god/ nyl þou stryue in wordis/ forsoþe to no þing is it pro-
fitable: no but to þe turnyngge vptodoune of men heryngge/
forsoþe bisily cure þi self • for to ȝyue þee a prouable werke-
man

C^m 2^m

to tymothe

& leden captifis lital wimmen chargide wiþ synnes: þe whiche
ben ledde wiþ diuerse desiris euermore lernynge: & neuer par-
fitely comynge to þe kunnyng of treuþe/ forsoþe as Iannes
& Iambres azenstonden moyfes: so & þes azenstonden treuþe/
men corrupte in soule reprouede aboute þe seiþ: but forþer
þei schulen not profite/ soþely þe vnwisdom of hem schal be
knownen to alle men: as & heren was/ þou forsoþe hast geten
my doctryne & ordenaunce: purposynge seiþ: longe aby-
dynge: loue: pacience: persecuciouns: passiouns: what maner
ben made to me at antioche: at ychonpe: at listris: what
maner persecuciouns I sufferide: & þe lorde haþ delyueride me
of alle/ and alle men þat wolen lyue pitouly in crist Ihu:
schulen suffer persecucioun/ soþely euyl men & deceyuours:
schulen profite into worse: errynge & sendynge into errour/
but dwelle þou in þes þingis þat þou hast lernede: & ben bita-
ken to þee/ witynge of whom þou hast lernede: & for þou hast
knownen holy lettris fro þi zoupe: þe whiche mowne lerne þee
to helpe: by seiþ þat is in crist Ihu/ forsoþe al scripture of god
enyspirit is profitable to teche: to argue (or proue): to þe re-
prose wiþ for to lerne in ritzwesnesse/ þat þe man of god be
parfite: lernede to al gode werke//



Witnesse bifore god & crist Ihu: þat is to demyng
þe quykke & deade by þe comynge of hym & þe
kyngdom of hym: preche þe worde: be þou bisie
couenably wiþ outen reste: argue (or proue): bi-
teche: blame: in al pacience & doctryne/ forsoþe tyme schal
be whanne men schulen not suffer holsum doctryne: but at
desiris þei schulen gedir to gedir maystris: icchynge (or ple-
synge) to þe eris/ treuely þei schulen turne away þe herynge
fro treuþe: but to fablis þei schulen be turnede to gedir/ for-
soþe wake þou: in alle þingis traueyl þou/ do þe werke of
euangelist/ fultille þi seruyse: be þou sobre/ forsoþe I am
sacrifiede nowe: & þe tyme of my deþ (or resolucon) is nyȝ/ I
haue

ye secounde pistel to tymothe

haue stryuen a good strife · I haue endide þe course · I haue
kepte þe seip in þe toper tyme · a crowne of ritzwetnesse is
kepte to me · þe whiche þe lorde schal zilde to me in þat day
iustedomesman/ forsoþe not onely to me · but to hem þat louen
his comynge/ ¶ Þize for to come to me soone/ forsoþe demas
has forsaken me · louyng þis worlde · & wente to cessalonik ·
crescens · into galathie/ tyte into dalmaticþ · luke alone is
wip me/ take marke & leede to wip þee/ forsoþe he is profitable
to me into seruyce/ penulam · (þat is cloþe of romayns) ·
whiche I leste at troade anentis carpe · þou comynge brynge
wip þee & þe bookis · moste forsoþe parchemyn/ alisaundre þe
tresourer · schewide to me many euyl þingis/ þe lorde schal
zilde to hym astir his werkes · whom & þou eschewe/ sul
gretely forsoþe he azenstode my wordis/ in my firste defence
noman was to me · but alle forsoþen me/ be it not rettide to
hem// ¶ forsoþe þe lorde stode nyz to me & comfortide me ·
þat þe prechyng be fulfild bi me · & þat alle folkis here · & I
am delyueride for moup of þe lioune/ forsoþe þe lorde dely-
ueride me fro al euyl werke · & schal make saaf into his
heuenely kyngdom · to whom glorie into worldis of worldis
Amen/ ¶ Grete wel prisch · & aquyla & þe hous of onesefore/
forsoþe erastus dwellide at corrynthe/ forsoþe I leste trophy-
mus sijk at mylite/ toþely þize for to come bifore wynter/
eubolus & prudente & ignus & claudia and alle breþeren gre-
ten zou wel/ oure lorde Ihu crist wip þi spirit/ þe grace of
god wip zou amen//

ye epistel to tyte



Dul he seruauant of god & apostle of Ihu C^m 1^m

crisť astir he seiþ of god & knowynge of
he treuþe he whiche is after pitee • in
hope of euerlastyng lijf • þat god bihiȝte
þat lieþ not bifore worldely tymes/ for-
soþe he schewide in his tymes his worde
(or sone): in prechyngē þat is bitaken
to me • astir comaundement of oure sa-

ueour god: to tyte bilouede sone astir he comoune seiþ • grace
& pees of god he fadir • & of Ihu crisť oure saueour/ for grace
(or cause) of þis þing I leste þee at creete þat þou amende þo
þingis þat saylen • & ordeyne by cytee prissis: as & I disposide
to þee/ ȝif any man is wiþ outhen cryme or greet gylte • hous-
bonde of one wiif • haupnge seiþful sones not in occasioun of
leccherie or not suget/ forsoþe it bihoueþ a biȝhop for to be
wiþ outhen cryme • as dispendour of god • not proude • not
wraþful • not vnyolent (þat is myche ȝouen to wiin) • not
smytē • not coueytouse of soul wyngnyngē: but holdyngē hos-
pitalite • benygne • prudent • sobre • iuste • hooly • contynent •
biclippyngē þat trewe worde þat is vȝ doctryne/ þat he be
myȝty for to amonestē in holsom techyngē: & to reprove hem
þat aȝen seyn/ forsoþe þer ben many vnobedient • & veyne
spekers • & deceyuours: moſte þei þat ben of circumciſioun •
whom it bihoueþ for to be reprovede/ he whiche subuerten alle
housis • techyngē whiche þingis it bihoueþ not: for grace of
soul wyngnyngē/ summe one of hem þere propre prophete of
hem seyde/ men of crete euermore liers • euyl bestis • ſlowe of
wombe • þis witneſſyngē is trewe/ for what cause blame hem
soore • þat þei be hool in seiþ • not ȝyuyng tente to ſablis of
iewis

to tyte



Honeste þou hem for to be sugettis to prynces & C^m 3^m
 powers • for to obescche to seyinge • for to be reedy
 to al gode werke • for to blasfeme noman • for to
 be not litigious (or ful) of chydynge • but tempe-
 raunt (or pacient)/ schewynge al myldenesse to alle men/ for-
 soþe & we weren sumtyme vnwise vnbileueful • errynge &
 ferynge to desiris & dyuerse voluptees in malice & enuye do-
 inge • hateful (or worþi to be hatide) • to gedir hatynge ¶ For-
 soþe þe benynngnyte & humanyte (or manhede) of god oure
 saueoure apperide not of werkis of ryztwelnesse þat we diden •
 but aftir his mercy he made vs saaf/ by þe waschynge (or
 baptysm) of azen bigetyng azen newynge of þe holy gost •
 whom he sched oute into plenteuoussy • by oure saueoure Ihu
 crist/ þat we iustificede by his grace be epres aftir hope of euer-
 lastynge lijf/ a trewe worde/ and of þes þingis I wole þee to
 conferme oþer men • þat þei þat bileuen to god • curen (or do
 bitynesse) • for to be bifore in good werkis/ þes þingis bengode
 & profitable to men/ forsoþe eschewe þou soltische questiouns
 & genelogies & stryues • & siztyngis of þe lawe/ forsoþe þei ben
 vnprofitable & beyne/ schone þou a man heretike aftir one &
 þe secounde correccioun (or reprouynge)/ wityng þat he þat
 is suche maner man • is subuertide & trespassy • dampnyde by
 his owne doom/ soþely whanne I schal sende to þee archeman
 or titicum • hize þou for to come to me to nycopolis/ forsoþe
 I haue purposide for to dwelle in wynter þere/ bisily sende
 bifore zenam a wiseman of lawe & apollo • þat no þing sayle
 to hem/ forsoþe & oure men lerne for to be bifore in good
 werkis & necessarie vñs • þat þei be not vnfructuose/ alle
 men þat ben wiþ me: greten þee wel/ grete þou wel hem • þat
 louen vs in seih/ þe grace of god wiþ zou alle amen//

ye pistel to philomon

he hath any þing anoyede þee or oþer: rette þou þis þing to me/ I þoul wrote wiþ myn honde/ I schal zilde þat: I seye not to þee þat & þou owest to me & þi self/ So broþer I schal vse þee in þe lorde: fulfille myn entayles in crist/ I tristynge of þin obedience wrote to þee: wptynge for þou schalt do & ouer þat þat I seye/ also forsoþe & make reedy to me an oße (or hous for to dwelle inne)/ forwhi I hope wiþ zoure preyers: me for to be zouen to zou/ epaphras myn euen captife (or prysoner) to gedir in cõt I hũ: gretih þee wel/ and marke aristarke demas & lucas myn helper/ þe grace of oure lorde I hũ crist: wiþ zoure spirit Amen//

here bigynnes ye pistil to ebrues: ye firste chapitre



Anyfolde & many maners: sumtyme god spekynge to fadris in prophetis: at þe laste in þes dayes spac to vs in þe sone: whom he ordeynede eyre of alle þingis: by whom he made & þe worldis/ þe whiche whanne he is þe schynnyng of glorie: & fygure of his substaunce: & berynge alle þingis by worde of his vertue: makynge purgacon of synnes: sittih on þe rizthalse of mageste in hize þingis/ so myche made better þan aungels: bi how myche he hath enhauncide a more different (or excellent) name bifore hem/ forsoþe to whiche of þe aungels seyde god any tyme: þou art my sone: I haue to day gendride þee: and estefone/ I schal be to hym into fadir: & he schal be to me into sone/ and whanne estefone he bringih in þe firste bigoten.

to ebrues.

dir his feet/ forsoþe in þat þing þat he sugettide alle þingis to hym: he leste no þing unsugettide to hym/ forsoþe now we seen not zit alle þingis suget to hym/ forsoþe we seen hym þat a litil is made lasse þan aungelis · Ihu for passioun of deþ · crownþe wiþ glorie & honoure · þat he þorwe grace of god: schulde taste deþ for alle men/ forsoþe it bicame hym for whom alle þingis · þe whiche hadde to gedir manye sones into glorie: þe maker of þe helpe of hem/ for to ende by passyouns/ soþely he þat halowih & þei þat ben halowide: of one alle/ for whiche cause he is not confoundide (or schamyde): for to clepe hem breþeren seyinge/ I schal telle þi name to my breþeren: in þe mydel of þe chirche I schal herie þee/ and estefone I schal be tristynge into hym/ and estefone lo I & my children: þe whiche god zaue to me/ þerfore for children compnyden to fleysche & blood: & he also toke pte of þi same · þat bi deþ he schulde distrue hym þat had lordeschip of deþ: þat is to sepe þe deuyt/ and schulde delyuer hem þat bi dreede of deþ: by al lijf weren bounden to seruage/ forsoþe he neuer toke to aungels: but he took to þe seed of abraham/ wherfore he auzte for to be lickenyde to breþeren by alle þingis: þat he schulde be made mercyful & feiþful bischop to god/ þat he schulde be mercyful to trespassis of þe puple/ forsoþe in þat þing in whiche he suffride & was temptide: he is myzty for to helpe & hem þat ben temptide/



Wherefore holy breþeren · parteners of heuenely cleyng: biholde zee þe holy postil & bischop of oure confession Ihu: þe whiche is trewe to hym þat made hym · as & moyses in al þe hous of hym/ forsoþe þis bischop is hadde worþi of more glorie bifore moyses: by how myche þanne þe hous haf þe more honoure þat made it/ forwhi eche hous is made of summan/ forsoþe he þat made alle þingis of nouzt: is god/ and soþely moyses was trewe in al his hous: as a seruauant into witnessynge of þo þingis þat weren

to ebrues.

werkis/and in his estesone/zif hei schulen entre into my reste/
 herfore for it leueþ (or is ouer:) summen for to entre into it:
 & hei to whiche he firste it is tolde: entreden not for here vn-
 bileue: estesone he termyneth Sunday to day: seyinge in da-
 uid/ aftir so myche of tyme as it is bifore seyde/ to day zif zee
 hane herde his voyce: nyl zee harden zoure hertis: as in he
 ilke wrappinge/ for whi zif Jhc hadde zouen reste to hem: he
 schulde neuer speke of oþer aftir þat day/ herfore saboth ha-
 lowyng is leste: to þe puple of god/ forsoþe he þat entride into
 his reste: & he restide of his werkis: as & god of his/ ¶ herfore
 haste we for to entre into þat reste: þat no man falle into þe
 same ensauple of unbileue/ forsoþe þe worde of god is quicke
 & spedý in wirchyng & more able for to peerse þan al two
 eggide swerde: & strechynge departide of soule & spirit: & of
 ioyntours & merzwis: & he departer (or demer) of þouztis &
 intenciouns of hertis/ & no creature is invisible: in þe sizte of
 god/ forsoþe alle þingis ben nakide & open to his eyzen: to
 whom a worde to vs/ herfore we haupng a greet bischop þat
 perside heuenes Jhu þe sone of god: holde we þe confessioun
 of oure seip/ forsoþe we haue not a bischop þat may not suffre
 to gedir to oure infirmytees (or freeltees): but temptide (or
 prouede) by alle þingis for lickenesse wiþ outen synne/ herfore
 go we wiþ crist to þe trone of his grace: þat we gete mercy &
 synde grace: in couenable helpe//



Erwhi eche bischop taken vp of men: is ordeynede
 for men in þes þingis þat ben to god: þat he offre
 ziftis & sacrifices for synnes/ þe whiche may to ge-
 dir sorowe: wiþ hem þat vnknowen & erren/ for &
 he is enuyrounyde wiþ infirmytees/ and herfore he owiþ: as
 & for puple: so also & for hym self to offre for synnes/ neþer
 any man takith to hym honoure: no but he þat is clepide of
 god as aaron/ so & crist clarifiede not hym self þat he were bi-
 schop: but he þat spak to hym/ þou art my sone: to day I gen-
 dride

C^m 5^m

to ebrues.

& bretris • is reprovablen & nexte to curse: whos endynge schal
be into brennyng/ forsoþe zee moste derworþe • we tristen
of zou better þingis & nere to helþe: neþeles þouz we speken
so/ soþely god is not vniuste þat he forzete zoure werke & loue:
þe whiche zee hane schewide in his name: for zee hane mynyf-
tride to seyntis & mynyfren/ forsoþe we coueyten eche of zou
for to schewe þe same bysness to þe fulllyng of hope til
into þe ende: þat zee ben not made slowe • but also suers of
hem: þe whiche by feiþ & pacienc schulen enherite bihestis/
forwhi god bihetynge to abraham/ for he had no man more
by whom he schulde swere: swore by hym self seyinge/ no but
I blesynge schal blesse þee: & I multiplynge schal multiplie
þee/ and so by longe suffrynge: gate þe azen biheste/ forsoþe
men sweren by þe more of hem/ and þe ende of al here con-
trouersie (or debate) • is an oþe to confirmacioun/ in þe whiche
þing god willynge for to schewe to þe epris of his byheste • þe
vnmouableness (or sadness) of his counseyl: putte bitwire
an oþe/ þat by two þingis vnmouable by whiche it is vnpos-
sible god for to lize: we hane strengest solace (or comforte) •
þe whiche steen to gedir: for to holde þe hope putte forþe/ þe
whiche as an anker we haue liker to þe soule • & sad ingoinge:
til þe innermore þingis of hydynge: where þe forgoer for vs
entride in: Jh̄c made bischop into wiþ outen ende: aftir þe
ordir of melchisedech//



Soþely þis melchisedech kyng of salem: prist of þe C^m 7^m
bizest god þe whiche mette wiþ abraham • gon azen
fro sleinge of kyngis & bleside hym • to whom &
abraham departide tyþes of alle þingis/ firste so-
þely þe whiche is interpretide kyng of ryztwelnesse • aftirwarde
forsoþe & kyng of salem • þat is to seye kyng of pees • wiþ ou-
ten sadir • wiþ outen modir • wiþ outen genologie • neþer hau-
ynge bygyrnyng of dayes neþer ende of lijf • forsoþe he lick-
enyde to þe sone of god: dwelliþ prist into wiþ outen ende/

to ebrues.

And soþely oþer mo ben made pristiſt aſtir þe lawe: for þat þei weren forþed by deþ for to dwelle/ soþely þis man for þat he dwelliþ into wiþ outen ende: haþ euerlaſtyng e priſthode/ wherfore & he may ſaue into wiþ outen ende · comynge nyȝ by hym ſelf to god euermore lyuynge for to preye for vs/ forſoþe it bicame þat ſuche a man were biſchop to vs: holy innocent inpolute (or vndefoulide) · departide fro ſynners · & made hiȝer þan heuenes/ þe whiche haþ not nede eche day as priſtiſt · firſt for to offre for his owne giltiſt ooffiſt (or ſacrifices): aſtirwarde for þe puple/ ſoþely he dide þiſ þing: ones offryng hym ſelf/ forſoþe þe lawe ordeynede men priſtiſt · hauynge ſikenefſe (or freelte)/ forſoþe þe werde of ſwerynge · þe whiche aſtir þe lawe: ordeynede þe ſone paſſite into wiþ outen ende//

Forſoþe a capitle vpon þo þingis þat ben ſeyde/ we haue ſuche a biſchop · þat ſatte to gedir in þe riȝt halfe of þe ſeet of greteneſſe in heuenes: mynſtre of ſeyntiſt & of þe verrey tabernacle þat god ſette & not man/ forſoþe eche biſchop is ordeynede for to offre ziſtiſt & ooffiſt/ wherfore it is nede & þiſ man: for to haue ſum þing þat he ſchal offre/ þerfore ziȝ þe were vpon erþe: he were no priſt/ whanne þei weren þat ſchulden offre ziſtiſt aſtir þe lawe · þe whiche ſeruen to þe ſaumlere & ſchadowe of heuenely þingis: as it is anſweride to moyſes whan he ſchulde ende þe tabernacle/ ſe he ſeiþ · make þou alle þingis: vþ þe ſaumlere þat iſ ſchewide to þee in þe mounte/ nowe forſoþe he haþ geten a better mynſtre: by how myche & he iſ a mediatour of a better teſtament/ þe whiche iſ halowide (or confermyde): wiþ better biheſtiſt/ for ziȝ þe ilke firſt had be voyde fro blame: ſoþely a place of þe ſecounde ſchulde not be ſouȝte/ forſoþe reprouynge hem he ſeiþ/ lo dayes comen ſeiþ þe lorde · & I ſchal ende a newe teſtament vpon þe hous of iſrl & vpon þe hous of Iuda/ not aſtir þe teſtament þat I made to here fa-

C^m 8^m

deriſ

to ebrues.

ziftis & oostis (or sacrificis) ben offride: he whiche mowne not make a man seruyng parsite by conscience/ onely in metis & dyuerse waschyngis & ritzwelnessis of fleysche putte vnto he tyme of correccioun// ¶ Forsoþe cñt beinge a bischop of godis to comynge by a larger & parfiter tabernacle not made by honde: þat is to seye not of his makynge: neþer bi blode of goot buckis or of calues: but bi his owne bloode entride ones into holy þingis: euerlastynge redempcion founden/ forsoþe zif he blood of goot buckis & boolis & he aske of a cotwe calue spreynye: halowih vnclene men to he clensynge of fleysche: how myche more he blood of crist: he whiche by he holy gost offride hym self vntwemmyde to god: schal clense oure conscience fro deade werkis: for to serue to luyng god/ and þerfore he is a mediatour of he newe testament: he deþ fallynge bitwixe into redempcion of he trespassyngis þat weren vndir he former testament: þei þat ben clepide take he repromyscioun of euerlastynge heretage ¶ Soþely where is a testament: it is nede: þat he deþ of he testament maker: come bitwixe forsoþe he testament is confermyde in deade men/ ellis it is not worþ he while he lyueth þat made he testament/ wherfore soþely neþer he firste testament is halowide wih ouden blode/ forsoþe eche maundemente of he lawe red of moyse to al he puple: he takynge he blood of calues & of buckis of goot wih water & rede wolle & yfop: spreynye & he ilke booc & al he puple: seyinge/ þis is he blood of he testament: þat god comaundide to zou/ also he spreynede wih blode he tabernacle & alle he vessellis of seruyces: in liche maner/ and almost alle þingis ben clenside in blood astir he lawe: & wih ouden schedynge of blood: remyscioun of synne is not made/ þerfore it is nede he saumplers forsoþe of heuenely þingis ben clenside wih þes þingis: forsoþe he ilke heuenely þingis: wih better oostis þan þes/ forsoþe Jhc entride not into he holy þingis made by hondis: he saumplers of verrey þingis: but into he ilke heuene þat he appere nowe to he cheer of god for

to ebrues.

for euermore halowide men/ forsope & he holy gost witnesseth
to vs/ forsope astirwarde he seyde/ forsope his is he testament
he whiche I schal witnesse to hem astir þo dayes seih þe lorde/
in zpyunge my lawes in þe hertis of hem/ & in þe soulis of
hem I schal aboue write hem/ and nowe I schal no more
penke of þe synnes & wickidnessis of hem/ forsope wher is re-
myssioun of þes/ nowe none offrynge for synne/ and so bre-
peren we haupnge trisse into þe entrynge of seyntis in þe
blood of crist þe whiche he halowide to vs a newe weye & lyu-
ynge by a weyle (or couerynge): þat is to seye his sleysche &
þe greet prift vpon þe hous of god: go we to wif verrey herte
into þe plente of seih/ we spreynge (or clenfide) þe hertis fro
euyl conscience & waschen þe body wif clene water: holde
we þe confessioun of our hope vnbowynge (or þat may not be
folden)/ forsope he is trewe þat azenbihizt/ & biholde we into
gedir in þe stirynge of charite & of good werkis/ not forsakynge
oure gederynge to gedir/ as it is of custome to summen/ but
confortynge/ and by so myche þe more/ by howe myche zee
schulen se þe day neyzynge/ forsope to vs synnyng wilfully
astir þe knowynge of treuþe taken/ nowe an oste for synnes
is not lefte/ forwhi summe abydyng of doom is dredesful &
þe supnge of sijt/ þe whiche to wastynge aduerfaries/ any man
makynge voyde (or brekynge) þe lawe of moyses/ deþ wif
outen any mercy by two or þre witnessis/ how myche more
gesse zee hym for to deserue worfe turmentis/ þe whiche schal
desoule þe sone of god & schal leede (or holde) þe blood of þe
testament polute/ in whom he is halowide & schal do wronge
(or dispite) to þe spirit of grace/ soþely we witen hym þat
seyde/ to me vengeaunce/ & I schal zilde/ and este/ for þe
lorde schal deme his puple/ it is ferful for to falle into þe
handis of lyuynge god/ forsope hane zee mynde on þe former
dayes/ in þe whiche zee liztenyde/ sustreden greet strife (or
fizte) of passiouns/ and soþely in þe toþer zee made a spectacle
(or wondrynge) bi schenschapis & tribulaciouns/ in þe toþer
forsope

to ebrues.

ynge whidir he schulde go/ by feiþ he dwelte in þe lande of
 azen biheste/ as in an alien in litil houses dwellynge wiþ ysaac
 & Jacob euen eyles of þe same azen bihest/ soþely he abode
 a cytee haupnge foundementis/ whos crafty man & maker is
 god/ bi feiþ & þe ilke bareyn sara/ toke vertue into consey-
 uynge of seed/ & he bifidis (or wiþ outhen) þe tyme of age/ for
 sche bileuede hym trewe þat had azen bihizte/ for whiche þing
 & of one * & hym nyȝ deade (men) ben borne as sternes of
 heuene in multitude/ & as grauel þat is at þe see side vn-
 nowmbreable/ by feiþ alle þes ben deade þe azenbihest not
 taken * but þei biholdynge hem afer * & gretynge wel & knowe-
 lechynge for þei ben pilgrymes/ & herboride men vpon þe
 erþe/ soþely þei þat seyen þes þingis/ signyfien hem for to
 seek a cuntre/ and soþely ȝif þei had hade mynde of þe ilke
 of þe whiche þei outhen wenten/ soþely þei hadden tyme of turn-
 ynge azen * nowe forsoþe þei desiren a better þat is to seye
 heuene/ þerfore god is not confoundide (or schamyde) for
 to be clepide þe god/ forsoþe he made redy to hem a cytee/ by
 feiþ abraham offride ysaac when he was temptide/ and he
 offride þe onebigoten * þe whiche had taken azen bihestis (or
 repromysious) * to whom it was seyde/ in ysaac/ seed to þee
 schal be clepide/ demynge/ for & fro deade men god is myȝty
 for to reyse hym/ wher of he took hym & into a parable/ bi
 feiþ & of þingis to comynge/ Isaac blesside iacob & esau/ bi feiþ
 iacob dvinge/ by alle þe sones of Joseph blesside & honoride þe
 hizenesse of his ȝerde/ by feiþ ioseph dvinge hadde mynde of
 þe passynge forþ of þe sones of isrl/ & comaundide of his bones/
 by feiþ moyses borne * was hid þre monethes of his fadir &
 modir/ for þat þei lizen þe zonge childe fayre (or semely)/ &
 þei dredden not þe maundement of þe kyng/ By feiþ moyses
 made greet/ denyede hym for to be þe sone of pharaonis douȝ-
 ter/ chesynge more for to be turmentide wiþ þe puple of god/
 þan for to haue myrþe of temporal synne/ demynge þe reprose
 of ȝif more richess/ þan þe tresours of egiptians/ forsoþe he

to ebrues.

he crosse • confessioun dispiside: & sittih on he rizt halfe of he
 feet of god/ forsope byhenke zee on hym hat suffride (or sussey-
 nede) suche azensepyng of synful men azenes hym self: hat
 zee be not made wery • saylyng in zoure inwittis/ forsope
 ze azenstoden not zit vnto blood siztyng azenes synne: & zee
 hane forzetten he coumfort hat spekih to zou as to sones: sey-
 inge: my sone nyl pou dispise he disciplyne of he lorde • neher
 be pou made wery • he while pou art chastiside of hym/ forsope
 he lorde chastisih hym hat he loueh/ forsope he scourgih euery
 sone hat he recepuh/ laste zee stille in disciplyne god offrih hym
 to zou as to sones/ sohely what sone is it whom he sadir schal
 not reprove (or chastice) & hat zif zee ben oute of disciplyne of
 whiche alle ben made parteners: herfore zee ben auoutrers
 & not sones/ astirwarde sohely we hadden faderis of oure
 flesche lerners: & we wiþ reuerence dreden hem/ wher not
 myche more we schulen obescche to he fader of spiritis: & we
 schulen lyue: & hei sohely in tyme of fewe dayes • astir here
 wille lerneden us/ forsope his sadir to hat þing hat is profit-
 able in recepyng he halowynge of hym/ forsope eche disci-
 plyne in his present tyme is seen treuly for to be not of ioye:
 but of sorowe • astirwarde forsope it schal zilde fruyte of rizt-
 welnesse moste peesible: to men excerside (or hauntide) bi it/
 for whiche þing reyle zee vp slowe hondis & knees vnbunden •
 & make zee riztful goings to zoure feet hat no man haltynge
 erre: but more be helide/ sue zee pees wiþ alle men & holy-
 nesse: wiþ outen whiche no man schal se god/ byholdynge hat
 no man sayle to he grace of god • hat no root of bitternesse
 vpwarde buriounyng lette: & by it be defoulide by many men/
 hat no man be lecchour • oïher unholy (or curside) as esau:
 he whiche for one mete solde his firste þingis/ sohely wite zee
 for & astirwarde he coueptyng for to enheryte blesynge: was
 reprove/ forsope he sonde not place of penaunce: pouz he
 souzte it wiþ teeris/ forsope zee haue not comen to he treta-
 ble (or couenable & able to come to) • & greet wynde (or quitle-
 wynde)

to ebrues.

of god/ of whom zee biholdynge he goinge oute of Ipynges:
 sue he seiþ/ Jhē crist ziskirday & to day he & into worldis
¶ Nyl zee be ledde away wiþ dyuerse techyngis & pilgrymis
 (or straunge)/ forsoþe it is beste for to stable þe herte wiþ
 grace • not wiþ metis: þe whiche profitiden not to men wan-
 drynge in hem/ we haue an auter of þe whiche þei þat seruen
 to þe tabernacle of þe body: haue not power for to ete/ for-
 soþe of whiche beestis þe blood is borne in for synne into holy
 pingis bi þe bischop: þe bodies of hem ben brente wiþ oute þe
 castels: for whiche þing & Jhū þat he schulde halowe þe puple
 bi his blood: suffride wiþ outhen þe zate/ þerfore go we oute
 to hym wiþ oute castels: berynge his reþroue (or schenschip)/
 soþely we haue not here a dwellynge cytee: but we seeken a
 cytee to comynge/ þerfore by hym offre we an ooste of her-
 yinge euermore to god: þat is to seye þe fruyte of lippis
 knowelechyng to his name/ forsoþe nyl zee forzete of wel
 doinge (or zpyunge) & of comunynge/ forsoþe by suche oostis
 god is deseruyde// **¶** Obeye zee to zoure prouostis (or pre-
 latis): & vnderleze zee to hem/ þei parfitely waken: as to
 zildynge resoun for zoure soules: þat þei do þis þing wiþ
 ioye • & not sorowynge/ forsoþe þis þing spedith not to zou/
 preye zee for vs/ soþely we tristen for we haue gode conscience
 in alle þingis willynge for to lyue wel/ moreouer forsoþe I
 beseeche zou for to do: þat I sunner be restoride to zou/ So-
 þely god of pees þat ledde oute fro deade men þe grete shep-
 erd of scheep: in þe blode of euerlastynge testament oure lorde
 Jhū crist: schape (or make) zou able in al gode þing • þat zee
 do þe wille of hym • doinge in zou þat þing þat schal plesse
 bifore hym by Jhū crist: to whom is glorie into worldis of
 worldis amen **¶** Forsoþe breþeren I preye zou þat zee suffre
 a worde of solace/ forsoþe by ful fewe þingis I haue writen
 to zou/ knowe zee zoure broþer tymothe leste: wiþ whom zif
 he schal come more hastely: I schal se zou/ Grete wel al zoure
 souereynes & alle holy men/ þe breþeren of ytalie • greten zou
 wel/ þe grace of god wiþ zou alle Amen//

here

ye apocalips

epheso & smyrma • & pargamo • & tiatira • & sardo • & pholodel-
phia • & laodicia/ and I turnyde þat I schulde se þe voyce þat
spac wiþ me/ and I turnyde size seuene candilstikis of golde/
and in þe mydel of seuene golden candilstikis a liche to þe
sone of man • cloþide wiþ a longe pristely cloþe • & bifore girde
at þe tetis: wiþ a golden girdel/ soþely þe heed of hym &
heris weren white • as whist wolles: & as snowe/ and þe yzen
of hym al flawme as flawme of sijr • & his feet liche to drosse
of golde (or latoune): as in a brennyng chymney/ and þe
voyce of hym: as þe voyce of many watris/ and he hadde in
his rizthande seuene sterres/ and a scharpe swerde on boþe
sidis wente oute of his moup: & his face schyneþ as þe sunne
in his vertue/ and whanne I had seen hym: I fel doune at
his feet as deade: and he puttide his rizthande on me seyinge/
nyl þou drede: I am þe firste & þe laste • & I am alþue • & I
was deade/ and lo I am lyuynge into worldis of worldis: & I
haue þe keyes of deþ & helle/ þerfore write þou whiche þingis
þou haste seen • & whiche ben: & whiche it bihoueþ for to be
done aftir þes þingis/ þe mysterie (or pryuate) of seuene sterres
whom þou size in my rizthalse • & þe seuene golden candil-
stikis/ þe seuene sterres ben aungelis of seuene chirchis/ and
þe seuene candilstikes: ben seuene chirchis//



And to þe aungel of þe chirche of ephesis: write C^m 2^m
þou/ þes þingis seiþ he þat holdiþ seuene sterres
in his rizthalse: þe whiche walkiþ in þe mydel of
seuene golden candilstikis/ I wote þi werkis &
trauel & þi paciencie: & for þou mayste not suffre euyl men/
and þou hast temptide (or assayde) hem þat seyn hem self
for to be apostlis & ben not: & þou hast founden hem liers •
& þou haste paciencie/ and þou hast susteynyde for my name:
& saylidiþ not/ but I haue azenes þee fewe þingis: þat þou
hast leste þi firste charite/ and so be þou myndeful of whens
þou hast fallen: & do penaunce & do þi firste werkis/ zif not
I come

ye apocalips

flaume of fir: & his feet lijk to drosse of golde/ I haue knowe
 pi werkis & seih & charite & mynysterie (or seruyce) & pi pa-
 cience: & pi laste werkis mo þan þe former/ but I haue azenes
 þee a fewe þingis/ for þou suffrist þe womman Jezebel · þe
 whiche seih hir for to be a prophetesse · for to teche & de-
 ceue my seruauntis · for to do leccherie: & for to ete of þin-
 gis offride to ydolis/ and I zaue to hire tyme þat sche schulde
 do penaunce: & sche wole not do penaunce of hire fornyca-
 cioune/ lo I sende hire to a bed · & þei þat done leccherie wiþ
 hire schulen be in moste tribulacōn no but þei do penaunce of
 here werkis/ and I schal sleehire sonex in deþ and alle chirchis
 schulen wite: for I am sekynge reynes & hertis/ and schal ȝue
 to eche man of ȝou: aftir his werkis/ forsoþe I seye to ȝou &
 oþer þat ben at tiatire who euer haue not þis techynge · & þat
 knewen not þe hizenesse of sathanas: how þei seyn I schal not
 sende on ȝou an oþer charge: neþeles þat þat ȝee haue holdiþ
 til I come/ and to hym þat schal ouercome & þat schal kepe til
 into þe ende my werkes: I schal ȝue to hym power on folkis ·
 & he schal gouerne hem in an yren zerde · & þei schulen be
 broken to gedir as a vessel of a potter/ as & I receyuede of my
 fadir · & I schal ȝue to hym a morne sterne/ he þat haþ eris
 here: what þe spirit schal seye to þe chirchis//



And to þe aungel of þe chirche of sardis: write þou
 þes þingis seih he þat haþ þe seuene spiritis of
 god: & seuene sterres/ I woot pi werkis · for þou
 haþ name þat þou lyeest: & þou art deade/ be þou
 wakynge · & conferme oþer þingis þat weren to dýnge/ for-
 soþe I fynde not pi werkis ful: bifore my god/ þerfore haue
 þou mynde how þou receyuedist & herdist: & kepe & do pen-
 aunce/ þerfore ȝif þou schalt not wake: I schal come to þee
 as a nyȝt þeeþ · & þou schalt not wite in what houre I schal
 come to þee/ but thou hast a fewe names in sardis: þe whiche
 defouliden not here clothes · & þei schulen walke wiþ me in

C^m 3^m

ye apocalips

(pat is medycynal for yzen made of dyuerse erbis) • pat pou
se/ I whom I loue reprove & chastise/ perfore sue (or loue) &
do penaunce/ lo I stonde at he dore & knocke/ zif any man
schal here my voyce & open he zate/ I schal entre to hym &
soupe wih hym & he wih me/ I schal zyuue to hym pat schal
ouercome • for to sitte wih me in my trone/ as & I ouercame •
& satte wih my sadir in his trone/ he pat hab eris here/ what
he spirit schal seye to chirchis//



After this I sawe & lo a dore openyd in heuene/ C^m 4^m
and he firste voyce pat I herde/ as a trumpe spek-
ynge wih me seyinge/ steyze vp hidir & I schal
schewe to pee whiche thingis bihouep for to be done
soone after this thingis/ anone I was in spirit/ and lo a feet
was putte in heuene/ & on he feet one sittynge/ and he pat
sate was lijk to he sizte of a stone iaspis & to sardyn/ And he
reynbowe was incumpas of he feet/ lijk to he sizte of sma-
ragdyn/ and incumpas of he feet foure & twenty smale feetis/
and vpon he trones foure & twenty eldre [] sittynge/
girded aboute wih whijt clothes • & in he hedis of hem golden
crownes/ and leptyngis & voyces & pundryngis/ camen oute
of he trone/ and seuene laumpis brennyng bifore he trone/
he whiche ben seuene spiritis of god/ and in he sizte of he seete
as a see of glasse/ [] to crystal/ and in he mydil of he feet
& in cumpas of he feet/ foure beestis ful of yzen bifore & by
hynde/ and he firste beest lijk to a lioun/ and he secounde beest
lijk to a calue/ and he priddde beste hauynge a face as of a
man/ and he fourthe beest/ lijk to an egle fleinge/ and he foure
beestis hadden euery of hem sixe wengis/ & in cumpas & wih-
inne • hei ben ful of yzen/ and hei hadden not reste day & nyzt
seyinge/ holy • holy • holy • he lorde god al myzty • pat was
& pat is [] to comynge/ and whanne he foure beestis
zauen glorie & honoure & blesynge to he sittynge on he trone
to luyng into worldis of worldis/ he foure & twenty eldre
men

ye apocalips

take vertue & dyuynyte (or godhede) * & wisdom & strenghe & honoure * & glorie & blessinge * & eche creature pat is in heuene * & pat on erhe & vnder erhe & he see * & whiche thingis ben in it: I herde alle seyinge to he sittynge in trone & to he lombe: blessinge & honoure & glorie & power into worldis of worldis/ and he foure beestis seyden amen/ and he foure & twenty eldre men sellen doune into here facis: and worschippeden he luyng into worldis of worldis//



And I sise pat he lombe had openyde one of he seuene signetis: & I herde one of he foure beestis seyinge * as a voyce of hundre: come & se/ and I sise * & lo a whijt horse: & he pat satte on hym had a bowe/ and a croune is zouen to hym: and he wente oute ouercomynge/ pat he schulde ouercome/ and whanne he had openyde he secounde seale: I herde he secounde beest seyinge/ come pou & se/ and anoper reed horse wente oute: & it is zouen to hym pat sate on hym * pat he schulde take pees fro erhe: and pat hei flee to gedir hem self/ and a greet swerde is zouen to hym/ And whanne he had openyde he priddde seale: I herde & he priddde beest seyinge * come pou & se/ and lo a blac horse: & he pat satte vpon hym * had a balaunce in his hande/ and I herde as a voyce in he mydil of he foure beestis seyinge/ a bilibre of wheet (pat is a weyzte of two ponde): for one peny/ and pre bilibris of barley: for one peny * & hurte pou not wyn & oyle ¶ And whanne he had openyde he fourthe seale: I herde he voyce of he fourthe beest seyinge/ come pou & se/ and lo a paal horse: & he name deþ to hym pat sate on hym: and helle suede hym/ and power is zouen to hym on foure parties of he erhe * for to slee wiþ swerde & hungre & deþ * & wiþ beestis of erhe ¶ And whanne he had openyde he fifthe seel: I sise vnder an auter he soules of men slayne for he worde of god * & for witnessynge pat hei hadden/ and hei crieden wiþ greet voyce seyinge/ how longe lorde holy & trewe demest pou not & ven-

C^m 6^m

gest

pe apocalips

markide/ of he lynage of symeon: twelue housande markide/
of he lynage of leuy: twelue housande markide/ of he lynage
of ysachar: twelue thousande markide/ of he lynage of zabu-
lon: twelue housande markide/ of he lynage of Joseph: twelue
housande markide/ of he lynage of beniamyn: twelue hou-
sande markide ¶ Astir hes þingis ¶ I siȝe a greet cumpanye/
whom no man myȝte noumbre of alle folkis & lynage & pu-
plis & tungis stondynge bifore he trone in he siȝte of he lombe/
coueride (or cloþide) with white stoolis: & palmes in he handis
of hem/ and þei crieden wiȝ greet voyce seyinge/ helpe to
oure god þat sittith on trone: & to he lombe/ and alle aungels
stoden in cumpas of he trone * & seneours (or eldre) * & foure
beestis/ and þei sellen in he siȝt of he trone into here facis &
worschipiden god * seyinge amen/ blessinge & clerenesse &
wisdom & doinge of þankyngis & honoure & vertue & strengþe
to oure god into worldis of worldis ¶ And one of he eldre
men answeride & seyde to me/ who ben þes þat ben coueride
(or cloþide) wiȝ white stoolis: & of whens camen? and I seyde
to hym my lorde þou wost/ and he seyde to me/ þes ben þei
þat camen fro greet tribulaciō: & walschiden here stolis & ma-
den hem whijt * in blood of he lombe/ þerfore þei ben bifore
he trone of god/ and seruen to hym day & nyȝt in his temple/
& he þat sittith in trone: dwelleþ on hem/ þei schulen no more
hungre & þriste * neþer tunne schal falle on hem: neþer any
heet/ for he lombe þat is in he mydil of he trone schal gouerne
hem: & schal leede hem forþe to we wellis of wattris of liȝt/
and god schal wiȝpe aweye eche teere fro he yȝen of hem//



And whanne he hadde openyde þe seueneþ seale: ¶
silence is made in heuene as halfe an houre/ and
¶ I siȝe seuene aungels stondynge in he siȝte of god:
& seuene trumpes ben zouen to hem/ & anoter
aungel came & stooð bifore he auter haupnge a golden censer/
and many encensis ben zouen to hym: þat he schulde ȝpue
of

C^m 8^m

ye apocalips

sunne is dirkide & he eyre · of he smoke of he pitte · locustis wenten oute into he erpe · & power is zouen to hem as scorpions of erpe haue power / & it is comaundide to hem pat hei schulden nor hurte hay of he erpe · neher al green þing · neher eche tree · no but onely men pat haue not he marke of god in here forhedis / and it is zouen to hem pat hei schulden not flee hem · but pat hei schulden be turmentide fyue monethes / and he turmentynge of hem · as he turmentynge of a scorpion whanne he smytþ a man / and in þo dayes men schulen seek deþ · & hei schulen not fynde it / and hei schulen desire for to dye · and deþ schal flee fro hem / and he lickenessis of locustis · lijk to horsis made reedy into batayle / and on he heddis of hem · as crownes lijk to golde · & he facis of hem as faces of men / and hei had heris · as heris of wymmen · & he teeth of hem weren as he teeth of lyouns / and hei hadden haubirions / as yren haubirions · and he voyce of þilke wengis · as he voyce of charis of many horsis rennyng into batayle / and hei hadden taylis lijk of scorpions · & prickis weren in he taylis of hem / and he myzte of hem for to noye men by fyue monethes / and hei hadden vpon hem a kyng · he aungel of depnesse · to whom he name by ebrue · labaddon · forsoþe bi greek · appollion · & by latyne haupnge þe name distruxer / oo wo passide · & lo zit cometh two woos ¶ Aftr þes þingis & he sirte aungel songe in trumpe · & I herde one voyce of foure corners of he golden auter pat is bifore he yzen of god · seyinge to he sirte aungel pat had a trumpe / vnbynde foure aungels · pat ben bounden in he greet flood eufrates / and he foure aungels ben vnbounden · he whiche weren redy into houre & day & moneth & zeer · pat hei schulden flee he þridde parte of men / and he nowmbre of he ooste of horsemen twenty housande liþes ten housande / I herde he nowmbre of hem / and so I siþe horsis in visioun / and hei pat saten on hem · hadden sirty haubirions · & I acyntynes & brymstonpe / and he heddis of he horsis weren as heddis of liouns · & of he mouþe of hem siþe cometh forþ · & smoke

ye apocalips

& brymstone/ and þes þre plagis (or woundis) : þe þridde parte of men is slayne/ of fir & of smoke & of brymstone þat camen oute of þe moup of hem/ toþely þe power of horsis is in þe moup of hem/ & in þe taylis of hem/ for whi þe tayles of hem lijk to serpentis haupnge hedis/ & in hem þei noyen/ and þe toþer men þat ben not slayne in þes plagis · neþer diden penaunce of þe werkis of here handis/ þat þei worschipiden not deuellis & symulacris · golden · silueren · & brasen & stonen & trenen · þe whiche neþer mowne seen neþer here neþer wandren/ and diden not penaunce of here mansleingis neþer of venemyngis/ neþer of fornycacioun neþer of here þistis//

C^m 10^m



And I sawe anoper stronge aungel comynge doun fro heuene coueride (or cloþide) wiþ a cloude/ & þe reyne bowe in his heede/ and þe face of hym was as sunne/ & þe feet of hym as a piler of fir/ and he hadde in his hande a litil booc openyde/ and he putte his riȝt- fote on þe see/ forsoþe his lifte on þe erþe/ and he criede wiþ greet voyce/ as a lioun whan he roriþ/ and whanne he hadde criede · seuene þundris spaken here voyces/ and whanne þe seuene þundris hadden spoken here voyces/ I was to writ- ynge/ and I herde a voyce fro heuene seyinge/ signe þou (or marke) what þingis þe seuene þundris spaken/ & nyl þou write hem/ and þe aungel whom I sawe stondynge aboute þe see & aboue þe erþe/ liftide vp his hande to heuene · & swore by þe lyuynge into worldis of worldis þat made of nouȝte heuene & þo þingis þat ben in it · & þe see & þo þingis þat ben in it · for tyme schal nomore be/ but in þe dages of þe voyce of þe seueneþ aungel · whanne he schal bygynne for to synge in trumpe/ þe mysterie of god schal be endide · as þe euuangelizide by his seruantis prophetis/ and I herde a voyce fro heuene estelone spekyngge wiþ me & seyinge/ go þou & take þe booc openyde of þe honde of þe aungel stondynge aboue þe see & on þe lande/ and I wente to þe aungel seyinge to hym/ þat he

ye apocalips

he schulde zye to me þe booc/ and he seyde to me take þe booc & deuoure it · & it schal make þi wombe for to be bitter/ but in þi mouþe it schal be swete as honye/ and I took þe booc of þe aungels honde & deuouride it · & it was in my mouþ as swete honye/ and whanne I hadde deuouride it · my wombe was bitter/ and he seyde to me/ it bihoueh þee estefone for to prophece to heþen men & to puplis & to langagis & to many kyngis//



And a mesure lijk to a zerde is zouen to me · & it is C^m 11^m
seyde to me/ rise þou & mete þe temple of god & þe auter · & men worschippynge in it/ forsoþe caste oute þe porche þat is wiþ oute forþ þe temple · & mete it not for it is zouen to heþen men · & þei schulen defoule þe holy cytee · by fourty monethes & two/ and I schal zye to my two witnæssis & þei schulen prophecie a housande dayes two hundride & sixty þei cloþide wiþ sackis/ þes ben þe two olyues & two candillstikis zpyunge list · þei stondynge in þe sizte of þe lorde of þe erþe/ and zif any man schal wolne for to anoye hem · siþr schal go oute of þe mouþe of hem · & schal deuoure here enemyes/ zif any man schal wolne for to hurte hem · þus it bihoueh hym for to be slayne/ þes haue þe power of schittynge heuene · þat it rayne not in þe dayes of here prophecie/ and þei haue power on watris · of turnynge hem into blood · & for to smyte þe erþe wiþ al plage · & how ofte euer þei schulen wolne/ and whanne þei schulen ende here witnessynge · þe beest þat steyzþ vp of þe depnesse · schal make batayle azenes hem · & schal ouercome hem · & schal slee hem/ and þe bodies of hem schulen ligge in þe stretis of þe greet cytee · þat is clepide gostly sodom & egipte · where þe lorde of hem was crucifiede/ and þei schulen slee of lynagis & of puplis & of tungis & of heþen men · þe bodies of hem by þre dayes & an halfe/ & þe bodies of hem schulen not be suffride · for to be putte in biriels/ and men enhabitynge þe erþe schulen haue ioye

ye apocalips

ioye vpon hem/ and hei schulen make merpe & sende ziftis to
gedir for þes two prophetis turmentiden hem þat dwelten in
erþe/ and astir þre dayes & an halfe/ þe spirit of liif of god
entriden into hem · & hei stoden on here feet/ & greet drede
fel on hem þat sizen hem/ and hei herden a greet voyce fro
heuene/ seyinge to hem/ steyze vp hidir/ and hei steyzeden
into heuene inne a cloude/ & þe enemyes of hem sizen hem/
and in þat houre a greet erþe mouynge is made/ & þe tenþe
part of þe cytee fel/ and here ben slayne in þe erþe mouynge
þe names of men seuene housande/ & þe toþer ben sente in
drede & zauen glorie to þe god of heuene ¶ ye secounde two
wente/ & lo þe þridde two schal come sone/ and þe seueneþ
aungel songe in trumpe/ & greet voyces ben made in heuene
seyinge/ þe rewme of þis worlde is made oure lordis/ & of
cristis his sone/ and hei schulen regne into worldis yf worldis
amen/ ¶ And þe soure & twenty seneours (or eldre men) þat
sitten in here seetis in þe sizte of þe lorde/ fellen into here
faces & worschipeþe god seyinge/ we done þankyngis to þee
lorde god almyȝty · whiche art & whiche was & whiche art to
comynge/ whiche hast taken þi greet vertue & has regnyde/
and folkis ben wroþe & þi wrapþe came · & tyme of deade
men for to be demyde · & for to zilde hiȝre to þi seruauntis &
prophetis & halowis & dredynge þi name to smale & litil/ &
distruynge hem þat corrupiden þe erþe//

C^m 12^m



And þe temple of god in heuene is openyde/ & þe
arke of his testament is seyn in his temple/ and
leptynge ben made · & voyces & erþe mouynge &
greet hayle/ & a greet token apperide in heuene/ a
womman coueride or cloþide wiþ þe sunne · & þe mone vnder
hire feet · & in þe heed of hire a crowne of twelue sterres/ and
sche haupnge in wombe · & sche criede berynge childe/ & is
turmentide þat sche bere childe/ and anoper token is seen in
heuene/ and lo a greet reed dragoun haupnge seuene heedis
& ten

ye apocalips

& ten hornes: & in þe hedis of hym feune dyademes/ and þe
taye of hym drouwe þe þridde parte of sterres of heuene: &
fente hem into erþe/ and þe dragoune stode bifore þe wom-
man þat was to berynge childe: þat whanne sche had borne
childe * he schulde deuoure hym/ and sche childide a sone male
þat was to rewlynge alle folkis in an yren zerde/ and hire
sone is rauyschide to god & to his trone/ and þe womman
flepe into wildernesse: where sche haþ a place reedy of god:
þat sche fede hire here a housande dayes two hundride & sixty/
and a greet batayle is made in heuene: & mychael & his aun-
gels fouzten wiþ þe dragoune/ and þe dragoune sauhte & his
aungels: & þei hadden not myzte neper þe place of hem is
founden more in heuene/ and þe ilke dragoune is caste doune.
Þe greet olde serpent þat is clepid þe deuyll & sathanas * þat
deceyues al þe worlde * is caste oute into þe erþe * & his aun-
gels ben sente wiþ hym/ and I herde a greet voyce in heuene
seyinge/ nowe is made helpe * & vertue * & kyngdom of oure
god: & þe power of his crist/ for þe accuser of oure breþeren is
caste doune: whiche accuside hem bifore þe sizte of oure god *
day & nyȝt/ and þei ouercamen hym for þe blood of þe lombe *
& for þe worde of his witnessynge: & þei loueden not here
soules (or lyues): til to deþ/ perfore glade zee heuenes: & zee
þat dwelle in hem ¶ To to þe erþe & see * for þe sende came
doune to zou haupnge greet wraphe: witynge for he haþ litil
tyme/ and aftir þat þe dragoune sze for he was caste doune
into erþe: he pursuede þe womman þat childide a male sone/
and two wengis of a greet egle ben zounen to þe womman *
þat sche schulde fleo into deserte into hire place where sche is
fed by tyme & tymes & þe halfe of tymes: fro þe face of þe ser-
pent/ and þe serpent sente oute of his mowþ aftir þe wom-
man water of flood: þat he schulde make hire to be drawen of
þe flode/ & þe erþe helpide þe womman/ and þe erþe openyde
his mowþ: & soupyde þe flood þat þe dragoune sente of his
mowþe/ and þe dragoune is wrope to þe womman/ and he

wente

ye apocalips

lynge in erþe · for signes þe whiche ben zouen to it for to do
in þe sizte of þe beest · seyinge to men dwellynge in erþe · þat
þei make an ymage of þe beest þat haþ þe wounde of swerde
& lyuede/ and it is zouen to hym þat he schulde zoue a spirit
to þe ymage of þe beest · & þe ymage of þe beeste speke/ and
he schal make þat who euer schal not honoure þe ymage of þe
beest · be slayne/ and he schal make alle · smale & greet · &
riche & pore · & fremen & seruauntis · for to haue þe carester
(or lettre) in þe right-hande or in here forhedis · þat no man
may bie or selle no but þei þat haue þe carester or þe name or
þe nowmbre of his name/ here is wisdom/ he þat haþ vnder-
stondynge/ acounte þe nowmbre of þe beest/ soþely þe nowm-
bre of man is · & his nowmbre is · sixe hundride & sixty &
fire//



And I sise & lo þe lombe stood on þe mounte sion ·
& wip hym an hundride & four & fourty housande ·
hauynge his name & þe name of his fadir · writen
in here forhedis/ and I herde a voyce fro heuene ·
as þe voyce of many watris · & as þe voyce of greet hundre/
and þe voyce whiche I herde · as if harpers harpyng in here
harpis/ and þei songen a newe songe bifore þe feet of god · &
bifore þe four beestis & þe eldre men/ and no man myzte
seye þe songe · no but þe an hundride & four & fourty hou-
sande þat ben bouzt of þe erþe/ þes it ben þat ben not de-
foulde wip wymmen · soþely þei ben virgyns/ þes suen þe
lombe · whidir euer he schal gon/ þes ben bouzte of alle þe
prymacies (or firste fruytis) · to god & to þe lombe · & in þe
mouþ of hem lesynge is not founden/ soþely þei ben wip ou-
ten wemme · bifore þe trone of god ¶ And I sise anoter aun-
gel sleinge by mydde heuene · hauynge þe euerlastynge gos-
pel · þat he schulde euangelize to men sittynge on · & on
alle solc & lynage & langage & puple · seyinge wip ·
drede zee þe lorde · & zoue zee to hym honoures ·

C^m 14^m

ye apocalips

þe bridels of horsis: by furlongis a housande & two hundride//



And I sise anoper token in heuene greet & wondreful · seuene aungels haupnge seuene þe laste plagis for þe wrappe of god is endide in hem/ and I sise as a glasen see mengide wip sijr · & hem þat ouercamen þe beest in his ymage: & nowmbre of his name stondyng aboue þe glasen see · haupnge þe harpis of god · & syngynge þe songe of moyses seruaunt of god: & þe songe of þe lomb seyinge/ greet & wondreful ben þi werkis lorde god al myzty · þi weyes ben iuste & trewe: lorde kyng of worldis/ lorde who schal not drede þee · & magnysie þi name: for þou al one art piteuous (or merciful) · for alle folkis schulen come & schulen worschip in þi sizte: for þi domes ben open// ¶ And attir þes þingis I sise & lo þe temple of þe tabernacle of witnessyng in heuene is openyde/ and seuene aungels haupnge þe seuene plagis wenten oute of þe temple · cloþide wip a stool clene & white · & bifore girde wip golden girdels: aboute þe brestis/ and one of þe foure beestis ȝaue to þe seuene aungels · seuene golden violis ful of þe wrappe of god: lyuyng into worldis of worldis/ and þe temple is fulfild wip smoke of þe maieste of god: & of þe vertue of hym/ and no man myzte entre into þe temple: til þe seuene plagis of þe seuene aungels weren endide//

C^m 15^m



And I herde a greet voyce fro heuene: seyinge to þe seuene aungels/ go ȝee & schede oute þe seuene vyolis of goddis wrappe: in to erþe/ and þe firste aungel wente & schedde oute his viole into erþe: & a wounde seerle & werste is made into alle þat hadden þe carette (or marke) of þe beest: & into hem þat worschipen þe beest & his ymage/ and þe secounde aungel schedde oute his viole in þe see: & blood is made as of a deade þing · & eche

C^m 16^m

ye apocalips

of wyn of indignacioun of his wraphe/ and eche yle flepe
awepe: also hillis ben not founden/ and greet heyle as a talent
came doune fro heuene into men/ and men blasfemed god
for þe plage of hayl: for it is made wondirly greet//



And one of þe seuene aungels came þat had seuene
violis: & spak wiþ me seyinge/ come þou I schal
schewe to þee þe dampnacioun of þe greet hoore
þat sittip on manye watris: wiþ whiche kyngis of
erþe diden fornyacioun: & þei þat dwellen in erþe ben ful
drunken of þe wijn of hire leccherie/ and he took me awepe into
deserte: in spirit/ and I sise a womman sittynge on a reed
beest ful of names of blasfemye: hauynge seuene hedis & ten
hornes/ and þe womman was enuyrounyde wiþ purpur &
cockyn (þat is reed) & engoldide wiþ golde & wiþ precious
stoon & perles: hauynge a golden cuppe in hire hande ful of
abhomyacioun: & vncleynesse of hire fornycacon/ and in þe
forhede of hire a name writen: mysterie/ babiloyne þe greet
modir of fornycacons: & of abhomyacons of erþe/ and I sise
a womman drunken of þe blood of seyntis: & of þe blood of
martiris of Ihu/ and whanne I sise hire I wondride wiþ
greet wondrynge: & þe aungel seyde to me/ whi wondrist þou?
I schal sepe to þee þe sacrament of þe womman & of þe beest
þat berip hire: þat haþ seuene hedis & ten hornes/ þe beest
whom þou sise: was & is not/ and sche is þe slepyng by fro
depnesse: & sche schal go into perischynge/ and men dwellynge
in erþe schulen wondre: whos names ben not writen in þe
booc of lijf fro makynge of þe worlde: seinge þe beest þat was
& is not/ and þis is witte þat haþ wisdome/ þe seuene hedis
ben seuene hillis on whom þe womman sittip: & ben seuene
kyngis/ syue haue fallen doune: one is: & anoþer comen not
zit/ and whanne he schal come: it bihouen hym for to dwelle
a schorte tyme/ and þe beest þat was & is not: & sche is þe
eyzte: & is of þe seuene: & schal go into perischynge/ and þe
ten

C^m 17^m

ye apocalips

ten hornes whom þou hast seen: ben ten kynges: þat zit hane not taken kyngdom: but þei schulen take power as kyngis: one houre aftir þe beest/ þes hane one counseyl: & schulen bi- take here vertue & power to þe beest/ þes schulen sizte wiþ þe lombe: & þe lombe schal ouercome hem: for he is lorde of lordis & kyng of kyngis: & þei þat ben wiþ hym: clepide & chosen & seifful/ and he seyde to me/ þe wattris þat þou hast seen where þe hoore sittip: ben puple folkis & tungis/ and þe ten hornes þat þou hast seen in þe beest: þes schulen hate þe fornycarie womman: & schulen make hire desolate (or discourmfortide) & nakid: & schulen ete þe flesche of hire & schulen brenne hire to gedit wiþ fīr/ soþely god zaue into þe hertis of hem þat þei do þat þat is plesaunt to hym: þat þei ȝyue here kyngdom to þe beest: & þe wordis of god ben endide/ and þe womman whom þou hast seyn: is þe grete cytee þat hap kyngdom vpon kyngis of erþe//

C^m 18^m



And aftir þes þingis I sīze anoper aungel comynge doune fro heuene: hauynge greet power: & þe erþe is liztenyde of his glorie: & crynge wiþ stronge voyce seyng/ greet babiloyne fel doune: & is made þe habitacioun of deuylis: & þe kepyng of eche vnclene spirit: & þe kepyng of eche vnclene foule & hateful: for alle folkis drunken of þe wrappe of þe fornycacioun of hire/ and kyngis of erþe & marchauntis of erþe diden fornycacioun wiþ hire/ and þei ben made ryche: of þe vertue of þe delices of hire/ and I herde anoper voyce of heuene seyng/ my puple go zee oute of it: & be zee not parceners of þe trespassis of it: & zee schul not receyue of þe plagis of it: for þe synnes of it camen into heuene: & þe lorde hadde mynde of þe wickidnesses of it/ zilde zee to it/ as & sche zildide to zou: & double zee double þingis aftir hire werkis/ in þe drynke þat sche medelide to zou: menge zee double to hire/ how myche sche glorifiede hire self & was in delices: so myche turmente ȝyue zee to hire & wepyng.

ye apocalips

wepynge * for in hire herte sche seih/ I sitte a queen and I am
 not a widowe: & I schal not se wepyng/ and herfore in one
 day hire plagis schulen come: deþ & mournynge & hungre/ and
 sche schal be brent in fyre: for god is stronge þat schal deme
 hire/ and þe kyngis of erþe schulen wepe & weyle hem on
 hire: þe whiche diden fornycacon wih hire & lyueden in de-
 lices * whanne þei schulen se þe smoke of brennyng of hire/
 stondynge [] for drede of turmentis of hire * seyinge/ wo * wo *
 wo * þe ilke grete cytee babloyne * & þe ilke stronge cytee: for
 in one houre þi doom cometh/ and marchauntis of erþe schulen
 wepe vpon hire & mourne: for no man schal bye more þe
 marchaundise of hem/ þe marchaundis of golde & siluer &
 precious stoon & margarite (or peerle) & bijs & purpur & silke
 & cockyn * & eche tree thyme * & alle vessels of yuer * & alle ves-
 sels of precious stoon * & of brasle & yren & marble & canel &
 amome (þat is swete saueryng tree) * & of odoramentis &
 oynementis & encense: & of wijn & oyle & floure & whete * & of
 iumentis (or werke beestis) & scheep & horsis & cartis * & of
 seruauentis & of soulis (or lyues) of men/ and þin applis þe de-
 siris of þi lijf wenten aweye fro þee: & alle fatte þingis & ful
 cleer perischiden fro þee/ and marchaundis of þes men schulen
 no more synde þo þingis/ þei þat ben made ryche of hire:
 schulen stonde fer for drede of turmentis of hire * wepyng &
 mournynge & seyinge/ wo * wo * þe ilke greet cytee þat was
 cloþide wih bijs & purpur & cocke * & was goldide wih golde &
 precious stoon & margaritis: for in one houre so many richessis
 ben destitute/ and eche gouernoure * & alle þat schippen into
 place & maryners & þat wirchen in þe see: stoden fer & crieden
 seinge þe place of brennyng of hire: seyinge/ what like to þis
 grete cytee? and þei sente poudre vpon here hedis: & crieden
 wepyng & mournynge & seyinge/ wo * wo: þe ilke grete cytee
 in whom alle þat haue schippis in þe see: ben made riche of
 pryces of it: for in one houre it is desolate/ heuene & holy
 apostlis & prophetes glade see on it: for god hath demyde zoure
 doom

ye apocalips

I fel doune bifore his feet · pat I schulde worschip hym/ and he seyde to me/ se pat thou do not/ I am þin euen seruaunt & of þi breþeren haupnge þe witnessynge of Ihu/ worschip thou god/ forsoþe þe witnessynge of Ihu is spirit of prophete/ ¶ And I sise heuene openyde/ & lo a whijt horse · & he þat satte vpon hym was clepide seifful & soþfast/ & wiþ ryztwesnesse he demeth & siztiþ/ forsoþe þe yzen of hym as flaume of sijr · & in his hede diademes haupnge a name writen/ whiche no man knewe no but he/ and he was clopide in cloþe spreynge wiþ blood/ & þe name of hym was clepide þe worde of god/ and þe oostis (or cumpanyes) þat ben in heuene · sueden hym in whijt horsis/ clopide wiþ bijsen white & clene/ and a swerde scharpe on eche syde camen forþ of his mounþ · pat in it he smyte folkis/ & he schal reule hem in an yren zerde/ and he tredith (or defouliþ) þe pressure of wiyn of wodenesse/ of al myzty god/ and he hath writen in his cloþ & hemme/ kyng of kyngis & lorde of lordis/ ¶ And I sise an aungel stondynge in þe sunne/ & he criede wiþ greet voyce seyinge to alle briddis þat flown by þe mydel of heuene/ come zee & be zee gaderide to gadir to þe grete soper of god/ þat zee ete þe fleschis of kyngis · & þe fleschis of tribunes · & fleschis of stronge men · & fleschis of horsis & of þe sittynge in hem · & þe fleschis of alle fremen & seruauntis/ & of smale & of grete/ and I sise þe beest & kyngis of erþe · & þe oostis of hem gederide to make batayle wiþ hym þat satte on þe horse & wiþ his ooste/ and þe beest is cauzte & wiþ hire þe false prophete þat made signes bifore hire · in whiche he deceyuyde hem þat token þe carette of þe beest/ & þat worschippeden þe ymage of it/ þes two ben sente quyeke into þe pool of sijr/ brennyng in brymston/ and þe oþer ben slayne in swerde of þe sittynge on þe horse þat cometh forþ of þe mounþ of hym/ & alle briddis ben fulfide/ wiþ þe flesche of hem//

ye apocalips

werkis of hem/ and he see zaue his deade men þat weren in it/
and deþ & helle zauen here deade men · þat weren in hem/
and it is demyde of alle: vp þe werkis of hem/ and helle & deþ
ben sente into þe pool of fyr/ þis is þe secounde deþ/ and he
þat is not founden writen in þe booc of lijf: is sente into þe
pool of fyr//



AND I sise newe heuene & newe erþe/ forsoþe þe C^m 21^m
firse heuene & þe firse erþe wenten aweye: &
nowe is not þe see/ and I soon sise þe holy cytee
Irlm newe comynge doune fro heuene of god ·
made redy as a wijs ournyde to hire housbonde/ and I herde
& greet voyce of þe trone: seyinge/ lo þe tabernacle of god
wiþ men · & he schal dwelle wiþ hem/ and þei schulen be his
puple: & he god wiþ hem schal be here god/ and god schal wijs
aweye eche teer: fro yzen of seyntis/ and deþ schal no more
be · neþer mournynge neþer crynge · neþer sorowe schal be
ouer: þe whiche firse þingis wenten aweye/ and he seyde þat
satte in þe trone/ lo I make alle þingis newe/ and he seyde to
me write þou · for þes wordis ben moste seifful & trewe/ and
he seyde to me/ it is done/ I am alpha & o: þe bygynnyng &
ende/ I schal zyue frely to þristynge: of þe welle of quyeke
water/ he þat schal ouercome: schal welde þes þingis/ and I
schal be god to hym · & he schal be sone to me/ forsoþe to proude
men & unbileueful & curside · & manquellers · & fornycatours ·
& to men doinge venym · (or sleinge by venym) & worchipers
of ydolis · & to alle liers: þe parte of hem schal be in þe pool
brennyng wiþ fyr & brymston · þat is þe secounde deþ ¶ And
one came of þe seuene aungels haupnge vyolis ful of seuene þe
laste plagis: & he spak wiþ me seyinge/ come þou I schal schewe
to þee þe spouse: wijs of þe lombe/ and he took me vp in spirit:
into a greet hil & hize/ and he schewide to me þe holy cytee
Irlm · comynge doune fro heuene of god: haupnge þe clerete
of god/ and he lizt of it lijf to a precious soon: as to þe soon

ye apocalips



And he schewide to me a flode of quycke water •
 schynynge as crystal/ compynge forþe of þe seet of
 god/ and of þe lombe/ in þe mydel of þe strete of it •
 & on eche syde of þe flode/ þe tree of lijf bryngynge
 forþ twelue fruytis/ by eche monethes zildynge his fruyte • &
 þe leeuës of þe tree to helpe of folkis/ and eche curside þing
 schal no more be/ but þe seetis of god & of þe lombe schulen
 be in it • & þe seruauntis of hym schulen serue to hym/ and þei
 schulen se his face/ & his name in here forhedis/ and nyzt schal
 no more be • & þei schulen not haue nede to þe lizte of lanterne
 neþer to lizte of sunne/ for þe lorde god schal lizten hem • &
 þei schulen regne into worldis of worldis/ and he seyde to me/
 þes wordis ben moſte ſeiþful & trewe/ and þe lorde god of ſpi-
 ritis of prophetis ſente his aungels for to ſchewe to his ſer-
 uauntis/ what þingis it bihoueþ for to be done ſone/ and lo I
 come ſwiftely/ bleſſide be he þat kepiþ þe wordis of prophecy
 of þis booc/ and I Ioon þat herde & ſize þes þingis • & aftir
 þat I hadde herde & ſeyn • I ſel doune þat I ſchulde worſchip
 bifore þe ſeet of þe aungel/ þat ſchewide to me þes þingis/
 and he ſeyde to me/ ſe þat þou do not/ forſoþe I am þin euen
 ſeruaunt & of þi breþeren prophetis/ & of hem þat kepen þe
 wordis of prophecie of þis booc/ worſchip þou god/ and he
 ſeyde to me/ ſigne (or ſeele) þou not/ þe wordis of prophecy
 of þis booc/ forſoþe þe tyme is nyzt/ he þat noyzeþ/ noyze zit/
 and he þat is in filþes/ ware ſoul zit/ and he þat is iuſte/ be
 he zit iuſtifiede/ and þe holy be he halotwide zit/ lo I come
 ſone • & my mede wiþ me for to zilde to eche man aftir his
 werkis/ I am alpha & o • þe firſte & þe laſte • bygynnyng &
 ende/ bleſſide þei þat waſchen here ſolis in blood of þe lombe/
 & þe power of hem be in þe booc of lijf/ & by zatis entre into
 þe cytee// ¶ Forſoþe wiþ oute forþ houndis & venym doers (or
 piſoners) & vnchaſte men • & manquellers • & ſeruyng to
 ydolis • & eche þat loueþ & doiþ leetyllynge/ I Iþc ſente myn
 aungel

C^m 22^m

ye apocalips

aungel for to witnesse to zow hes þingis/ in chirchis/ I am þe
root & kynde of dauid a schynynge morne sterre/ and þe hous-
bonde & þe spouse (or wiif) seyn: come þou/ and he þat heriþ:
seiþ: come þou/ and he þat þristiþ: come/ and he þat wole:
take frely þe water of liif) forsoþe I witnesse to eche man her-
ynge þe wordis of prophecie of þis booc/ zif any man schal
putte to to hes: god schal putte to vpon hym: þe plagis writen
in þe booc/ and zif any man schal do aweye of þe wordis of þe
booc of þis prophecie: and schal take aweye þe parte of hym
fro þe booc of liif * & fro þe holy cytee * & fro þes þingis þat ben
writen in þis booc/ he seiþ þat beriþ witnessynge of þes þingis:
zhe amen/ I come soone amen/ come þou lorde Ihu/ þe grace
of oure lorde Ihu cñ: wiþ zou alle amen///

here endiþ þe apocalips

Blesside be þe holy trinite Amē







